



MURDERING HEAVEN EDGE

BOOK 01

Sharp Knife

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Murdering Heaven Edge

(弑天刃)

by

Sharp Knife

(小刀锋利)

Synopsis

A tyrannical world, raising the sword, a sharp blade covers the heavens with a clear conscious.

All living things are brutal, a sword to murder one's superiors, indifferent to the heavens, holding a blade with a disdainful look.

Passing through a journey as big as the sky, the whole way thistles and thorns.

One blade chops open a path.

I alone am supreme!

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Delivery Man @ Chinanovel.net

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 1: Icefield

The bone-chilling north wind whistles, engulfing and sweeping the large snow.

On the ice and snow that stretches for thousands of miles is a frail and fading youth. Draped by a piece of leather cloth, he is lurching along, lost between heaven and earth.

Every step appears extremely difficult.

But he walks very resolute.

Facing the direction of the wind, he continuously advances forward in deep and shallow steps.

The month is July, and it should be a scorching summer.

But here, there is goose feather snow swirling the whole sky.

Between heaven and earth is a vast expanse of whiteness.

It goes as far as the eye can see, not knowing east and west, unable to distinguish north and south.

The leather cloth draping the young man was originally black, but now the original color is indistinguishable. It's covered in a layer of snow. Even if he frequently shook it, knocking the snow

off, another thick layer would quickly accumulate.

The youth appeared to be thirteen or fourteen. He is tall and handsome with white skin, carrying a young, inexperienced, and innocent appearance.

But his eyes are persevering, bright, and extremely pure.

These type of eyes are rare, especially in this type of vile environment. It was a little out of place.

“So long as I find the Immortal Sky, then I can use the keepsake grandfather gave me, and give respects to the Immortal Sky’s Seventh Elder.”

After visiting the Seventh Elder, I can study an ability, then.....”

The youngster rubbed off the freezing ice and snow on his face, and mumbled: “Then, I can.....go seek my father and mother!”

“When I find them, I must ask, ‘why have you been so heartless all these years, not paying any attention to me?’”

“If it were not for grandfather taking me in at that time.....”

“Grandfather wouldn’t let me go seek them, only letting me study skills, but I will not!”

A color of resolution flashed in the clear pupils of the youngster.

“I want to find them, ask them.....since birth, why didn't you regard me!”

“They gave me the name Chu Mo, pledged I am their son, and left a piece of jade to prove my status. Then why didn't they pay any attention to me?”

“Why do I have to wait until growing up, gather achievements, and rely on this piece of jade to be recognized?”

“What kind of thinking is this?”

“Such irresponsible parents exist under the heavens?”

“I must ask for an explanation!”

Chu Mo extended his hand from his sleeve, unconsciously feeling his chest. The piece of jade his mother left him was still stuck there.

Creak, creak.....

Boots stamp in the snow, leaving behind footprints, and then they are quickly concealed with the snow from the sky above.

The slight gasping breath is also covered up by the whistling wind.

The lonely figure stubbornly moves forward, although slow. However, each step continues without stopping.

Unknown to Chu Mo at this time, a figure is flying in the empty sky at high speeds, unseen in the clouds.

It flashed by in a moment from far to near.

The figure was wearing all black robes. A fluttering sound blew from the high altitude winds.

His face was angular as if carved by a knife.

Eyes like a hawk emitted a fierce light.

Casually draping waterfall hair gave this person a reckless and unrestrained feeling.

This person appeared to be only 30 years old. But he carries an aura of being matchless under the heavens, looking out the corner of his eyes with disdain.

But his face was extremely pale, without a trace of color.

This person was speeding through the snow in the blink of an eye, and he appeared five kilometers away from where Chu Mo was lurching along on the ground.

Although the man in the air wearing black robes, and the young inexperienced Chu Mo were under the same sky, they were people in two different worlds.

There would be no intersection between these two people under normal circumstances.

But this man wearing black clothes suddenly stopped after inadvertently looking down.

Like that, he stopped in the void sky, turned his body around, and stared at the ice five kilometers away.

The thick clouds and a sky full of snow couldn't block his fierce eyes. His vision directly fell on the youngster.

“Ah?”

The man wrinkled his brows, letting out an expression of surprise.

Although this land of ice and snow is deserted, running into a couple figures isn't an extremely strange event.

From the perspective of the man in black, it is merely an ant. He didn't have the slightest bit of interest.

But he didn't know why. Today he suddenly was hit by an impulse, and he casually watched.

In this world, there are curious coincidences. This glance let him discover a precious treasure.

His pupils suddenly lit up!

“Hey, My entire life I didn't believe in the god of thieves, but now.....did god open his eyes contrary to my expectations?”

“Knowing I will die, god sent me a present?”

“Casually glancing, I unexpectedly discover a genius practitioner?”

The man's hawk pupils, suddenly revealed a hint of a smile.

Without carefully watching, he absolutely wouldn't have seen.

Then he directly strode in towards Chu Mo.

Every step carried him ten feet in the empty sky. In the blink of an eye, he appeared in the sky over Chu Mo.

On the ice and Snow.

While Chu Mo was trudging north into the wind, suddenly, he felt a burst of extremely cold and piercing chilliness suddenly attack him, making him unable to restrain from shivering.

“Why is it suddenly so cold?” Chu Mo mumbled.

Then.....

Chu Mo suddenly felt the air around his body become very thick.

A cold atmosphere emitting matchless murderous intent wrapped him up.

Although Chu Mo wasn't especially clear on what the murderous intent was, but he still could feel the deadly aura.

It was the same as that thing he experienced in the past.

Suddenly without knowing why, the swirling snow in the sky quietly stopped.

Chu Mo raised his head, staring into the clouded sky.

In the air, a black figure was standing there, faintly looking at

him.

Chu Mo was immediately frightened.

He forcibly blinked and looked again.

The person was still there.

It's not an illusion!

That is a pair of ice-cold eyes!

Chu Mo swore he never saw such a terrifying person before.

His heart incessantly started thumping with just one look, like it was going to jump out of his throat!

He even suspected death was imminent!

The restraining pressure made him want to cry out, but he discovered that he couldn't speak.

His mouth couldn't open!

Seeing this person, he didn't know why, but he suddenly felt the urge to kneel down.

Chu Mo resisted, straightened his body, and stared at the person.

The figure in the sky flashed at that moment, appearing directly in front of Chu Mo.

The pair of ice-cold pupils fell on his body, squinting up and down.....carefully measuring him up.

Finally he opened his mouth and spoke: “Not bad, I never imagined. Not only is the aptitude exceptionally good, but the meridians.....they are also outstanding!”

“Boy, come with me!”

Following with the man in black’s words, Chu Mo suddenly felt light, and the stifling feeling immediately went away.

But facing the suddenly appearing man in black still gives a lot of pressure, like facing something not human.

But rather.....a mountain!

A large mountain!

Chu Mo looked at the young man at a loss, then said with a look of astonishment: “Why do I need to follow you? Who are you?”

The man in black's face was completely emotionless, and an eyebrow slightly peaked: "Respect me as Master. You are my disciple!"

Chu Mo immediately stared blankly, foolishly looking at the man for a long time. After confirming the man wasn't joking, he finally shook his head saying: "No!"

"Huh? The man in black's brows slightly wrinkled, and a humming noise came from his nose.

Chu Mo could clearly feel the deathly aura.....once again it enshrouded him.

Furthermore this time it was clearly even more severe than before.

He even could distinctly feel the man before him only needed to enact a thought, and he would immediately die.

A teenager suddenly encountering this type of thing, to say he is unafraid would be an absolute lie.

Chu Mo used great effort to gasp for air, but, he still used his pair of bright eyes. Staring at the man in black, he used all his force to shake his head: "No, I can't.....agree to you!"

“No?”

“Traveling the world for so many years.....no one before him had ever dared say this word!”

The man in black coldly looked at Chu Mo: “Why don’t you try speaking again?”

Chu Mo looked at him a little scared and pulled back his neck, but he still shook his head: “No.....”

“To not shed a tear until one sees the coffin!” The man in black coldly spoke. Without any movement from the man, Chu Mo’s body suddenly rose several meters above the earth.

“Do you agree or not?” The man in black coldly asked.

“No.....I don’t agree!” Although Chu Mo had an appalled expression, and his body body couldn’t stop from trembling, he still shook his head.

Ah!

Chu Mo felt his body ruthlessly fling towards the ground!

But it wasn’t falling.....rather, it was accelerating to the ground.

Just like a small child playing with mud, grabbing a clump..... then ruthlessly throwing it to the ground.

Right now Chu Mo is that ball of mud.....

“AH!” Chu Mo couldn’t help but let out a scream.

Then.....he finally stopped upside down a few feet from the ground.

Chu Mo felt his heart quickly jump, and his eyes filled with fear.

“Do you agree or not?” The man in black asked.

“No.....I don’t agree!” Even though the [three immortal souls and seven mortal souls](#) were scared half to death, Chu Mo still refused.

[TL: In Daoism, there are three souls. The heaven soul, earth soul, and life soul. When one is born the life soul splits into seven chakras which form the seven mortal souls.]

“Then die!”

The man in black coldly sounded, and Chu Mo fiercely sent out a miserable yell.

He felt the all the bones from head to toe suddenly want to scatter, wanting to be removed from his body.

Then, a feeling like ten million ants crawling over every inch of his body, madly biting him, tearing and pulling at his flesh.

That kind of feeling is simply a living death.

Perhaps not much time passed, but to Chu Mo, it felt like a lifetime.

Bang.

His body lost control, and he dropped a few feet to the ground, followed by the sound of bone cracking.

An arm was broken.

Chu Mo limped in the snow, his entire body soaked in sweat.

The man in black coldly looked at him: “Do you agree or not?”

“No.....I don’t agree. Kill me.....” Chu Mo looked weak, and he feebly said.

“You still refuse?” The space between man in black’s eyebrows rippled a touch of hostility. This time he was really a little angry.

“Well then I want to take a look and see. How hard are your

bones?”

Chapter 2: Below The Lonely Mysterious Mountain Peak

For the following half hour, the man in black used no less than ten methods to torture Chu Mo. He wanted to make him beg to be spared.

He even created several types of demonic fantasy environments from thick qi to frighten the teenager.

Every time, Chu mo was scared half to death, and his eyes filled with fear. The fantasy world was honestly extremely real, and he was scared half dead.

But at the end.....he still spoke three words: “I will not!”

“Hey.....” The man in black was seething with anger, spouting smoke from the seven orifices. He had roamed the world several years. What kind of person hadn’t he seen before? But today he had no way to break the brat.

Who knows how many people would be alarmed to death if word of this got out.

The Grand Demon Lord takes the initiative to recruit a disciple. The opposite party is not only ungrateful, but flat out refuses him. Furthermore he is tortured, and refuses to relax his mouth.

This is an anecdote that could absolutely shake the world.

“You.....you are wicked!” Chu Mo was weak, collapsed on the ground, lacking even the strength to move. Who knows how many pieces his bones were shattered into.

But he still didn't have any idea to admit defeat, he angrily said: “How can you be like this? If other people aren't willing, do you still force them to be your disciple?”

“You, are you really not afraid of death?” With an awe-inspiring tone his cold pupils stared at Chu Mo.

His eyes flashed a murderous intent, it seemed anything could happen at any time, finishing this young obstinate life.

“Afraid.....extremely afraid.” Chu Mo honestly answered. This man in black was extremely terrifying to Chu Mo.

More terrifying than all the nightmares he had experience.

“Afraid, yet you still dare refuse me?” The man in black coldly said, casting a sidelong glance at Chu Mo.

“I, I must go to the Immortal Sky. My grandfather rescued the Seventh Elder of the Immortal Sky!”

“The Seventh Elders gave my grandfather a keepsake. I only need

to bring the keepsake to the Immortal Sky.....”

“The Seventh Elder will certainly accept me as a disciple!”

“The Immortal Sky is the world’s number one upright sect!”

“In the Immortal Sky, they are all grand heroes, knights who rescue the world from pain, and immortals!

“They aren’t like you, who forces people to be their disciple”

Chu Mo’s blood began rise, crackling and spattering a pile as he spoke, putting the man in black opposite of him into a daze.

After a long time he uttered a laugh: “Immortal Sky is the number one upright sect?”

“Everyone inside is a grand hero?”

“They all are knights who rescue the world from pain?”

“They are all immortals?”

“[Pei!](#)”

[TL: Pei = to spit in contempt.]

“Simply bullshit!”

“Every upright sect is filled with good people? Foolish!”

Chu Mo is a child built of stubborn strength. No matter if his whole body was in pain, feeling in so much pain he would rather be dead, and endlessly weak, he still raised his head. He steadily looked at the man in black: “You speak nonsense!”

“Immortal Sky is definitely not like you said!”

The Demon Lord upon hearing this, the corners of his mouth violently twitched. If it were not for his aptitude and meridians being a rarity in all the world. If he were not inflicted by the poison of the seven demons. Time is running out, he needs to pass on his body.....at an earlier time he would have spanked this disobedient child and killed him!

“You said the Immortal Sky is so amazing. I’ll ask you. Have you seen a person from the Immortal Sky?” The Demon Lord sucked in a deep breath, looking at Chu Mo.

“No, but my grandfather has met them!” Chu Mo said: “furthermore, the world’s reputation of Immortal Sky is also outstanding!”

“If one person says it is good, it is possibly not good, but if many say it is good, then it must certainly be good!”

The Demon Lord smiled: “Many people say it is good, then it is certainly good? If many people say it is bad, then is it certainly bad?”

“The world has become benighted because of too many imbeciles like you. Following the herd, although the leader has eyes, each person behind is a blind child.

“Boy, did you not say the how good the Immortal Sky is?”

“You wish to enter the Immortal Sky and become a disciple no matter what right?” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo and asked.

At this point Chu Mo didn't have strength left to speak. He only slightly nodded.

“Then, Do you dare make a bet with me?”

“I'll bet you, even if you bring that piece of shit keepsake of the seven elders, you absolutely won't become an Immortal Sky disciple. even.....You want to enter the Immortal Sky sect. It is not that easy!”

The Demon Lord coldly stared at Chu Mo: “If you win, not only will this deity give you an apology, furthermore I'll give you amazing wealth. So much wealth, that you will easily become the richest man in the mortal world!”

“Don’t you want to be a cultivator? You should know.....when cultivating, wealth is one of the most important factors!”

“Don’t think the poor will have any success on the cultivating path!”

Chu Mo’s black painted pure eyes looked at the Demon Lord. With great effort he said: “And.....if.....I lose?”

“Ahahahaha, didn’t you say, I will certainly enter into Immortal Sky?” The Demon Lord couldn’t help but coldly laugh.

This is the first time he felt happy since meeting the small child.

“You are a little brat who wants something for nothing. What could this master be scheming against you? There are countless people who want this master to become their teacher. You can’t tell good from bad!”

“If you lose, you must honestly become my disciple!”

“Pass on my Legacy!”

“I.....can I not bet with you?” Chu Mo weakly said.

The Demon Lord became angry. He understood. This little bastard is convinced he is evil. No matter what the child didn’t want to become his disciple.

You don't want to?

This master couldn't believe this evil!

I will yet receive you as my disciple!

Coldly looking at Chu Mo: "You feel like you have a choice?"

Chu Mo shook his head. He also didn't believe he had a choice. Even if he is young, he still saw this clearly. This demon really wanted him as a disciple, otherwise he would have been killed long ago.

Who would waste so many words with him.

Asking was only his final attempt.

Chu Mo wasn't stupid. Although he lacked experience, he still had intelligence.

He finally nodded: "Fine, I'll gamble with you. But I have one condition.....You mustn't interfere. You cannot get in the way!"

"Humph, this thing is extremely shrewd." The Demon Lord showed no expression, but coldly laughed in his heart: But, how could you be my match? I am evil, of course I want to interfere. Of course I want to get in the way!

But He now knew this child's temper. If he didn't promise, he was afraid his hopes would be dashed.

In order to receive this disciple, the Grand Demon Lord decided to be completely open.

He decided to bring out his most disdainful methods he had never used before.

“Fine, I promise you. I will change into an ordinary person from head to toe. I won't interfere with your matters!”

“If you succeed in entering the Immortal Sky, I will respect my promise. I will turn around and leave!”

The Demon Lord coldly smiled looking at Chu Mo.

In his mind he thought: If that happens, I will snatch him and leave!

The disciple I want, how could he enter another sect?

He wants to enter the Immortal Sky group of idiots, how could he struggle against me?

Chu Mo said: “If I can't get into the Immortal sky, then I'll go with you. I'll become your disciple!”

The Demon Lord nodded, although he was angry in his heart he thought: Would this master slip below the Immortal Sky one day? It is simply ridiculous!

But he thought about the ability of this youngster. Under normal conditions, he could easily enter the Immortal Sky. He could even become the head disciple!

After all, with this kind of talent, who wouldn't be envious? Who wouldn't want to snatch it up?

Thinking like this, the Demon Lord became at ease in his heart.

Soon after, he used several methods to seal up Chu Mo's natural ability and meridians.

The Demon Lord could see this youngster is extraordinary, so naturally the Immortal Sky could also see this.

As a result, this so called non interference was a joke from the start.

This young man didn't know how much he was worth!

But there were several people who could see his worth at a glance!

But a person who could see through the Demon Lord's methods were indeed very very few.

In the Immortal Sky, perhaps the Sect leader or a few old bastards could see through the Demon Lord's seals.

The other people.....would not have that ability!

Therefore, after finishing everything, the Demon Lord laughed in his heart. Pleased with himself he thought: "Boy, after this, how could you enter the Immortal Sky?"

If a normal person brought a keepsake of the Seventh Elder, even if it was a keepsake of the Grand Elder, I'm afraid they would be rejected by those fake dignified and noble bastards.

Favors?

Since when did the Immortal Sky do that?

You cannot escape from my hand!

Soon after, the Demon Lord hauled away Chu Mo. His image suddenly entered the sky.

In a moment the two people appeared high in the sky.

Chu Mo stared with fierce wide eyes. Although he saw this person come out of the sky, but flying with him in the sky was a completely different feeling.

Looking at Chu Mo's curious appearance, the Demon Lord couldn't help but say a little pleased: "How is it? Become my disciple, after a few years, you can fly in the sky yourself!"

"Humph! After a few years in the Immortal Sky I will!" Chu Mo said

The Demon Lord couldn't help but roll his eyes. He was afraid that today he had shown more emotions than he had in the past ten years.

This little thing, although his strength is weak, but he has stubborn vigor.....an absolute rarity in the world.

Crying out he is afraid of death, yet refusing to bow down.....he really is a little monster!

"But, I still like this spirit!"

"As if a fierce commodity, this master still won't look at him!"

The Demon Lord refused to recognize him, grabbing him by the collar, he sped along the journey.

The 10,000km ice and snow field would have taken Chu Mo several years to traverse, but the Demon Lord only needed a few days.

After five days, the Demon Lord turned into an ordinary youth. He had carried Chu Mo, appearing at a place 10km outside of the Immortal Sky mountain gate.

A huge snowy mountain towered before the two.

The large snow mountain was magnificent, beautiful, tall, and straight. There were clouds located about halfway up.

The gate at the foot of the mountain was 300ft high and 200ft wide.

The gate was made of stone, and full of character. It is unknown how thick it is, but it gave people a feeling it was indestructible.

On top of the gate there were two words written——Immortal Sky!

Chapter 3: Ungrateful

“Here, that is the young mountain’s lonely mysterious peak. It is also the nest of the Immortal Sky.” The Demon Lord eyelids drooped, looking sickly and lacking any interest.

“How awesome!”

Clearly paying no attention to the disdain in the Demon Lord’s words. His voice shaking with worship he said: “It is worthy of the number one sect under heaven. It’s extremely imposing!”

Speaking, his face became excited. Facing the huge mountain gate he madly hurried out: “Immortal Sky, I have arrived!”

The corners of the Demon Lord’s mouth pulled, but immediately his face revealed an expression like one watching a play.

“Stop!”

“What person dares make such a noise in the Immortal Sky, tired of living?”

Following the voice, two eighteen or nineteen year olds rushed from the lofty mountain gate at an extreme speed before Chu Mo. Condescendingly they looked at him with proud faces, and their pupils carried a deep sense of disgust.

Chu Mo was startled. Immediately he apologized and saluted cupping his hands: “Two master elder brothers hello. Little brother is.....I am returning to pay respects to the masters and study the arts.”

“Who are you master elder brothers? A little beggar has come!”

“Returning to the masters to study the arts? You?” Although plain-looking, his eyebrows held a deep sense of haughtiness. He looked at Chu Mo with disdain and jeered: “Little beggar, you came to the wrong place!”

The other young person’s brows wrinkled: “Why are you wasting words with him? Drive him way. Don’t bother shouting and arguing. If the masters see we will be scolded.”

While speaking, the young person looked at Chu Mo and coldly said: “What are you looking at stinky beggar? This isn’t a place you should be, quickly scram!”

The Demon Lord who had turned into an ordinary youth looked at Chu Mo’s image from far away. He smiled a little pleased with himself. He slightly shook his head, darkly thinking: Chu Mo oh Chu Mo, this is just the beginning!

A famous and large sect, do you think it is that easy to enter?

This master used the solid truth and told you, inside famous and large sects.....there are not necessarily good people.

“Little beggar?”

Chu Mo looked at these two young friends a little startled. He felt like he had been blown but dust, but his clothes were still in good condition.

Stunned.

The Immortal sky in his heart.....couldn't be like this.

Chu Mo subconsciously took a glance at the Demon Lord to the side. However, the Demon Lord raised his head and looked at the sky.

He stared at the pure white clouds as if naked fairies lived inside of them.

Chu Mo looked at the two people. Without a choice, feeling somewhat wronged, he pulled the deep black, palm-sized wooden medallion out of his chest and said: “I have the Seventh Elder's keepsake. I have really come to pay respects to the masters and study the arts!”

Fuming with anger, the two people who were prepared to take the youngster and toss him out were stopped in their tracks.

They looked at the wooden medallion in Chu Mo's hand, and

their eyes immediately flashed with a frantic light.

How could they not recognize the Elder's Medallion as members of the Immortal Sky?

The ordinary looking youth had a sudden change of attitude. Revealing a charming smile: "Little brother originally had an Immortal Sky Medallion. Why didn't you say earlier? I almost didn't recognize one of our own."

"Wait a moment, We will make an announcement for you!"

He turned and ran into the mountain without waiting for Chu Mo to reply.

The other Immortal Sky disciple's reaction was a beat too slow. His face revealed an annoyed expression, feeling recognition had been snatched away.

He wanted to get closer to the youngster, but he couldn't get rid of that expression. He could only awkwardly stand there.

After a short time, the average looking Immortal Sky disciple rushed back. He looked at Chu Mo and said with a pleasing expression: "Little brother come with me. The elder wants to see you!"

The other disciple's eyes revealed an envious expression. Eight or nine times out of ten someone who escorts someone with an Elder

Medallion can become inner sect members, they can even become close disciples of the elders.

What kind of honored status is that?

If these outer sect disciples could transfer to inner sect disciples, then they would have a meteoric rise.

But it is a pity, this type of thing had been snatched away by his own comrade.

Chu Mo nodded. Secretly thinking: Looks like grandpa didn't cheat me. Seventh Elder really is someone who remembers old affections.

Following behind his counterpart, he advanced up the mountain.

The Demon Lord followed behind Chu Mo expressionless.

Two Immortal Sky disciples, who would block him even if they don't look the same.

Chu Mo followed the the Immortal Sky disciple, and they quickly arrived at a public square which was huge without compare.

You almost couldn't see the end of the square, it was thousands of feet in circumference.

There were several types of training apparatuses on top, and countless youths were cultivating.

Chu Mo curiously looked around. In his heart he secretly thought: I will become one of them later on.

Quickly, Chu Mo and the Demon Lord followed the disciple and arrived before a large palace hall at the head of the square.

Chu Mo raised his head and looked up dozens of steps. At the top there were several people standing.

In the middle there was a middle-aged man that everyone crowded around.

The middle-aged man had a white face and no beard. He looked extremely refined, but he had a profound expression, appearing very solemn.

The disciple brought Chu Mo to the middle aged man and respectfully told him: "This is Seventh Elder!"

Chu Mo hastily took the wooden medallion and held it out with both hands respectfully. Bowing down he said: "I am Chu Mo, Fan Wudi's grandson. I have brought Seventh Elder's keepsake and come to the Immortal Sky. I wish to pay respects to the master and study the arts!"

These words were what his grandfather had passed on to him.

On top the stairs, that dignified middle-aged man wrinkled his brows and said: “Grab the token and give it to me.”

People came down from his side and grabbed the medallion from Chu Mo’s hands, then gave it to the middle-aged man.

This middle-aged man is the Immortal Sky’s youngest elder..... the Seventh Elder Zhao Hongzhi.

His expression was profound as he swept Chu Mo with his eyes. Yet there was only one thought in his mind: That event can’t be known by anyone else! Otherwise, there will be endless troubles!

Only he didn’t know, this little thing.....does he know what happened back then?

Then he raised his head. Chu Mo he profoundly said looking at Chu Mo: “Correct, this medallion.....is real!”

Chu Mo’s face immediate burst with happiness. He was continually worried the Seventh Elder wouldn’t recognize this medallion as authentic.

Now it appeared he was worried for nothing.

He thought, what kind of place is the Immortal Sky? What kind of character occupy it? Do they tell the truth?

But the seventh elders words flabbergasted Chu Mo.

“But.....your meridians are blocked, you have mediocre talent of an average person, completely unable to cultivate. I as the Immortal Sky cannot.....”

“Because you are an ordinary youth, [the river must be worshiped before the sea!](#)”

[TL: This means that there is an established order that cannot be changed. So, since he is ordinary, he cannot be accepted to the Immortal Sky no matter the circumstances.]

The seventh elder had a just and fair expression. He calmly looked at Chu Mo: “Although at that time your grandfather and I had a history, and the relation was good.”

“But, that is a private matter!”

“I am an Immortal Sky Elder. How can I trash what is just for a private matter?”

“That type of thing, I cannot do!”

As soon as the Seventh Elder spoke, the people at his side respectfully saluted. The disciples from far away who heard them speak also showed faces of admiration while looking at Seventh Elder.

To the Seventh Elder's side stood an old man who was smiling and nodding: "Seventh Elder is really honest and impartial! Truly honorable!"

"Actually this child is quite elegant. Let him stay and be a tea serving boy.....that is possible!"

Seventh Elder shook his head and said: "Assistant Zhang these words have errors. The Immortal Sky is the world's number one sect! Don't say he can be a tea boy. Those that return to the secular world are all mighty heroes that shake the earth in all directions."

"If I let him stay, and in the future he returns to the secular world, then a piece of rubbish would appear from the Immortal Sky....."

"It would tarnish the reputation that the Immortal Sky has built up for thousands of years. Like that.....wouldn't I have sinned?"

The old assistant heard the words and nodded, and he admiringly said: "You have thought of everything Seventh Elder. It appears.....I am a little lacking."

A stiff smile stuck on Chu Mo's face. He felt entirely like a fool, and he expressionlessly stood at the bottom of the stairs, looking at the several people joking together at the top.

The he felt like the whole courtyard, as far as the eye could see

for thousands of feet, all staring at him.

“My.....my ability is ordinary? Meridians are blocked? I am completely unable to cultivate?” Chu Mo mumbled: “But, but grandfather said, I am a cultivating genius.....”

“He still dares argue!” Seventh elder stood at the top of the stairs. Looking down upon Chu Mo with arrogance, he strictly reprimanded: “What part of you could become a member of the Immortal Sky? Do you think everyone here is blind? Can we not see if you are a genius or ordinary? The youth dares speak lies in front of everyone! Clearly his morals are lacking! I feel shame for your grandfather!”

The Seventh Elder reprimanded in a huge voice. It basically spread through the whole square, and nearly everyone heard.

This time, Chu Mo really did feel all of the eyes staring upon him.

Various jeering voices sounded out from all around.

This guy took Seventh Elder’s medallion and tried to become his student? And he is a meridian blocked piece of trash? Are his brains blocked as well as his meridians?”

“What part could be an Immortal Sky disciple? How could we accept this kind of trash?”

“He has the heart of a lion, nerves of steel, but he is a little slow!”

“Nowadays there’s all kinds of people. Ordinary people, they are all this ignorant and arrogant!”

“Seventh Elder’s intentions are clear. He is upright and plainspoken. He truly is our model!”

“If not, how could he become the youngest elder of the Immortal Sky?”

Everyone was discussing in all directions. All of it transferring into Chu Mo’s ears.

The thirteen year old boy’s face became pale. He stood there at a loss. He justified himself: “I, I have almost already broken into the [Yuan Closure](#).....”

[TL: The ‘Yuan Closure’ is a specific point of cultivation explained later in the story.]

“Child, at this time you dare still speak foolish words? And with this ability.....the lies have reached another level. Who knows how much money your elders would have to waste on medicine for your body! And you think you are talented?” At Seventh Elders side stood a twenty year old man. With a look of disdain, he spit and sneered at Chu Mo.

Seventh Elder lightly sighed and said to the Immortal Sky’s Sixth Elder at his side: “I knew this child’s grandfather many years ago. At that time he helped me out with something. For our friendship,

I would send a batch of top notch Yuan Pills every year to him.....”

“So it is like this.....” assistant Zhang and everyone else all reveal a look of understanding.

Assistant Zhang lightly shook his head and said: “The older generations of this world are all like this. They will give everything in order for the younger generation. This child, he couldn’t have stolen his father’s keepsake and run away could he?”

A young man sneered next to the Seventh Master: “One cannot say. Perhaps he and his grandfather formed a partnership, and he wanted to use his relations to grab on to elder!”

“Don’t consider it further. What kind of place is the Immortal Sky? How can we let them act arbitrarily regardless of the rules?”

Chapter 4: Complete Humiliation

Seventh Elder revealed a bitter smile and slightly shook his head.

Then looking at Chu Mo he said: “You should quickly hurry back, this place.....is not a place you should come to!”

“Looking at the friendship in those years, looking at your youth, I won’t argue with you. Go.”

While speaking, Seventh Elder moved his hands as if he was brushing away a housefly.

The disguised Demon Lord neither spoke nor moved a muscle from the beginning to end. Yet in the abyss of his pupils, a hint of disdain flashed.

Do they have eyes without pupils? They are a group of idiots, truly completely senseless!

Chu Mo’s eyes became a little red. But it wasn’t fear, rather an angered and dishonored feeling!

Thinking of himself leaving Yellow Fire city, he was slandered by people, and splashed with dirty water.

Along the arduous journey, the ten year old boy went without

meals, slept in the open, trekked a 10,000 mile ice and snow field, encountered the Demon Lord, was tortured by him, all without bowing his head.

His whole heart and soul wanted to enter the Immortal Sky, and the result.....he received this kind of treatment.

This teenage youth nearly had a meltdown.

He couldn't help but indignantly yell out: "It is not as you say! I am not ordinary! If you don't accept me then don't accept, but for what reason do you disgrace me?"

"Heh heh....." Seventh Elder dully said: "Looks like..... I haven't given you a single chance and your heart isn't satisfied. Correct?"

"Correct, I'm not satisfied!" Chu Mo shouted.

He didn't care about the Seventh or Eighth Elder at this time, and he cared even less about the Immortal Sky.

In his heart he only had one thought: How could you all treat me so unjustly? How can you slander me?

If they don't accept me, they don't accept me, but to slander and ridicule me. That I cannot stand for!

"Alright, then I'll give you a chance!" Seventh Elder plainly said.

“Seventh Elder is truly too charitable!”

“Seventh Elder is truly benevolent and righteous!”

“Just kick out this little [dead duck brat](#) that refuses to admit a mistake!”

[TL: I have no idea what a ‘dead duck’ brat means, but I might start using it.]

“Although Seventh Elder is fair without corruption, but the depths of his heart are yet soft and kind-hearted.”

“This is a chivalrous softy!”

Several disciples on the Immortal Sky square were murmuring away.

They became even more venerated to Seventh Elder while looking at him.

All the voices entered Chu Mo’s ears, but he didn’t say anything. He only tightly clenched his fists.

His pupils filled with unyielding!

Seventh Elder spoke while casually looking around the square,

then he pointed out a little child: “You!”

A seven or eight year old little boy was spotted among the crowd by Seventh Elder. The little boy ignorantly stood there, oddly looking around at everyone.

Boom!

The whole square exploded with laughter in all directions.

Seventh Elder’s serene voice spread out: “Little Child, you go fight with big brother. Remember, don’t hold back. Treat it as training, understand?”

The seven or eight year old little boy excitedly nodded. Looking at Chu Mo, that young and tender little face revealed an innocent smile. He answered: “Okay!”

While speaking he leaped.

Jumping ten feet, the small boy unexpectedly softly landed on the tip of his toes, facing directly in front of Chu Mo.

“Good!”

A burst of cheers sounded out from the surroundings.

The small boy's skill was very beautiful, and it drew in everyone's acclaim.

"Big brother, are you ready?" The small boy's face was innocent, and he looked at Chu Mo carrying a smile.

Even if Chu Mo was mad at Seventh Elder and the other's who mocked him, he didn't spread the fire onto this child who was five or six years his junior.

He nodded and stiffly said: "Good."

"Hehe, big brother. I am the weakest person in the Immortal Sky, so please be careful. I'm not the least bit extreme!" The little boy sincerely looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo slightly frowned. These words were somewhat harsh to the ears, but the small boy said them very honestly.

Chu Mo only nodded: "Rest assured, we will learn from each other."

A happy smile spread forth after the young boy heard those words.

Seventh Elder and the other people on the upper stage also all smiled, but their smiles were full of disdain.

The other Immortal Sky disciples directed their feelings clearly by erupting with laughter.

There were several taunts directed at Chu Mo among the laughter.

The Demon Lord also smiled on the side, but his smile was filled with a playful flavor.

“Big brother, I will take the first move. You be careful!” The small boy warned with good intentions, and suddenly.....his speed, it abruptly accelerated!

In an instant he was before Chu Mo.

This little thing was toying around!

Chu Mo became furious inside. At the same time he slightly retreated half a step, raised a hand, and simply spread his palm, welcoming the small boy into his hand.

Peng!

An enormous force passed over that made Chu Mo's body sway.

“This small boy, his boundary far exceeds mine!”

Chu Mo immediately put forth a judgement to the small boy's fighting ability.

Chu Mo had continuously been beside soldiers who had gone through the battlefield ever since he was a boy, and he had received a baptism from those soldiers who had experienced bloody battles. Although his boundary was lacking, their foundations were equivalent!

Because of this, Chu Mo didn't have the slightest bit of fear when facing the small boy whose boundary exceeded his own.

Immediately move by move, he and the little boy began sparring.

Although the boy's attacks were fast and sharp, Chu Mo's movement's weren't slow.

Furthermore, it compared the the little boy's speed, accuracy, and severity.

Chu Mo had an extremely admirable elegance. Blow by blow, from the beginning, he filled with a majestic imposing atmosphere!

Seven or eight sets of blows passed in the blink of an eye.

The two sides.....are surprisingly evenly matched!

The smiles of the Immortal Sky disciples that had made fun of

Chu Mo gradually became stiff.

The faces of Seventh Elder and the other people on top of the stage all revealed a imposing look.

This teenager, it seems he is not as simple as they thought.

At least, one couldn't use "Poor aptitude" or "Completely unable to cultivate" to describe him!

As for the blocked meridians.....there shouldn't be an objection.

They all saw it!

If this teenager didn't have blocked meridians, then accepting him into the Immortal Sky.....it really wouldn't be a bad idea.

The more the seven or eight year old child fought, the more impatient he became.

His handsome little face also became extremely mean and ferocious.

But on the other hand, Chu Mo was all the more steady.

Without any profound and powerful attack methods, blow by blow, they were all the most simple military martial arts of the

secular world.

But the key point of Chu Mo is, the more he fights, the braver he becomes.

Military martial arts have been around for hundreds of years, and they have gone through countless generations of evolution. They have gone through countless wars, continually spreading on to today.

Although it wasn't pretty, but it was very practical. And the ability to murder or injure was extremely fierce!

There were several moments where if Chu Mo was a little ruthless, he could have seriously injured the young boy.

But he wasn't.

According to Chu Mo, even if the little boy was a little deceitful, but in the end.....he is still a child.

He thought like this, but the small boy had the complete opposite thought.

Each blow was severe. Each attack was placed at Chu Mo's vitals.

This made Chu Mo somewhat vexed. His strength was less than the small boy's, but his experience far exceeded his opponent.

In a short moment the young boy left an opening, and Chu Mo shook him.

Chu Mo still had an opportunity to hurt the small boy this time, but he held back as before!

In fact at this time, the victor and loser had already become clear!

Chu Mo wanted to say to the lofty Seventh Elder on top of the steps: I win!

Accepting him or not, who cares, but this little boy isn't his match.

This is a hard fact!

Each face of the Immortal Sky disciples on the platform revealed an expression of disbelief.

They didn't believe someone from their sect could unexpectedly lose to someone from the normal world.

But, this unbelievable thing.....seems it already became fact!

At that time, Seventh elders expression became cold. A finger from his sleeve, lightly shot..... a portion of force. It directly entered the small boy's body.

The small boy's body slightly trembled. Immediately his face filled with happiness, and he shouted: "Send me to the extreme!"

Whoosh!

The small boy's image rushed like the wind right before Chu Mo.

This time, the speed the small boy showed was honestly too fast!

It was like two completely different people compared to the past performance!

Chu Mo didn't have time to respond, the pit of his stomach was slapped.

Peng!

A muffled bang.

Chu Mo felt his body completely lose control.

Tap tap tap.....retreating back several steps.

Then he ruthlessly fell onto the limestone plaza.

All around, a piece of quiet.

In the moment that Seventh Elder bent a finger and shot out force, Demon Lord who had been standing there watching the lively scene suddenly fluttered his eyelids, sweeping over the Seventh Elder standing on the steps.

But suddenly, the Demon Lord dropped his eyelids, as if quickly falling asleep, lacking any response.

At this time, the silent square erupted with a burst of exploding applause!

“Little brother is mighty!”

“Little brother is dominant!”

“Immortal Sky is mighty!”

“Immortal Sky is dominant!”

That little boy, still looked innocent standing there, and he didn't continue attacking Chu Mo.

Because there was no need to continue fighting.

This blow, given Chu Mo isn't dead, but to recover, would be an

extremely difficult thing.

Chu Mo was half-dead on the ground, if it were not for willpower, then he could have already died and fainted earlier.

Chu Mo didn't sound out a painful cry from the beginning to the end. Not even his eyes showed any change.

Both of his eyes stared upon the innocent looking little boy's face.

Because Chu Mo's instincts felt something was a little fishy!

This small child, how could he suddenly erupt with powerful force in such a short period of time?

Chu Mo was baffled.

Every place in his body felt pain, flowing to him like the tide.

The little boy's eyes rapidly flashed with a hint of pride that didn't escape Chu Mo's vision.

In comparison, the deafening cheers from the square sounded completely remote in the ears of Chu Mo

His vision transferred from the young boy's face to the group of people on the stairs.

Only seeing the face of Seventh Elder, only dimly losing hope, but in the depths of the pupils, yet flashed a difficult to sense feeling of astonishment and murderous desire!

Perhaps, feeling Chu Mo's response was a little strange.

The other people expressions showed things were how they ought to be.

As if a seven or eight year old Immortal Sky disciple defeating the thirteen or fourteen year old Chu Mo is merely normal!

“Do you still have anything to say?” The twenty year old youth next to Seventh Elder looked upon Chu Mo with disdain and complete loathing.

Chapter 5: Mountain Gate Oath

“Trash!”

“Truly weak!”

“Ah, it’s like this.....still confident to enter the Immortal Sky?”

“Where does he get his confidence?”

The disciples on the square relaxed their breath at last, although they felt the young disciples victory was a little strange.

But it doesn’t matter. Their person won in the end!

They could finally show no mercy and ridicule this youth from the secular world.

The noisy sound was like a group of house flies continuously buzzing in Chu Mo’s ears “buzz” “buzz” “buzz” !

He still hadn’t recovered from the injury he received, although the Demon lord gave him some Yuan medicine which let him recover for the most part.

But in the end he was still a little affected.

The small boy looked innocent without guilt. He repeatedly said he is weak, but in reality, he is incomparably dangerous.

His strength had already entered into the third level of the Yuan closure realm.

The difference between those who have entered the Yuan closure and those who haven't is night and day.

This fist is very heavy!

Much heavier than the fist the Demon Lord used to injure Chu Mo earlier!

The Demon Lord only wanted to use torture to intimidate Chu Mo, and make him open his mouth and beg for mercy, not really kill him.

But this small seven or eight year old child is vicious and merciless. At what point did he want to compare notes?

Clearly he wanted Chu Mo's life!

The Demon Lord stopped looking at the lively scene at this time. He walked over and propped Chu Mo up. He placed his hand below Chu Mo's ribs and sent Yuan Qi into his body without showing a trace, protecting Chu Mo's heart.

Otherwise, Chu Mo's life would be in danger.

Seventh Elder and the others on top the stairs didn't feel anything at all from the Demon Lord's hand.

But Chu Mo.....precisely felt it.

He thought of his praise and certainty for the Immortal Sky in the past. He thought about the excitement and longing to enter the Immortal Sky. He thought of the anticipation of living a life in the Immortal Sky.....

Simply feelings of a lifetime ago!

Shame!

Soaring rage!

He couldn't help but spit out another mouthful of blood.

But he raised a hand, and wiped the trace of blood from the corner of his mouth. Looking at the young boy he honestly said: "Little brother, you are truly severe. I am not your match!"

The little boy's expression immediately changed, becoming ice-cold beyond compare.

Facing the ground he spat: “[Pei](#), who is your little brother? Don’t piss around. Look at yourself. You think you can compare with me? I am an elite disciple of the Immortal Sky.....”

[TL: Pei is a spitting noise.]

The small boy hadn’t finished speaking. The Seventh Elder’s face sank as he stood on top of the steps, and he let out a cough.

The small boy immediately stopped his mouth, but his face was already spread full of coldness. He revealed a disdainful smile while looking at Chu Mo: “Trash!”

Finished speaking, he coldly stared at Chu Mo, then turned and left.

Chu Mo struggled free of the Demon Lord’s support. He rushed up the stairs at Seventh Elder and the others with a clenched fist: “Seventh Elder is the height of justice!”

“Seventh Elder is fair!”

“Seventh Elder is selfless!”

“Truly admirable!”

“The Immortal Sky is truly the number one sect under the heavens. They casually pick a seven or eight year old child that is called the weakest. They are all so strong!”

“No match for younger generation, losing sincerely!”

Finished speaking, Chu Mo spit a third mouthful of blood, his body swayed, but he still steadily stood. He turned around and advanced towards the gate of the Immortal Sky, going step by step.

“Little animal, you dare speak satire.....” The twenty-year-old next to Seventh Elder was enraged, wanting to rush down.

Yet he was stopped by the head shake of Seventh Elder. He said in a deep voice: “Let him go.....no matter what is said, his grandfather and I have a history!”

“He is also a child, I can’t sink to his level!”

“This.....is a little personal to me.”

“Please everyone, don’t do anything strange!”

All of the Immortal Sky disciples on the square cupped their hands and bowed at the Seventh Elder’s words.

“Master said such words? Clearly you are kind hearted and generous. Not lowering yourself to that little animal’s level!” The young person next to Seventh Elder yelled.

“Yes yes, Seventh Elder is good hearted. We must call him good!”

“What is this? He dares mock the Immortal sky. He truly must be tired of living!”

“He doesn’t even match up to our youngest disciple. Truly weak, and he dares speak rudely. We should teach him a lesson!”

“Seventh Elder shows a great amount of maturity not lowering himself to his level. The child acted recklessly, truly not giving face.”

The few people surrounding Seventh Elder also started to speak words of agreement.

But the assistant Zhang’s expression was a little solemn, even a little stiff, without saying another word.

He wanted to curry favor with Seventh Elder, but he has integrity when he does things. He still has principles and a bottom line.

The small movement of Seventh Elder completely fooled the disciples of the square, but how could it get past him?

But it was a matter of comparing notes among children, that’s it! Don’t even mention the history with the grandfather.

Assistant Zhang even conjectured in his mind, the Seventh

Elder's so called history ought to be no small favor owed someone!

Otherwise, in the whole Immortal Sky, which elder would easily give his medallion to someone else?

Don't even mention a person from the secular world!

Even in this affair he used his own disciples?

If it wasn't for the youth having a foundation, just now that fist would have taken his life!

Assistant Zhang believed Seventh Elder did a bit too much.

This isn't a demonic sect, where they do whatever they want.

This is Immortal Sky!

It is the number one upright sect under heaven!

It is the place of immortal beings that everyone looks up to!

But how could he do this?

But assistant Zhang didn't say anything. What could he say when facing this matter?

Dare say anything?

Even if he spoke, no one would believe!

Instead his fate would be incomparably miserable going forward!

So, at this time, being silent is the best choice.

Facing the lonely image of the youth's back, countless eyes stared looking down upon him, yet he still didn't lower. Rather he stubbornly lifted his head.....assistant Zhang could only silently say sorry in his heart.

“Sorry child, I can only say, you came to a place you shouldn't have come, and encountered people you shouldn't have encountered!”

Everyone's vision was fixed on the thin statured youth hobbling through, leaving the enormous square.

It is uncertain when, but the mocking faces of the Immortal Sky disciples gradually disappeared.

The faces of some disciples couldn't help but reveal a bit of compassion.

Even some of the Immortal Sky disciples blocking the path of

Chu Mo cleared a way for him.

Because it was very clear in their hearts, this, it was not a fair competition.

Not looking at the five or six year age difference, but who was the young boy?

Was he the so called Immortal Sky's weakest?

Bullshit!

That is the Seventh Elder's most doted on elite disciple!

The majority of thirteen or fourteen year olds couldn't match up to the small boy, not to mention Chu Mo!

Furthermore, Chu Mo comes from the secular world. An ordinary person with blocked meridians!

Able to withstand such a long time, even getting the upper hand several times, it already surprised people.

Although in the end he still lost.

But several people yet respected him in the depths of their hearts!

A secular youth, how could he be the match of Fan Lizi. Fan Lizi grew up in the Immortal Sky, received Seventh Elder's careful training, was given Yuan pills to increase his cultivation, and is called the 'Immortal Sky's Little Pride.'

Fan Lizi is the thirteenth disciple in the Immortal Sky to ever break the Yuan Closure before the age of eight.

This is according to the Yuan Closure records maintained by the Immortal Sky over the past five hundred years!

Seventh Elder made Fan Lizi fight with Chu Mo. Where was there learning? Clearly he wanted Chu Mo's life!

Chu Mo didn't die, he truly is lucky!

But no one dared speak these words.

Watching that figure, staggering along, farther and farther away on the square, the Seventh Elder's pupils flickered with an unclear expression.

Assistant Zhang suddenly mumbled on the side: "His nature isn't bad, pity he is trash."

Seventh Elder's eyebrow raised

Assistant Zhang smiled: "Fortunately he is trash!"

“Yes, a piece of trash, that’s it!

The corners of Seventh Elders mouth slightly raised, revealing a slight ice-cold smile, then he waive a hand saying: “Forget it!”

Chu Mo and the Demon Lord arrived at the bottom of the mountain. The two disciples were still there standing guard. They were both slightly startled seeing the two come down.

Chu Mo’s appearance especially made them feel uncertain.

Didn’t you bring Seventh Elder’s keepsake? Seventh Elder personally saw it, how could it become like this?

But Cho Mo naturally couldn’t give them an explanation, the Demon Lord even more so.

The lofty and majestic Immortal Sky gate appeared above the heads of the two disciple guards.

Chu Mo stood in place and turned around. Raising his head he looked at the place he just came from, and he praised the Immortal Sky mountain gate.

His face revealed a trace of self ridicule, then word by word he slowly said: “Ageless mountain, lonely mysterious peak, Immortal Sky.....”

“One day, I will return here!”

“I will personally smash this utterly rotten mountain gate!”

“Ah.....what did you say?” At this time, the two disciples defending the gate were finally conscious of the situation.

Those disciples who were flattering to Chu Mo before scowled and stared down. They furiously looked at Chu Mo: “You dare say such outrageous word before the lonely mysterious peak? Are you tired of living?”

At this time, the demon raised his head and dully looked at the plain-looking outer disciple.

This look, appeared very normal and dull, but it made the outer disciple suddenly tremble, wanting to forget everything.

The other disciple also stayed silent from fear.

Just now in a wink, a murderous intent rose from the black-robed man. It was truly dreadful!

It was as if a large mountain momentarily pressed on their thoughts, nearly choking them to death.

Because of this, soon after, when the Seventh Elder sent people to

inquire about anything strange that happened from the two outer disciples, the two voiced in unison.

They said there were no strange activities. The youth walked out the gate unsteady, like a stray dog running.

They didn't say a word about the Demon Lord!

Upon hearing this, Seventh Elder raised the corners of his eyebrows, not saying anything.

Chu Mo and the Demon Lord quickly left the Immortal Sky mountain gate.

The two stopped and found a quiet place. The sky started to turn dark, and the Demon Lord made a bamboo fire.

Then he withdrew several Yuan pills, and made Chu Mo take them. Then he casually released several acupuncture points on Chu Mo's body.

"That little thing, since the beginning he used words to paralyze you. You couldn't accurately seize the killing intent behind his innocence."

"You clearly had several opportunities. You could've easily defeated or even seriously injured that little thing. Yet you are lacking, and too merciful!"

“You must make an all out effort so long as it is a battle. It doesn’t matter against who!”

“Who do you think you are?”

“A righteous hero?”

“Was that was truly a practice demonstration?”

“Giving birth to human emotions in battle, starting off leniently, these are the greatest things you personally don’t need to be responsible for.

“Once more, you don’t have the qualifications to sympathize with opponents!”

“Because people are stronger than you!”

“Therefore, you are completely responsible for the bitterness you taste now!”

The Demon Lord’s face was expressionless, dully teaching Chu Mo.

As far as the Seventh Elder secretly acting, the Demon Lord didn’t bring it up.

Furthermore Chu Mo didn't say anything. He also didn't mention the strange attack from the young boy at the end, because no matter what he lost!

Losing is losing, he didn't want to find any excuse in his defeat.

Chu Mo's hands wrapped around his knees, staring at the bamboo flame. His pupils twinkled as if contemplating something.

Chapter 6: Must Coerce The Demon Lord

“Why? Did you get hit too hard?”

“Do you think you are truly trash?” The Demon Lord looked upon Chu Mo with joy in his misfortune.

“I, I want to ask something of you, merely a request.....”

Chu Mo didn't reply to the Demon Lord's words. Instead he suddenly said such words.

“I will uphold my promise, and be your disciple, but if you refuse this request, I will kill myself!”

Chu Mo's eyes gazed upon the coldness spreading across the Demon Lord's face: “You may never, at any time or any place look upon me.”

“You.....are threatening me?”

The Demon Lord slightly squinted his eyes, momentarily retracting his expression of happiness at Chu Mo's misfortune. His pupils flickered with a dangerous ray of light.

He didn't ask anything, rather he coldly stared at Chu Mo.

“Threaten me? So be it.”

“You just framed me!’ Chu Mo said with certainty.

“Right?”

“It is clear to me now. I am absolutely not as they say: Meridians blocked, natural ability about the same as an ordinary person, completely unable to cultivate.”

“Although my grandfather isn’t as strong as you, at the very least he is a general on the battlefield. He already reached the peak of the Yuan Closure. He is a cultivator on the verge of breaking through the fifth level.”

“He very much loves me, he even spoils me a little, but he has never lied to me or boasted!”

“He said I am very suited for cultivating, so, it must be so!”

“Only in the secular world, he didn’t have good resources to provide me.”

“The past several years he didn’t want me to part from him, and I was always at his side.”

“I grew up in the military since I was a little boy. My uncles all told me I have a rare cultivating talent.”

“If it wasn’t for something bad happening, my grandfather definitely wouldn’t have let me leave.”

“But he said, due to my natural ability, even if I start cultivating now, my future success will not be lacking!”

Chu Mo calmly spoke.

The Demon Lord coldly smiled: “How does that relate to me?”

“Of course it relates to you!” Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord: “You are a bad person, and you do bad things. Naturally you used some foul trick to make me your disciple. You would prepare for any uncertainty. Obviously you did a trick to my body.”

“Otherwise, that ungrateful Seventh Elder wouldn’t dare say in front of a crowd of people, your meridians are blocked, natural ability is dull, not suited for cultivation!”

The Demon Lord’s mouth twitched and he quipped: “You believe that dogshit Seventh Elder’s assessment has any relevance.”

Chu Mo said: “Although I don’t have proof you played a trick on my body, but I believe my intuition and judgement!”

The Demon Lord coldly humphed, yet didn’t deny, and he coldly laughed: “So what?”

“Whatever, I only want to tell you, I’m not that stupid!” Chu Mo said: “Furthermore, I don’t care to blame you, your framed me, I’m asking you to do me a favor. This should be fair.”

“Fair? Where are the words fair in the world? Only the weak say the words fair over and over!” The Demon Lord coldly smiled.

“Yes, I know, so I can only use my life to bring about fairness!” Chu Mo spoke while calmly looking at the Demon Lord.

The Demon Lord was silent for a moment, then coldly said: “You want to beg me, go and protect your grandfather one time?”

“How do you know?” Chu Mo was a little startled. He shockingly looked at the Demon Lord.

“You aren’t a fool, could it be I am an moron?”

The Demon lord was a little crazy, and he angrily said: “How does that dogshit Seventh Elder have a history with your grandfather?”

“Clearly he owed your grandfather something heavenly..... although I cannot say for certain, if I guess correctly, there is some disgraceful information about Seventh Elder in the hands of your grandfather.”

Otherwise, why would he give your grandfather his elder Immortal Sky medallion?

“And why would he want to kill your after seeing you?”

He certainly believes your grandfather leaked this unsightly thing to you!

“Humph, also your extremely confident expression scared him.”

“But he from your own mouth he figured out you didn’t know, so he finally used his ruthless little bastard disciple against you.”

“Otherwise, he would have casually grabbed an outstanding disciple of the same age to kill you earlier!”

“Because you don’t know anything, perhaps he temporarily won’t come searching to kill you, but your grandfather.....He certainly can’t let him live!”

“Is determining these types of matters difficult?”

The Demon Lord finished his words, then coldly laughed: “But this unfortunate event, what does it have to do with me?”

“He kills your grandfather. Wait until you to become strong, then go seek him and get revenge!”

“Go pull out his tendons from his bones and hack him to pieces, or throw him into the deep fryer.....do whatever suits you!”

Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord a little astonished. He had no words for this evil person's logic.

“Since right now there is an opportunity to save my grandfather, why wait until he dies?” Chu Mo was a little indignant.

The Demon Lord dully said: “Do you have that ability?”

“I don't, so I'm begging you!”

“I promise nothing!”

“Then I'll go die!”

Boom!

A large stone the size of a person was slapped into pieces by the angry Demon Lord.

Then he angrily looked at Chu Mo: “Your grandfather is named Fan Wudi. You are named Chu Mo. Most likely he isn't your real grandfather, why do you care so much?”

“Correct, I'm adopted, but grandfather fostered me. Without grandfather there would be no me!”

Chu Mo said tit-for-tat: “You lack humanity and emotions, don’t tell me other people aren’t allowed to have them?”

“You have them so go save him! I’m not going!”

“I can’t save him, but I can die. I’ll let you have no disciple!”

“AAAAAAHHHHHHHHH!”

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

The surrounding trees and plants were uprooted. Everything within a mile was turned into scorched earth by the Demon Lord’s rage.

Then he angrily looked at Chu Mo, gnashing his teeth he said: “I am the Grand Demon Lord.....even in.....humph, In this life, going on a rampage without restraint, never before has a person dared threaten me, and no one has ever before dared to be impudent like you!”

Chu Mo was barely able to breathe as he was pressured by the terrifying Qi emitting from the Demon Lord, yet he weakly said: “Who let you believe I will be your disciple?”

“You are just a bastard!” the Demon Lord raged.

“You also aren’t some great person.” Chu Mo coldly laughed.

The Demon Lord was at a loss for words. He discovered, this little thing. He could torture him, sort him out, and easily kill him.

But to make this child surrender, it seems to be an impossibility!

What would arguing with him accomplish? In the end, he would be half dead.

The teenager used such a big blow, yet he was able to calm down.

He couldn’t let of his steam in the presence of others.

Especially Chu Mo clearly saying he would take out the people in the Immortal Sky, he would not sit idly by

But he still didn’t say that!

This already could completely prove, this is a formidable stubborn being. Furthermore a youth who is arrogant to extreme from the inner core of his bones!

But he has extremely important feelings!

Even if he is tortured half dead, he won't beg for mercy. But for his grandfather, he unexpectedly makes unreasonable threats and acts shamelessly.....using all of his tricks.

Not even the least bit bashful.

Truly evil!

The Demon Lord has read many people in this life, meeting too many so called arrogant youths and peerless geniuses.

But to meet a youth with a nature like Chu Mo, this is the first!

Don't even mention this youngsters natural ability and extremely excellent meridians. He is simply built for cultivating.

Thinking like this, the Demon Lord's heart angered, and then settled a bit.

But his face, it is still slanted looking at Chu Mo: "Fine, I promise you, I'll rescue your grandfather one time!"

"But this one problem, you must frighten away Seventh Elder. You can't kill him. Let him live, but don't let him dare create trouble for my grandfather again!"

Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord. Inside his pure eyes, this is

the first time they flashed a hint of murderous intent: “This person.....one day, I will personally rip off his hypocritical mask. I will kill him with my own hands!”

“Humph, give em an inch and they want a mile.” The Demon Lord snorted. Some admiration arose in his heart towards Chu Mo.

Truly an arrogant bastard!

Chu Mo finally relaxed a breath.

At this time, the Demon Lord raised his head and looked high into the sky, coldly saying: “Truly an impetuous person!”

“What?” Chu Mo immediately stood up, anxiously looking at the Demon Lord.

The Demon Lord coldly said: “That dogshit Seventh Elder, he couldn’t wait to go kill your grandfather.”

“Then what are we waiting for?” Chu Mo said.

The Demon Lord sat down calm and easy, and he fished out a bottle of wine. He drank a mouthful, and the fire went down. His face became all the more white, dully saying: “What’s the hurry? It’s merely a little Immortal Sky Elder. Let him go first for the night, what can he do?”

“You.....” Chu Mo was anxious in his heart, and he angrily said: “You just promised me!”

“Sit for me!” The Demon Lord immediately raged, Pointing a finger he scolded: “Little bastard, this master already endured you too long! In my entire life I’ve never been blackmailed. You are the first!”

“Since I promised you, won’t this master certainly do what he says?”

“You believe this master is an like those creditless villains in Immortal Sky?”

Chu Mo jumped from fear, then sat down there. He muttered in a little voice: “What evil people have credible words?”

“.....” The Demon Lord ignored him.

But after resting a moment, the Demon Lord stood up. Without an expression and without speaking he hauled up Chu Mo, and he flew high into the sky.

Perhaps to teach Chu Mo a lesson, this time, the Demon Lord didn’t use any Qi to protect Chu Mo.

At high altitudes, the air temperature is extremely low, one could even say it is extremely frigid!

Those low temperatures could cover Chu Mo in a layer of ice in a moment, and Chu Mo froze half to death.

But he gnashed his teeth. Even if his whole body froze completely stiff, and if he felt his blood congeal, he wouldn't make a noise.

After a moment, he felt his body gradually become warm.

Chu Mo knew, he won again.

But the feelings in his heart, yet are mixed feelings. Even until now, he firmly believes, the Demon Lord is a bad person.

Good people, what place has them?

But compared to the people of the Immortal Sky, Chu Mo would rather have the Demon Lord as his master.

After all, the Demon Lord's evil shows on the outside.

Methods merciless, a tough nature, and he basically doesn't bother to hide anything.

Furthermore, the people inside famous upright sect, the Immortal Sky, look solemn, but in fact they are all evil to the core!

Chapter 7: Especially Lacking Shame

As soon as Seventh Elder saw him the first time, he felt a murderous killing desire towards Chu Mo.

But he showed the moral high ground. It seemed like he refused Chu Mo's entry into the Immortal Sky, entirely as a consideration to the Immortal Sky Reputation.

But he sneakily let a disciple who had already broken into the First Closure face Chu Mo.

This scheme was truly ruthless to the extreme.

Furthermore Seventh Elder's elite disciple, that seven or eight year old boy, unexpectedly has the same deep terrifying temperament at such a young age.

But of course what kind of master, has what kinds of students.

If it wasn't for his own reputation, this time.....Chu Mo would have been killed the Immortal Sky.

Chu Mo truly thought about ruthlessly cutting off his own two hands when he thought of his prior longing and adoration for the Immortal Sky.

It would be nothing compared to the jeers and satirizing voices of

the Immortal Sky disciples.

The thing that made him feel the most shame and unacceptance is his prior trust in the Immortal Sky!

Only now, that trust is already dead.

Chu Mo swore he would never again be that innocent after today, and he wouldn't lightly trust others.

Although the Demon Lord is constantly terrible, and he looks evil, but his words are without fault.

“There truly may not necessarily be all good people inside famous upright sects!”

They corrupt with malicious ideas and underhanded tricks. They are even more vile than some demonic sects!

.....

A thousand mile journey would be a road filled with difficulty for Chu Mo.

But under the care of the Demon Lord, it is but a trifle thing.

Chu Mo was carried the whole way by the Demon Lord. Flying in the sky, he secretly vowed in his heart: I will be this strong one day!

One day, I will rely on my own strength to protect my grandfather!

Those people who look down on me, who want to cheat me, and harm me, you will all be remembered. I will return!

The Demon Lord didn't deceive Chu Mo. They already caught up to Seventh Elder with a short bit of effort

Hanging from far away behind, they were completely hidden from Seventh Elder's attention.

From this point, Chu Mo could sense, the Demon Lord is greater than Seventh Elder, but it is unknown how many times greater!

But the thing that made him feel strange is, the Demon Lord's body. It seemed to be not so well. He often burst into coughing fits.

He ignored when asked, making Chu Mo feel a little depressed.

“Why don't we simply overtake him? Shouldn't we go and warn

my grandfather? Isn't sooner better than later?"

"What do you know? You think with your remarks, your grandfather will believe you?" The Demon Lord coldly said.

Chu Mo thought a moment and silently nodded without continuing to argue.

The Demon Lord spoke the truth. If he went back like this, his grandfather would not only not believe him, he would even suspect he had never been to the Immortal Sky.

Like this, the Demon Lord carried Chu Mo, and they followed far away behind Seventh Elder.

They followed all the way until they arrived at the country of Daxia's capital city—Yellow Flame City!

Chu Mo was up high in the sky, and he could see that lofty majestic ancient city. The moment it appeared in his sight, Chu Mo's heart became a little excited.

He silently thought: Yellow Flame City, I have returned!

Only, I never thought I would return in this way.

I originally believed I would finish studies and then take the scenic route back.

It is a pity ideals are always beautiful, yet reality is cruel like this.

But Chu Mo didn't have time for emotions because he just saw the Seventh Elder's image enter into Yellow Flame City

The Demon Lord Didn't say anything at this time. He followed Seventh Elder's image directly into Yellow Flame City.

It was midnight, and the crescent moon was in the sky. The dim light was covered by several clouds.

The entire Yellow Flame City was completely enshrouded in darkness.

Chu Mo originally believed Seventh Elder wouldn't know where they lived, and he would have to search a moment. But he never expected Seventh Elder would make a beeline directly to the Fan house!

He couldn't help but indignantly say: "I never thought this ungrateful shameless person would stare in the dark at my grandfather!"

The Demon Lord humphed, coldly saying: "So this is the disgusting place of the shameless disciple. Since he is worried about having his secret exposed, why didn't he go kill him earlier? It appears he wants to put on a dignified appearance. It's astonishingly disdainful."

Chu Mo angrily said: “Is this how you treat the people you save?”

“I’m only judging the matter as it stands. This master doesn’t need to save anyone.”

Chu Mo shut his mouth, not wanting to talk with this kind of person anymore.

The Demon Lord brought Chu Mo to the Fan residence at this time.

He didn’t give Chu Mo any time to lament. He flew Chu Mo up on top of the building where his grandfather rested.

Although he didn’t like the Demon Lord, Chu mo had to admit, this big evil person truly has ability.

Because the Seventh Elder below completely didn’t feel anything abnormal.

A dialog sounded out from the room at this time.

“Who are you? Rushing into my home in the middle of this night, what are you doing?” A hoarse deep voice suddenly sounded.

Grandpa.....

Chu Mo's tears were nearly welling.

He was simply too familiar with this voice. It is truly his grandfather, the Daxia Army General Fan Wudi.

“Hey, General Fan, eminent people truly have short memories. Closely look, who am I?”

“You are.....”

Fan Wudi's voice carried hesitation, and soon after he was suddenly pleasantly surprised: “I remember. You are Zhao Hongzhi.....haha. So it is you boy, ah, sorry, sorry, this old man was a little panicked. The first time seeing you in a long time, my heart is so happy. I forgot you are now already the Seventh Elder of the Immortal Sky. You are already a big shot!”

Chu Mo listened a little painfully up on the roof. His grandfather wasn't the slightest bit aware of Zhao Hongzhi's abnormality, still believing he is a good person.

“Hey, I couldn't dare be called a big shot in front of old General Fan.” Seventh Elder came this time in order to murder Fan Wudi, thus he declined to elaborate. His voice also became sarcastic.

Fan Wudi is battle-hardened. He has spent his whole life fighting. To say this type of person is a military man would be an understatement.

But to believe he is a fool, that is a serious blunder.

Relying on bravery certainly isn't enough to be a constantly victorious General on the battlefield.

The old man heard the sarcasm in Seventh Elder's voice this time, yet he said a little uncertainly: "Seventh Elder, you are an Immortal Sky big shot. This old man is only a military man in the secular world. Over the years I have never revealed the events of that time. I don't know why.....have I offended you Seventh Elder? Please clarify."

Grandpa has a quick temper, not bothering to hide anything.

The event at that time, he personally rescued Zhao Hongzhi. It was before he was a big shot.

But it couldn't be Fan Wudi owes Zhao Hongzhi!

Although these past years Zhao Hongzhi made his disciples who walked the earth give gifts to Fan Wudi, but the old man paid no mind.

Isn't gratitude something people ought to do?

Grandpa wouldn't hold any bad feelings even if Zhao Hongzhi didn't send gifts.

Because Fan Wudi is a simple person. He is frank, and short tempered, never bothering with trivial matters.

But without rhyme or reason, suddenly showing up in the middle of the night, and speaking strange angry words. What is the purpose?’

“Even now you continue to play the fool?”

Seventh Elder coldly said: “Fan Wudi, originally I believed you to be a well-behaved person. All these years you have protected the secret of that time.”

“I have given you gifts. I often send people to give you Yuan medicine to help your health.’

“But I never thought, for your grandson, you would give him the keepsake I gave you, and have him step into the Immortal Sky to come clasp onto me?”

“Fan Wudi, you truly.....you common people, are you qualified to come blackmail me?

The old man stood over there staring stupidly, looking at the Seventh Elder

Somewhat flabbergasted staring at Seventh Elder, he said

astonished: “What did you say? My grandson? Mo’er? You already met him? This.....isn’t this impossible?”

According to the old man, Chu Mo still needed another year to enter the Immortal Sky.

Don’t tell me my grandson can fly?

Seventh Elder coldly laughed; “Playing the fool this time? You dare say it wasn’t you who sent your grandson to the Immortal Sky?”

Fan Wudi calmed down, looking at Seventh Elder, slowly sitting down on the armchair. That imposing manner of several years on the battlefield was suddenly emitted, and he coldly stared at Seventh Elder.

“Not bad, my grandson Chu Mo, was sent by me!”

“Although I don’t know why, half a year ahead.....even a year ahead of schedule he arrived at the Immortal Sky.”

“But this, it already doesn’t matter.”

“That child had no choice but to leave here because he irritated the higher level officials in Yellow Flame City.”

“Because of his unsurpassed innate talent, and his outstanding

meridians, I thought, it is best to let him enter the Immortal Sky rather than some unfamiliar sect.”

“Thus I thought of you. I made him carry the keepsake you gave me at that time and hurry to the Immortal Sky. I thought in my heart, regardless of the mutual affection between us at that time, once you saw my grandson’s rare talent.....”

“Hahahahaha, truly you want to kill me with laughter? Your meridian blocked, ordinary grandson? Talented? Do you think I’m blind or stupid?” Seventh Elder Zhao Hongzhi couldn’t help but laugh wildly

On the roof, Chu Mo looked over at the Demon Lord.

The Demon Lord Showed no expression.

The old man stood looked stupefied. He looked at Zhao Hongzhi laughing wildly, not understanding: “What? Although this old man isn’t an immortal, such a formidable strength, one would have to be blind not to see!”

“Although I adore my grandson, but I wouldn’t go so far as to forcibly call an ordinary person talented!”

“He practically hasn’t gone through any training, only studying military martial arts for several days. He has forcibly self-cultivated into the second Yuan Level, on the verge of stepping into the realm of the Yuan Closure.”

“Don’t tell me this type of child is not worthy of the word talented?”

“Otherwise, I would have no face, and I wouldn’t let him go to the Immortal Sky.....”

“Fine, just shut up. Whether or not your grandson is talented is already insignificant.” Seventh Elder Zhao Hongzhi coldly said: “Today I came here not to argue about these things!”

Fan Wudi coldly looked at Zhao Hongzhi: “What did you come to do? Kill me?”

“Looks like you still have some brains!” Zhao Hongzhi revealed a ferocious expression saying: “If you had honestly and simply been a secular general, you and I would be people in two different worlds. I wouldn’t have any murderous intent towards you.”

“But you did something you shouldn’t have!”

“You made your grandson enter the Immortal Sky, and even that type of trash..... whatever, even if he isn’t trash!”

“Because he brought my keepsake to enter, if I accepted him, in the future people would certainly investigate my relationship with you.”

“Then, they would inevitably find you! Even if you are still tight-lipped, but don’t forget, we are immortals!”

“We have several methods that can make you unconsciously speak the truth.”

“I would no longer be able to continue hiding the thing I did at that time.”

“If that thing was revealed, how would I still have the face to stay in the Immortal Sky?”

“Even mortals would come pursue me!”

“I would disgrace the reputation of the Immortal Sky, and they absolutely wouldn’t let me go.”

“They would strip my Elder position, and banish me.....and I would be in complete ruin!”

Zhao Hongzhi appeared ferocious staring at Fan Wudi: “And all of this.....it is all only because you. You relied on rescuing me at that time, my gratitude, and you wanted to blackmail me.....all created by you!”

“Speak for yourself. Should you die?”

Chapter 8: Flying Kick

Fan Wudi sat there, completely upright. Not a trace of fear was on his face.

“Speak!” Zhao Hongzhi said with a ferocious expression.

Fan Wudi let out a sneering noise at this time. He looked at Zhao Hongzhi with disdain: “What else do I have to say? You are an ungrateful shameless little man!”

“My greatest regret is saving you, a shameless thing, at that time!”

“A thing that basically couldn’t happened, a nearly impossible event, could grow to a plight of you murdering to keep secrets. This type of trash, I’ve only seen once in my life!”

“I truly prostrate myself in admiration!”

“If this old man guesses correctly. Then that pitiful grandson, I’m afraid he has already died at your hands right?”

“This old man is truly blind. Saving you, a thing below the animals at that time, and also protecting your secret for so many years!”

“This old man won’t be able to die on the battlefield. He won’t be

able to die under the blade of the enemy. On the contrary, he will die at the hands of this shameless disciple.....truly to reap what one has sown!”

“Merely pitiful, my grandson, pure and simple, honest and filial, and an unsurpassed talent met his end in your beastly hands!”

Fan Wudi spoke with his face as hard as steel, but he couldn't help but let two streams of tears flow down.

Chu Mo's heart was breaking on top of the roof. He really wanted to yell: Grandfather, grandson is here!

Grandson still lives!

But he cannot!

If he Wanted to thoroughly frighten this little Zhao Hongzhi, and temporarily resolve this danger. Wanting to make Zhao Hongzhi unable to sleep soundly at night, constantly having nightmares. Wanting for a future day, to be able to safely practice cultivation himself.....then he must not at this time reveal his whereabouts.

“What thing that practically couldn't happen? You know in the Immortal Sky, there are several people eyeing my position right?”

“There is also one thing. You can rest easy. Your trash grandson is temporarily alive, but.....Ha Ha!”

“I’m afraid he also doesn’t have long to live!”

Zhao Hongzhi revealed an extremely pleased expression when he said this.

“Your grandson, although he is meridian blocked garbage, but the foundation.....yet it is strong!”

“I originally planned to let my closest disciple take care of him, but I never thought, my eight year old talented young disciple that already stepped into the Yuan Closure, who is battle tested, and actually somewhat extreme.....”

“He was lacking a little, and crippled by your grandson. But it’s still good. Your grandson is truly good-hearted. He had several opportunities, but they were all given up by him!”

“Ahahahaha!”

Fan Wudi’s pupils shot out a cold light. Looking at Zhao Hongzhi he said: “Shameless!”

“Ha, how could this be shameless? I merely said your grandson is extremely stupid!”

“Soft-hearted!”

“But that little bastard is truly outstanding. I unexpectedly had to forcibly put second level Yuan Qi into my disciple to suppress him!”

“If it wasn’t for his meridians being blocked, he would be worthy of the title genius!”

Fan Wudi already didn’t think it worth explaining Chu Mo’s meridians have never been blocked.

His face revealed arrogance, and he coldly said: “My grandson is a true genius!”

“What of it?”

Zhao Hongzhi coldly said: “Do you don’t blame me for using a little secret method to give my disciple power? It is only expected.”

“My little disciple is hard working, and reacts extremely quickly. He sent your grandson flying with one palm!”

“Furthermore, my precious disciple used the Blood Stopping Palm!”

“Haha, have you heard of Blood Stopping Palm? The receiver must die, hahaha!”

Zhao Hongzhi laughed wildly. That scholarly elegant face

appeared extremely twisted at this time.

“Animal!” Fan Wudi angrily glared like a tiger at Zhao Hongzi.

The old man was already angry to the extreme. The blue veins on his forehead were completely exposed.

Chu Mo’s face revealed a confounded expression on the roof, but it immediately settled down. He didn’t even look at the Demon Lord.

There is no need to ask, the Demon Lord certainly knew this matter!

But yet he didn’t say.....

Nevertheless those words, losing is losing, if he was sufficiently strong, given that the the Seventh Elder secretly helped, then what?

He would lose as before to that deceitful little thing!

If he had the strength of the Demon Lord, even Seventh Elder could be easily slapped to death!

When it is all said and done.....his own strength is still of no use!

No wonder other people.

This is the first time in Chu Mo's life he abhorred his own extreme weakness.

It is also the first time giving birth to unmatched intense thoughts to become strong.

The Demon Lord looked upon Chu Mo, and he duly said: "What a crappy Blood Stopping Palm. I already cured you earlier!"

Chu Mo didn't make a sound, but inside there was yet a burst of relief.

It is unknown why their words completely didn't transfer down to the room below.

This obviously is another trick of the Demon Lord.

Inside the room, Zhao Hongzhi's face was still mean and ferocious. The light of his pupils flickered, seemingly the thing he was going to do had found sufficient justification.

Slashing one's savior!

This thing, only if one's conscious hasn't been obliterated, even if there is just a little bit remaining, then it is certainly a very difficult thing to enact.

Fan Wudi mockingly looked at Zhao Hongzhi: “You ungrateful, cruel, and immoral animal, murdering to keep your secrets. You still need to find a bullshit reason?”

“My heart is assured knowing my grandson is alive!”

“Don’t worry, my grandson is extremely lucky. He will not die!”

“Today you kill me. One day, my grandson will inevitably slaughter the Immortal Sky. He will chop into your skull with his own hands for my revenge!”

“Come, animal, come kill your savior!”

Grandfather spoke and stood up, glaring like a tiger. He let off an unmatched sharp radiance that pierced into Zhao Hongzhi’s eyes.

“This old man wants to personally see your fists!”

“Hit me!”

“What are you still hesitating for?”

“Your conscious has been one of a dog eating bastard for a long time. Has the act of killing your own benefactor tangled it?”

Fan Wudi's character is unyielding, even if his realm is much weaker than Zhao Hongzhi's. But yet not even ten Zhao Hongzhis could emit such an imposing matter!

Clearly knowing this is the place he must die, he completely lacked a trace of fear.

From beginning to end, the imposing manner completely steamrolled Zhao Hongzhi.

“Good, old thing, you unexpectedly dare slander an elder of the Immortal Sky?”

“You should die!”

Zhao Hongzhi angrily roared, raised his hand, and chopped towards Fan Wudi.

Zhao Hongzhi used all of his force in this hand. Given that a large stone could be easily split in two halves by his fist!

The skulls of men are hard, but they aren't as hard as stone.

Soon Fan Wudi would die at the hands of this shameless disciple.

[Puchi!](#)

[TL: Chinese sound effect.]

A disdainful soft laughter suddenly transferred from the roof.

This soft laughter, although laughter, yet it was ice cold beyond compare.

Zhao Hongzhi chopping hand was forced to stop three inches from the brow of Fan Wudi.

His eyes revealed endless shock.

A drop of sweat smoothly rolled down Zhao Hongzhi's forehead and dripped down to the towards the ground, unexpectedly stopping in mid-air.

Time, in this instant, unexpectedly froze.

A black figure abruptly appeared in the room.

Zhao Hong Zhi's eyes revealed endless terror, because he clearly knew, he encountered an impossible master!

If he could open his mouth to Fan Wudi, he would certainly curse such a swindler!

In the house there hid such a terrifying expert!

Fan Wudi also couldn't move on the other side. He could see a black figure was abruptly added to the room, and his also revealed confusion.

Because, he also didn't know this person!

This man in black is naturally the Demon Lord. He arrived before the Zhao Hongzhi without speaking a word. Raising his hand he gave two big slaps to the face!

Smack!

Smack!

That crisp sound transmitted far way in the quiet night.

“This master always feels, he is a hundred percent evil!”

“Extremely cruel and merciless!”

“All kinds of evil!”

“Tyrannical!”

“Only upon meeting you, this master suddenly discovered, compared with you, this master is unexpectedly a rare philanthropist!”

Chu Mo quietly lifted a tile and peered into the room, almost directly falling down into the room.

He speechlessly thought: You are a philanthropist? It is unknown how many times better you are than Zhao Hongzhi, but you are still an evil person!

The Demon Lord glanced at the roof, then he looked at Zhao Hongzhi who was unable to move or speak. He raise a hand and once again ruthlessly slapped. The slap was just short of turning Zhao Hongzhi's face to mush.

The anger stored up inside the little Chu Mo finally released a little bit.

“This master has never met such a shameless thing like you!”

Smack!

Another smack.

“If the word [Hypocrite](#) was plastered on your forehead, it would tarnish the good part of the word!”

[TL: This is somewhat of a pun. The word for hypocrite ‘伪君子’ means false noble person. The last part means ‘君子’ means a noble man. He is basically saying the word hypocrite isn't even good enough for him because it contains some goodness within it.]

Smack!

“Given that is false.....the good and the bad both have noble aspects.”

“And you?”

Smack!

“You are trash!”

“What kind of creatures are your mother and father? That they could give birth to this thing?”

“Why didn’t they strangle you to death at birth?”

Smack!

“This type of garbage gives evil people a bad name!”

Smack Smack Smack!

Another series of slaps whipped past.

The two sides of Zhao Hongzhi’s face were already thoroughly

turned to mush.

Already seventy to eighty percent of his teeth were knocked out. There probably already isn't a single tooth left completely intact.

The Demon Lord's tactics are especially dreadful. This round of beatings under normal circumstances, given that it wouldn't beat someone to death, they would absolutely pass out.

But Zhao Hongzhi's intellect was completely sober, and there was a rich expression in his eyes.

From the beginning of shock and terror, following on to begging, and then finally to losing hope.

Chu Mo saw everything clearly on the roof. His heart filled with joy, wishing he could beat the man himself.

Although inside the room, grandpa Fan Wudi completely didn't understand the uninvited guest, but his eyes revealed an expression dripping with joy.

If he could speak, he would inevitably applaud!

This beating is simply straight forward!

It is satisfying to everyone!

The beating of the Demon Lord had vented off almost all the anger of Chu Mo.

His pupils coldly looked at Zhao Honghi as he said: “You animal, I should slap you to death, but I’m yet afraid I would dirty my hand!”

In Zhao Hongzhi’s heart there were ten thousand beasts rushing about wailing endlessly: You are afraid of dirtying your hand, then why did you give me such a beating?

But he heard from the words of his opponent, he doesn’t want to kill him. His heart immediately gave birth to hope.

If only he could live, there is hope!

But the Demon Lord immediately drenched him in cold water.

“Although I didn’t kill you, but today your disgraceful conduct, and the shameful things you have done in the past, I know them all!”

“This person is protected by me!”

“If there is the slightest accident.....”

“Even if he dies on the battlefield, I will certainly go to the Immortal Sky. I will grab you out and make you unable to live or

die!

“I will broadcast each and every one of your scandals. I will let everyone under heaven know the Elder of the Immortal Sky is a dog!

“If you don’t believe test me!”

“Now scram!”

Finished speaking, the Demon Lord gave Zhao Hongzhi a kick in the butt, and sent him flying through Fan Wudi’s window.

Chapter 9: Respect Master Demon Lord

Crash!

The window made of hard rosewood was disintegrated by Zhao Hongzhi.

The old General Fan Wudi, a man that killed on the battlefield without batting an eye couldn't, couldn't help but slightly wince.

He felt the pain on behalf of Zhao Hongzhi.

But currently Zhao Hongzhi already felt the pain. The kick of the Demon Lord sent him flying into the heavens, directly out of Yellow Flame City.

Correct, he flew.

Then he crashed several miles outside of the city. His [three immortal souls and seven mortal forms](#) were half destroyed.

[TL: The three immortal souls and seven mortal forms are a feature of Daoism. Each person has a Heaven, Earth, and Life soul. At birth the life soul splits into seven chakras creating the seven mortal forms. I don't know if this will play into the story for cultivation purposes, or if it is just an expression to say he got really beat up. Either way the Chinese audience would be aware of it so non-native readers should be as well.]

Just as the Demon Lord promised Chu Mo, he didn't kill him.

Otherwise, he would kill Zhao Hongzhi repeatedly.

But this time, Zhao Hongzhi is only had half a breath remaining.

It is unknown how much time passed before Zhao Hongzhi finally woke. An uncountable amount of bones were broken from head to toe.

Each slight movement was extremely painful.

He resisted, but a large mouthful of blood sprayed out that contained a large amount of teeth.

A large portion of which were swallowed into his stomach earlier.

He trembled and grabbed out several medicine pills. He swallowed them down, but they only restored a glimmer of strength.

Bit by bit, trembling, he began to connect the broken bones on his body.

The fear in his eyes not only didn't disperse, but it became even more intense.

“In this world.....how could there be such a terrifying cultivator?”

Zhao Hongzhi courage was broken by fear. At this time even thoughts of revenge.....completely didn't appear!

The opponents power already completely exceeded his acknowledgement.

Given that the heads of the Immortal Sky, including those strong level ancestors who have lived for one or two hundred years, he was afraid they didn't even have this ability.

Looking in the direction of Yellow Flame City, the corners of Zhao Hongzhi's mouth pulled severely tight. After a long time his heart finally settled down a little bit.

Relying on the Immortal Sky medicine pill strength and his own personal physique was enough.

After resting a moment, he struggled to crawl up, and he staggered along to a far away place.

He didn't dare stop there. In his mind was only one thought: Go far away from this dreadful place, go far away from that terrifying person!

He sought nothing else apart from this.

Yellow Flame City.

Fan Household.

In old General Fan Wudi's room.

The old man finally recovered his senses, and in the first moment he dashed to salute the Demon Lord: "Although words cannot thank such a large favor, but this old man must thank my benefactor several times over for saving my life!"

The Demon Lord duly looked at Fan Wudi: "I didn't do it for you, you should thank.....thank your own grandson."

"Grandpa!" a sound cried out from the roof.

Soon a crashing sound followed. Chu Mo jumped down from the roof and rushed into his grandfather's room. He immediately knelt on the ground before Fan Wudi. Tears flowed down his face: "Grandpa, I'm sorry. Your grandson is unfilial and gave you trouble. I nearly hurt you.....sorry, it is your grandson's fault!"

Dumbfounded, Fan Wudi stared at Chu Mo suddenly appearing before him.

But the sight of his grandson in perfect health didn't surprise him. He immediately walked forward and pulled Chu Mo up. His eyes red he said: "Good child, where do you have fault? It is grandpa's fault. I shouldn't have saved that animal!"

“One day, this child will personally remove his dog head.” Chu Mo said.

“Clever child, quick come speak with grandpa. All this, how did it happen?” The old man pulled on Chu Mo’s hand, not wanting to let go. He carefully looked Chu Mo over, seeing the child had no wounds and hadn’t lost weight.

Chu Mo didn’t immediately answer the old man. He turned his head to the Demon Lord and slightly smiled: “Thank you!”

This voice of thanks unexpectedly made the Demon Lord feel flattered, because this is the first time the brat expressed thanks to him.

But immediately, the Demon Lord felt cheap. Unexpectedly this little brat could move him with one word of thanks.

With a taut face, he emotionlessly said: “I promised you.”

Fan Wudi’s vision swept back and forth across the Demon Lord and his grandson. He couldn’t understand the relationship between Chu Mo and this black-robed terror.

But the old man clearly knew, this young man in black is extraordinarily strong.

Such a large activity occurred here tonight. This person even sent ungrateful animal Zhao Hongzhi flying out the window with a

kick.

None of it was enough to draw a reaction from the battle hardened guards.

This clearly illustrates the man in black's power. He already completely exceeds the old man's comprehension.

This type of cultivator, if the grandson can become his disciple.....

The old man has a rough streak. For a normal person to suddenly turn the corner from danger to safety, it would take them a moment to settle down. But he already started to plan for his grandson's future.

At this time, The words of Chu Mo were just short of making the old man become frantic.

“Don't worry, I promised respect you as my master. I absolutely do as I say!”

The Demon Lord's mouth twitched and he found a chair to sit in. He impatiently said: “If you have words to say with your grandfather save them, just make it quick. Once you are done speaking we are going!”

Fan Wudi wanted to say something, but he listened to Chu Mo's words: “Grandfather there is no need to worry, we can speak

slowly!”

One urged to speak faster, yet one wanted to slowly speak.

The old man’s mouth twitched, unable to speak.

Because he discovered, his own grandson towards this terrifying man in black.....isn’t very polite!”

But no matter how he looked, his grandson didn’t seem to suffer a loss.

This made the old man even more curious.

Chu Mo told his grandfather the general outline about encountering the Demon Lord on the ice field.

But he left out the Demon Lord torturing him part. He didn’t want to let his grandfather worry.

He spoke about how the Demon Lord is an expert outside the world, wanting to accept him as a disciple, but he still wanted to enter the Immortal Sky.

The old man sighed, looked at the Demon Lord, and his expression filled with appreciation, then he turned to teach Chu Mo a lesson: “You child, a strong cultivator like this wants to take you as a disciple, and you still refuse.....”

Chu Mo scratched his head and said: “Your grandson’s thoughts at that time, it was only to enter the Immortal Sky, who could have thought.....ah!”

Chu Mo continued, and he told his encounter at the Immortal Sky in fine detail.

He also didn’t put out the information on the Demon Lord sealing his ability and meridians.

The old man enraged, slapped the table, and stood up shouting: “Zhao Hongzhi that animal! Simply unbelievably shameless!”

Chu Mo looked at his grandfather and said: “You ought to know, he is an animal.”

“That’s enraging!”

“I never thought, my actions could almost harm my grandson!”

“What upright sect.....what number one under the sky?”

“Simply too filthy!”

The old man’s chest violently heaved up and down, and he coldly said: “You should know, that Zhao Hongzhi. Do you know why he fears me?”

Chu Mo was very curious about this matter.

Ordinarily for a talent like Zhao Hongzhi to develop in twenty to thirty years, he boundary cannot be too bad.”

How could a grand Immortal Sky disciple be saved by your grandfather?

The Demon Lord also looked at Fan Wudi on the side, but he didn't say anything.

“The matter is like this. I don't have to conceal anything for him!”

The old man sighed: “This matter, speaking, it has been already fifteen or sixteen years since that time. I still hadn't adopted you.”

“At that time I was only a Deputy General. I lead a team of scouts to investigate the enemy.”

“I never thought I would witness a terrifying battle inside a deep mountain forest!”

“Precisely speaking, it was a perfect slaughter!”

The old man's eyes showed a touch of fear.

“That was the most terrifying attack I’ve ever seen. Do you know what it was?”

Chu Mo said: “Grandpa don’t make me guess, quickly speak!”

The old man laughed and said: “It was the Wind Dragon!”

“What?” Chu Mo’s body rose up. His eyes revealed a shocking disbelieving expression: “Wind Dragon? Isn’t this impossible? Although the Wind Dragon is mighty without a match, but it is very intelligent. It is one of the Mythical Beasts that protectors men. How could it attack people?”

The Demon Lord curled his lips: “You can try and take the egg of a Wind Dragon, would it attack you?”

The old man looked at the Demon Lord a little startled, and then he praised: “You are truly amazing! You guessed the reason in such a short time!”

Chu Mo’s mouth twitched and he said: “Not possible? Zhao Hongzhi.....he has the courage to steal a Wind Dragon egg? That is a rank 9 Yuan beast!”

“Furthermore, he is an Immortal Sky disciple, doing this, don’t tell me is is afraid of drawing the wrath of the Immortal Sky?”

Chu Mo spoke, then he recovered and murmured: “I finally understand why he wants to kill you, so it is like this!”

“The scandal was seen by you at that time, and you rescued him.....”

The old man bitterly laughed and nodded, then sighed.

Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord, his eyes full of admiration.

Although the Demon Lord didn't guess what the specific origin was before, but he could analyze a rough estimate.

And now with some facts he could guess so astonishingly well!

The Demon Lord didn't show any expression of being pleased with himself. He just sat there without any emotion.

Chu Mo said: “Then, you rescued him, helped him recover from his wounds, and promised you wouldn't tell his secret, right?”

The old man nodded and sighed: “I shouldn't have saved him!”

“I completely understand!” Chu Mo said: “No wonder Zhao Hongzhi wanted to kill me as soon as he saw me. He was afraid of that secret being revealed!”

“After feeling me out to see if I knew, he forced me to go, and he thought I would certainly die from the Blood Stopping Palm.”

“But he still thought, by refusing me, grandfather would certainly become angered. And he would reveal the scandal!”

“Therefore, he wanted to murder grandfather at the first chance!”

The old man sighed: “I didn’t tell you this thing. I didn’t want to make you think I kept silent for favors.”

“But in the end, I did wrong!”

“When he went to steal the Wind Dragon egg, that is enough to show this person’s character has a huge problem.”

“I superstitiously believed in the gold standard of the Immortal Sky!”

Chu Mo agreed saying: “On the back of the gold standard, it actually has several dirty things!”

The old man looked at Chu Mo, nodded, then said: “Fortunately you encountered this.....cough cough.....friend.”

The old man didn’t know how to address the black robed man.

Only because the Demon Lord looked too young.

The sharply angled face scarcely left any traces of age. But the pair of eyes, had yet seen great changes, obviously, his age isn't as young as his face.

The Demon Lord duly said: "Call me Demon Lord."

"Demon Lord?" The old man's eyebrows slightly raised, secretly tasting the meaning of these two words in his heart.

He thought again about his grandson's attitude towards him, and the old man secretly seemed to have a little bit of understanding.

But this old man is hardened. He had seen all kinds of things in his life. Including what had just happened, and he had already thoroughly lost hope in the Immortal Sky.

He let out a hearty laugh: "Friend with a demon name, yet the behaviour is chivalrous! It is a lifetime of blessings for my grandson to encounter a good master like you!"

He said to Chu Mo: "Foolish child, you still haven't kowtowed to your master!"

Chu Mo was slightly startled, the old man is selling him out..... you don't know this Demon's terror.

But in the end it is something he promised. He kneeled before the Demon Lord and said: “Disciple Chu Mo appears before master!”

The Demon Lord nodded, then he faced the old man and said: “Say goodbye!”

While speaking, he pulled on Chu Mo’s arm. His image flashed, and he momentarily disappeared!

The old man remained standing there for a long time stupefied. Finally his mouth twitched, and he muttered: “No wonder he is called Demon Lord.....he is truly an evil character!”

At this time, the old man suddenly thought of something. He chased outside, but the outside was void of anything.

The guards at the door heard the movement at this time and immediately ran over: “General.....why did you come out?”

The old man rolled his eyes and pointed at the window: “The window is broken!”

Chapter 10: Total Absence Of Justice

Chu Mo once again flew through the upper sky without enough time to say goodbye to his grandfather.

But his mind was very clear. Zhao Hongzhi wouldn't dare cause trouble for his grandfather after being intimidated by the Demon Lord.

Even if his grandfather went to war, Zhao Hongzhi needed to send disciples to secretly protect him.

Because the Demon Lord said, even if Chu Mo's grandfather died on the battlefield, it would count as Zhao Hongzhi's head.

Chu Mo couldn't help but admire the Demon Lord's methods. They were truly clever.

It seems that the phrase 'evil people reap even greater evil than they sow' is completely true.

The Demon Lord carried Chu Mo along the flight. They faced the setting sun in the west, and flew three days in a row.

When they started, Chu Mo could roughly guess their location and bearings, but after a day, he was completely dazed.

He had no idea where they were.

At last, the Demon Lord stopped at the base of a vast mountain range.

Soon after, the two had stopped above a lush mountain.

Chu Mo saw while he was in the air that the mountain's circumference was tens of thousands of miles!

Mountains continuously moved up and down as far as the eye could see. They couldn't see the end even though they were high up in the sky.

He had never even heard before that the world has this set of mountains.

Furthermore they were located within the heart of the mountains.

After the Demon Lord set down Chu Mo, he pulled out a saw, an axe, a hammer, and other carpentry tools from an unknown location. He also pulled out some flint and some household goods like rice.

He casually threw it at Chu Mo: "Go, build yourself a log cabin."

"Master, where did you get this things from?" Chu Mo curiously looked at the Demon Lord.

“Why so many questions?” the Demon Lord coldly retorted, then, his image flashed, and he unexpectedly faded away.

“Master where did you go?” Chu Mo couldn’t help but feel somewhat flustered seeing the Demon Lord leave.

Deep within the dense mountain forest, only heaven knows what ferocious mountain beasts are inside.

It should be noted that by growing up within the military he was quite capable.

But he didn’t have the slightest bit of experience with building a log cabin.

“Master.....master.....how do I build a log cabin?”

Chu Mo threw out his voice by loudly yelling.

The sound transferred very far away, and it echoed through the mountain range.

The Demon Lord’s voice transferred over from some unknown place far away: “Do whatever you want. Just live!”

“I.....” Chu Mo truly was at a loss for words this time.

I have to cast my lot with this kind of master, but what is the alternative?

Looking at the common carpentry tools, Chu Mo's mouth sharply twitched, and he couldn't help but mutter: "Where did he get all this? Don't tell me master used to be a carpenter?"

There were towering trees everywhere on the lush mountain.

Chu Mo almost had enough materials without moving a step.

Then, thanks to the expert teacher of Chu Mo, he clumsily started his carpentry career.

The first day, several types of trees were cleared down.

But he was completely clueless on what to do next.

He used a large portion of the second day to clumsily set up a triangular shack. It was blown down due to a large rain and wind.

Luckily Chu Mo found a mountain cave right before the rainstorm, otherwise his rice and other food would have been soaked.

Chu Mo sat inside the dark cave, blankly looking at the hideous mess of a shack. With a dejected look, he unconsciously fell asleep.

He wasn't in the mood at all to eat dinner.

The third day, early in the morning, and sunny, the mountain dew dispersed, and the mountain air was extremely fresh.

Chu Mo crawled out of the mountain cave in a daze, yet he discovered an extremely beautiful log cabin before him.

Although it wasn't big, several people could live inside of it.

Chu Mo rubbed his eyes, not daring to believe what he saw.

Then, he saw the Demon Lord sitting at the entryway holding an enormous beast he had never seen before.

"Mas.....master, did you build this?" Chu Mo asked in disbelief.

"Humph, are you just as stupid as other people? You built such a crappy log cabin!" The Demon Lord coldly replied, then asked: "Can you cook?"

"Chu Mo nodded: "Yes!"

"Hungry?" The Demon Lord swept his eyes across Chu Mo: "I hate liars!"

“I’m didn’t lie!” Chu Mo angrily said: “I grew up in the military. Grandpa placed let me work the kitchens before each battle so I learned to cook at an early age!”

“Moreover, my cooking skill is quite strong!”

“Ah.” The Demon Lord plainly responded: “Go cook this meat.”

“Furthermore, I’m going to teach you a chant. After making the food you must recite it from memory. I will test you.”

Finished speaking, the Demon Lord recited a chant.

The chant was shaky and hard to pronounce. Although it had three hundred words, there were several that Chu Mo had never even heard before.

He didn’t know how the write them, and he completely didn’t know their meaning.

But the Demon Lord abruptly shut his mouth and turned into the log cabin after he finished speaking.

“This room is mine. You cannot enter without my permission. The kitchen is over there.”

The Demon Lord spoke, and then the door rattled and closed shut.

Leaving Chu Mo behind, facing an enormous beast corpse, looking silly.

Cooking food.....this naturally isn't a problem.

But that chant.....he couldn't even remember thirty words!

And master unexpectedly said there would be a test after cooking food.....

He cannot be so excessive!

Chu Mo rushed to the Demon Lord's room and asked: "Master.....could you say one more time? So many words, I don't know what they mean, and I can't write them!!"

The Demon Lord's house was extremely quiet without a single sound.

There wasn't any sound no matter how Chu Mo yelled.

Chu Mo angered. He simply walked straight forward thinking to push the door open and enter.

But he felt an invisible wall right as he approached the door that shot him backwards.

Chu Mo looked like a complete fool feeling the defense. He just yelled for a long time, yet the Demon Lord probably didn't hear anything.

Or he just didn't feel like listening!

Chu Mo stayed a long time, then finally muttered: "Humph, don't speak, I'll slowly recall myself! I still don't trust!"

Then, Chu Mo made food while continually trying to remember the Demon Lord's chant.

Able to be favored by the Demon Lord at a glance, Chu Mo's natural ability doesn't need to be said. His spiritual nature is also sufficient.

He deftly handled the meat, and after washing he started the pot.

He couldn't help but admire the Demon Lord's ability. He created a perfect log cabin overnight.

There was every type of seasoning one could imagine inside the kitchen.

Chu Mu very curiously wondered where his master got all of these things. Don't tell me he has a storage ring like the legends?

“Could this world really have that type of thing? ” Chu Mo really wanted to ask his master, but he reckoned it was a waste of a question. The Demon Lord certainly wouldn’t answer him.

Quickly, the fragrance started floating out, filling the whole cabin.

Just when the food finished cooking, the Demon Lord’s door slammed open, revealing the Demon Lord’s pale expressionless face.

“Really punctual!” Chu Mo praised in his head.

But the following words of the Demon Lord cracked all of Chu Mo’s good feelings.

“The chant? Can you recite it?”

“I.....” Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord’s cold face, silently cursing in his heart: simply not the least be human.

“I only remember the greater half.....”

Chu Mo spoke, and then started to recite.

His memory is very formidable, although he stumbled in a few places, but he successfully recited the greater half.

This ability, if placed in the secular world, then he would be counted as a genius in even the elite institutes.

Because the Demon Lord only said it one time from beginning to end, and there were several hard to pronounce and difficult to understand words.

Chu Mo basically didn't understand!

Under these kinds of conditions, reciting the greater half, even the most strict teachers would want to praise him.

Chu Mo was also a little confident.

But.....

The Demon Lord.

Eternally cannot praise.

Crash!

Chu Mu felt a searing pain on his bottom, then his body unconsciously began to fly.

He smoothly flew through the open window.

He landed on the edge of a mountain spring hundreds of meters away, ruthlessly crashing to the ground.

His butt was almost broken into eight pieces!

The land along the mountain spring was all a soft clay. If it were stone, he would have fallen to his death.

Soon after, two huge barrels flew over and landed next to Chu Mo.

The Demon Lord's voice sounded in Chu Mo's ears: "Stupid pig, still proud of yourself? Today's training is the easiest. I will say it one more time. If you don't remember, bitter days are before you!"

"Too excessive!" Chu Mo massaged his bottom, and he stood up angrily saying: "You are fundamentally a tormentor! What part of you is a master?"

But the Demon Lord didn't pay any attention, and the chant once again started.

Chu Mo had a mind to keep complaining, but hearing the chant, he immediately shut up.

Because he had experienced the Demon Lord's methods.....he knew that is one cold-blooded dude.

Before he would die rather than lower his head, but now.....he is already thoroughly in his hands.

The Demon Lord quickly finished the chant.

“Before supper, if you cannot completely recite, you will be beaten. And you won’t eat!

“But you must cook!”

“First fill up the two barrels with water!”

Chu Mo rolled his eyes so hard he nearly fainted.

Feeling there is no way to make it through this day, it is a total absence of justice!

He carried the two barrels of water back to the cabin. He looked around the kitchen, but something smelled funny.

There wasn’t any food that he had made remaining!

Chu Mo’s stubbornness rose, thinking: Don’t give me food to eat? I just won’t eat!

He sat there and started to recite the chant from memory.

Quickly, the sun was in the west, and supper time had arrived.

The Demon Lord once again came out of his room. His face was stiff as a board like before: “Recite for me!”

Chu Mo didn’t look at him and started to recite.

There is no need to say, Going through the provocation of the Demon Lord caused Chu Mo’s memory to unconsciously increase a large amount.

Even Chu Mo felt this.

Three hundred words, this time, only three were wrong!

Truly already about the same as good!

But.....

“Do you yourself know how stupid you are?” The Demon Lord coldly snorted, hauled him outside, and gave him another beating.

After the beating finished, apart from the face, Chu Mo’s whole body was practically broken.

“Crawl up and make me food!”

The Demon Lord spat out these words, then turned and went back into his room.

Chu Mo lay on the ground, not wanting to move a muscle, and he muttered through his teeth: “The most strict teacher in the world isn’t even like you.....ouch, you are my master, [hiss](#).....he really hurt me!”

[TL: The hiss is more of a sucking in through one’s teeth in pain noise.]

That type of pain directly penetrates the soul, but there were actually no deadly injuries!

Even on the outside it couldn’t be seen.

But the miraculous thing is, in a moment, the pain suddenly disappeared.

Only that feeling, Chu Mo didn’t wish to recall.

Too terrifying!

Chu Mo still couldn’t eat food that night. After he made food for the Demon Lord he rushed right back into his room.

At the same time, he threw him a thick book and a piece of dry flat bread. It is unknown where it came from, quite mysterious.

“This is a dictionary!”

“Memorize!”

“Later on don’t make excuses for words you don’t know!”

Chapter 11: Passing On The Teaching

Crash!

The door slammed shut.

The glowing pearl inlaid on the walls made the room shine extremely bright.

He looked at the thick ancient book in front of him, and that dry piece of flat bread.

Not knowing why, Chu Mo's nose suddenly felt a little sobby.

He really couldn't be mad at this master.

It appeared the cold-hearted actions and deeds had been sealed a little.

But from acquaintances until now, he carefully thought. The Demon Lord has already helped him too much.

Taking him from the ice field to the Immortal Sky saved him over a year's time, and don't even mention the countless unknown dangers.

At the Immortal Sky he received the Blood Stopping Palm of Fan Lizi, and the Demon Lord silently saved him.

If it wasn't for Zhao Hongzhi revealing this matter to his grandfather all pleased with himself.

Chu Mo was afraid he wouldn't have known in his whole lifetime.

The Demon Lord certainly wouldn't have taken the initiative to speak about this matter because of his nature.

Then after arriving at Yellow Flame City he saved Chu Mo's grandfather. He gave Zhao Hongzhi a beating and scared him half to death. Zhao wouldn't dare come find trouble for grandpa again.

It would appear that this seems he threatens the Demon Lord's success, but is it truly this way in reality?

Although Chu Mo is a youth, but he is actually very intelligent.

And where could it not be seen. The Demon Lord looks cold hearted and overbearingly tyrannical, but deep down he is truly not a ruthless person.

Just like today, he was beaten twice, and the taste of it was truly painful.

Thinking back he felt unbearable pain.

But it wasn't that painful afterwards, and he didn't know how the Demon Lord did it.

The Demon Lord's nature, although it doesn't attract love, but it is hard to hate him.

Chu Mo lifted up the thick ancient book, and he started to seriously study.

Day after day passed like this.

The Demon Lord threw out a chant, with more kinds as well as more and more difficult ones.

Therefore, even though Chu Mo quickly learned all of the words in the thick book, he still took a beating every day.

The stronger Chu Mo's memory became, the more and more severe the Demon Lord's requirements became. They were even a little strange.

The musical scale is a little wrong.....another beating!

Over time, Chu Mo got used to being beaten. In the beginning he could curse two times, then lie on the ground waiting to die.

But later on, if he didn't get beaten for two days in a row, he started to feel something was missing.

He started to feel like cheap leather.

His body became increasingly strong. Although his Yuan Qi seemed to not have any progress, [the Essence, Energy, and Spirit](#) seemed to be like a completely different person when compared to the past.

[TL: 精氣神 Are three Chinese terms used in Daoism. I've translated them as "Essence, Energy, and Spirit." If you would like to read more about it go [here](#).]

Chu Mo was even a little suspicious. Could his current state be due to taking beatings?

He guessed this, but he didn't dare ask in fear of the Demon Lord's beatings becoming even more violent.

The Demon Lord still has a harsh appearance, a face strangers wouldn't go near, and acquaintances.....also gives an expression of don't come near me.

He would go out hunting every couple of days and bring back a ferocious beast that Chu Mo had never seen before.

Chu Mo was even a little suspicious. These ferocious Beasts, are they the legendary Yuan beasts?

Because their skin was especially hard. Using his level two peak Yuan Qi and a sharp knife, it was still difficult to cut open several

of them!

At the same time, Chu Mo also discovered a strange phenomenon. There wasn't any blood in the bodies of the fierce beasts the Demon Lord brought back.

At last one day, Chu Mo couldn't help but ask.

“Master, you hunt and bring back these ferocious beasts, how could they all be blood drained?”

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo, contrarily to coldly saying like he did in the past: What does it have to do with you?

He actually was silent a moment, then plainly said: “Master..... won't live long.”

“I wanted to find a talented.....plausible person to pass on my legacy.”

“I cannot allow the legacy of this sect discontinue in my hands.”

“My body is severely poisoned. In this world.....there is no medicine that can cure my poison.”

“But the blood of high level Yuan beasts can temporarily suppress it.”

“It lets me slowly die. I have enough time to pass on some things to you.”

The Demon Lord spoke these things with an extremely tranquil face. Not even a trace of sadness showed from his face.

Chu Mo felt incomparable pain in his heart.

Although he always suspected the master's health wasn't too sturdy.

For instance his face is too white, different than ordinary people.

For instance the Demon Lord unreasonably took him away from Yellow Flame City without even giving him an opportunity to say goodbye to grandfather.

For instance his strict severe requirements approaching abnormality to Chu Mo. Every day making him recite from memory a large amount of unknown chants.

But yet he never thought the truth is like this!

No wonder he is so anxious, not giving him a chance to say goodbye to grandfather. It is because of the poison in his body. It is already uncontrollable, and he must find Yuan beast blood to suppress it.

But even like this, he still helped scare off Zhao Hongzhi.....

Chu Mo suddenly felt he was extremely naive, feeling he had an extremely deep misunderstanding towards his master.

His master could serenely and calmly face death, but he cannot!

Because he unknowingly already placed master as his closest person.

“Master.....sorry!” Chu Mo’s voice choked.

“I always felt.....”

The Demon Lord stared and coldly said: “Recite!”

“The chant I asked you thirteen days ago. What is the third word in the second paragraph?”

“Ah?” Chu Mo was immediately shocked, with a dumbstruck expression.

Without waiting for him to carefully recollect, the Demon Lord sent a kick flying, giving another fat beating.

Then he floated away without a trace.

“Ouch.....must not provoke, hisss.....My butt, it’s all split up!”

“Pains me to death!”

“Truly.....no human emotions, no humanity, a face uglier than a log cabin.....hiss”

This time the Demon Lord was gone a full eight days!

This time he returned, his face was tired, and he was empty handed.

Chu Mo, who had gotten used to master carrying back a Yuan beast every time, stared blankly for a long time. Finally he couldn’t help but ask: “Master.....the prey? Is it in your storage ring?”

The Demon Lord’s mouth slightly twitched, and the dully said: “What storage ring? The Yuan beasts within thousands of miles have all been killed by me. The remaining worth considering have all fled.”

“A circumference of several thousand miles?” Chu Mo asked startled: “It seems you only hunted a couple dozen nothing more?”

“Do you think Yuan beasts are hogs? They can be found everywhere?” The Demon Lord swept his eyes at Chu Mo: “Having two Yuan beasts within a hundred miles is considered a lot!”

“Then.....you said, Master you.....without Yuan beast blood, suppressing the severe poison?” Chu Mo carefully asked.

The Demon Lord calmly nodded: “The so-called suppression is only momentary. There is no way to completely cure. Anyways you quickly graduated.”

“Gra.....graduated?” Chu Mo was shocked: “Master what have I learned? I can’t do anything!”

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “Come over here!”

“You don’t want to beat me again?” Chu Mo was on guard.

“Speak trash again, and I’ll break you!” The Demon Lord had a tiger face.

Chu Mo dilly-dallied over to the Demon Lord.

He was just about to speak, but the Demon Lord suddenly pointed a finger directly at his forehead.

Boom!

An overwhelming force directly surged into Chu Mo’s mind.

Chu Mo fainted on the spot.

.....

Chu Mo had a very long dream. He saw himself study countless first-rate practices, then he became unequal under heaven.

Roaming far and wide regarding the four corners of the world as home, being noble everywhere.

Hitting every small shameless person inside the Immortal Sky until they piss their pants in terror.

Just when he was pleased with himself, he saw the pale face of the Demon Lord appearing right in front of him.

“Master!” Chu Mo affectionately yelled, welcoming him.

But the Demon Lord’s body burst open in front of Chu Mo, tearing apart!

“Ah!”

“No!”

Chu Mo grieved like mad. He let out an earth-shattering roar. His

whole person was like a mad demon.

At this time, he woke.

Chu Mo's face was full of tears. He saw the exhausted face of the Demon Lord strangely looking at him.

“Master.....”

“You are still alive, so good, so good, extremely good!”

“Master tell me. Your poison, what kind of medicine do you need to cure it? Your disciple will bear heaven and hell to give it to you!”

“Even if the medicine is in the herb garden of the Immortal Sky, your disciple will remove the Immortal Sky and rush back to you!”

Chu Mo said with his face streaming in tears.

“Childish!”

The Demon Lord stared at Chu Mo, then turned, returning to his room.

Chu Mo didn't know if it was a delusion, but master seemed to be extremely weak. Even his footsteps seemed unsteady!

Before now this was simply an impossible thing.

Chu Mo sat down and wiped the tears on his face. He settled down in a moment and made his feelings recover tranquility.

But he secretly swore in his heart: Master, perhaps you feel your disciple doesn't have that ability. Yes, I am currently weak.

But no matter how much I have to pay, I only have to find a medicine to cure you. Your disciple will certainly pay any cost. I will obtain it!

Even if.....the whole world becomes an enemy!

At this time, all of a sudden Chu Mo felt countless things within his mind.

These things appeared out of thin air within his head, but it didn't feel the least bit sudden or abrupt.

Several things would emerge with just a thought.

Incomparably clear!

Incomparably deep!

But the startling thing is, the unexpected large majority of things

in his brain.....they are the various chants he had already learned by heart!

“This.....this.....what is this?” Chu Mo mumbled.

“This is all I have learned! Our master sect teachings have been completely passed down!” It is unknown at what time the Demon Lord came out of his room.

Looking at Chu Mo he plainly said: “In fact, from the beginning, I could have used this method to make you remember everything.”

“.....” Chu Mo stared with big eyes at the Demon Lord.

Although master looked extremely weak at this time, causing him to feel bad, but hearing these words still made Chu Mo have a bone tickling feeling.

“Breaking my emotions.....it was all meaningless. From the beginning you could have not beaten me right?”

The Demon Lord calmly nodded: “Quite right.”

“I.....” Chu Mo tied up his anger. Thinking of the beatings he suffered, even now he still had lingering fear.

This insane master unexpectedly told him in the end. Those beatings, they are actually not necessary!

“Like this you will remember them more firmly, and be fairly solid.” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo with a logical expression and said: “Go make food. I hunger!”

Chu Mo wanted to say something, but he discovered the master’s body suddenly start to sway. He used a hand to hold onto the door frame, but he didn’t fall down.

“Master!” Chu Mo immediately cried out in alarm and rushed over.

The Demon Lord stared, and a terrifying breath exploded out from his body: “Stop!”

“I don’t need your pity!”

“You are only a person I found to pass on my legacy!”

“Do not pity me!”

“Inside my room.....there is a teaching named..... ‘Heaven’s Will My Will.’ If you practice that teaching, the clear things in your head.....those chants, they can be done!”

The Demon Lord spoke with great effort. He had to gasp for a long time with each sentence.

But his imposing manner was yet matchless without compare!

“I.....already have no regrets, going back.....bury me here.....”

“Dust returns to dust, earth returns to earth, nothing more.....
nothing more!”

The Demon Lord spoke and the breath exploded out from his body, then he began to sway.

The hand holding the door frame loosened, a rattling noise, falling to the floor.

“Master!”

Chapter 12: Heaven's Will

Chu Mo let out a bitter lament. This was completely unexpected.....he even hoped master would stand back up and give him a severe beating!

He rushed over.

Chu Mo felt for master's breath, and he discovered master was slightly breathing. His heart immediately relaxed.

But what should he do now. He was completely out of ideas.

“Master said, he needs to drink Yuan beast blood to temporarily suppress his poison.”

“But right now it is hard to go out and hunt down a Yuan beast.....in addition Master just used his finger to channel all of those things into my brain. He must have consumed a lot of energy!”

“It is all my fault, all my fault. If he didn't care about me having an accident here by myself, master could have gone out much further. He could have found a Yuan beast.”

“Right now I don't have the strength to hunt those types of strong Yuan beasts. Even if I had the ability, the distant water cannot cure the present thirst.”

“What do I do? What do I do?”

In the end, this thirteen year old youth revealed a weak helpless expression. He saw master had already entered into a deep coma, and tears flowed endlessly.

“Blood.....”

“Yuan beast blood.....”

“Blood.....”

Chu Mo became somewhat neurotic. He knelt at the Demon Lord’s side mumbling words.

Suddenly, his eyes lit up.

“I don’t have Yuan beast blood, but I have my own blood!”

“But I don’t know how useful.....”

“And how much is needed?”

“How do I know without testing?”

Chu Mo muttered to himself. He grabbed a sharp knife, a slash across his wrist, slight pain, then a bloody cut appeared on his

wrist.

Fresh red blood gurgled out.

A slightly cold mountain wind blew across Chu Mo's body, it made him shiver a little bit.

Seeing fresh blood flow out of one's own body would certainly make them feel afraid.

But Chu Mo his pure eyes only filled with determination.

He aimed his wrist as his master's mouth. Chu Mo muttered: "Must be useful, certainly must useful! May the heavens bless you!"

Although the Demon Lord was already in a coma, but when the blood flowed into his mouth, he unconsciously made a swallowing action.

At the same time, the Demon Lord's facial expressions unexpectedly began to slowly relax.

"It is really working!"

Chu Mo almost squealed in excitement.

Chu Mo's wrist grew a little numb with pain. It was a little dish compared to Chu Mo's frequent beatings. He practically didn't feel anything.

The blood continuously flowed into the Demon Lord's mouth. Chu Mo became somewhat dazed, and he suddenly remembered something.

“Master he.....”

“In the end.....how much blood does he need?”

“It seems every time.....those big Yuan beasts, almost all of their blood was sucked dry.....then should I.....also use almost all of my blood?”

“Master saved me, saved my grandfather.....”

“I will give this life to master, it is what I ought to do!”

“I hope he awakens, and doesn't beat me.....”

“But if he beats me, would I even know?”

Bam!

Chu Mo couldn't hold out any longer, slamming into the Demon

Lord. The blood flowing wrist unconsciously withdrew, and grabbed the piece of jade at his chest.

That is his the deepest, the most intense memory in his heart.

That piece of jade represents his mother.

Blood continued to flow from his wrist, and it quickly soaked Chu Mo's clothes, catching onto the piece of jade.

Unknowingly, that piece of jade turned red.

Soon following, a strange event suddenly occurred!

The blood, unexpectedly bit by bit, completely seeped into the piece of jade!

The originally pale warm piece of jade, it momentarily changed blood red!

A soft light emitted from the piece of jade, swept across Chu Mo's wrist, and immediately clotted the blood.

Shortly after, the blood color on the jade gradually waned. Quickly it returned to normal, like nothing had ever happened.

Not a single person saw anything!

After a long time, the Demon Lord stretched open his two eyes. That expressionless face revealed a trace of a self-ridiculing smile.

“In the end I couldn’t defeat that bastard Seven Demon Poison.”

“Death in the end?”

“Hey, that’s fine.....”

“Death, it is also a type of freedom!”

“[Butterfly](#), will I soon be able to see you?”

[TL: I chose to translate the name as its literal meaning, Butterfly. This is because the name is ‘Die’ which would be too confusing for English readers.]

Demon Lord spoke, that Chu Mo it seems, he is yet in that cabin and adorably stubborn. Unexpectedly a trace of a soft smile appeared.

Soon after, the Demon Lord’s vision dropped to his own chest. There.....a person is laying there.

It is Chu Mo.

At first he was startled, then right after the Demon Lord became

furious, and he sat right up. He snatched Chu Mo's wrist. There's a bloody cut, there's blood on the ground.

As well as.....

He finally reacted.....blood taste in his mouth.

How could the Demon Lord not know what happened?

“Bastard!”

“Idiot!”

“Simply a bastard!”

“Extreme bastard!”

“This little son of a bitch infuriates me!”

At this time, Chu Mo slowly woke up. He saw the Demon Lord sitting there cursing.

Chu Mo's face looked weak, yet he revealed a smile. He started to say: “Master.....”

The Demon Lord's cursing halted.

Then, he somewhat awkwardly looked at Chu Mo

“Master, you are alive.....truly good!” Chu Mo was happy.

“Good my ass!”

The Demon Lord stood up and kicked Chu Mo to the side, then a round of beatings rattled off.

Scolding and beating at the same time.

“Does this master need your sympathy?”

“Does this master need your pity?”

“Does this master need you to come rescue him?”

“You idiot! Are you a pig?”

“Pigs are all smarter than you!”

“This master wants to pass on his legacy, not a blood jar!”

“How much blood to you have?”

“Are you an idiot?”

“Are you special if you die? Where am I going to find another disciple?”

“What face will I have when I go see my ancestors?”

“You idiot!”

“Bastard!”

Scolding and scolding, the Demon Lord could somewhat scold and punish no more.

Because Chu Mo is smiling!

Chu Mo’s mouth is smiling. Master scolded him more fiercely, yet Chu Mo smiled even happier.

Ever since following the Demon Lord, enduring beatings and scoldings had become a daily thing. It was all somewhat normal.

But every time he endured scoldings and beatings, in the end he wasn’t happy.

But this time, it was the first time Chu Mo felt happy in his heart because of the beatings and scoldings.

The Demon Lord was in a coma. Chu Mo felt like his world was collapsing!

He was an orphan ever since he was young. He didn't know his parents.

The Demon Lord is the second person Chu Mo felt close to. Chu Mo felt he could rely on him.

The first was Fan Wudi!

His grandfather.

The Demon Lord is different than Fan Wudi. He is cold-hearted, mighty, and overbearing, but almost omnipotent like a god.

In the secular world, the large majority of people will never see a cultivator that can fly before they die.

But Chu Mo, he not only saw one. He became the disciple of one.

What kind of good fortune is this?

Although he never verbally admitted this, but in Chu Mo's heart, how could he not know?

The Demon Lord was actually really good to Chu Mo apart from the daily beatings and scoldings!

Chu Mo didn't know the efficiency of the Yuan beast meat after one or two days time, but this much time passed. He also didn't know how much the Yuan beast meat could increase his strength.

Getting spanked every day, is that not a form of training? It made his meridians and physique increase to the next level!

Chu Mo could present many examples to testify for his master. His expression is ice-cold, but in the Demon Lord's core, he deeply cares about Chu Mo!

Only the Demon Lord's methods are completely different than everyone else in the world.

He doesn't need other people's approval, and he doesn't need other's appreciation. He doesn't even need other people to know he exists!

Even if this person is his own disciple!

Just like the others he doesn't need it!

This is an extremely arrogant person!

No one knows, when the Demon Lord fell down, Chu Mo's heart

hesitated.

And no one knows, upon seeing the Demon Lord recovered to normal, Chu Mo became very happy in his heart.

“Master, why aren’t you hitting me anymore?” Chu Mo stared with his big eyes looking at the Demon Lord, and slightly laughing.

“Move to the side!” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “Trash!”

He turned and left.

Chu Mo was left behind giggling.

This time the Demon Lord left for four days.

As Chu Mo was somewhat worried, the Demon Lord came back carrying a huge python.

Chu Mo was still startled by the enormous python although it was already dead.

The python’s body was as thick as a strong adult man’s leg, over a hundred meters long, and its head had a vermilion colored horn!

“This, this isn’t a python, this is.....scaly dragon?” Chu Mo asked startled.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “You’re still not a complete idiot!”

Chu Mo had already gotten used to the Demon Lord’s attacks, and he automatically filtered the words he didn’t want to hear.

“Heavens, I unexpectedly get to see this type of thing. This is a rank seven Yuan beast?”

“You can kill rank seven Yuan beasts.....too severe!”

Chu Mo held a look of admiration.

The Demon Lord sneered at Chu Mo and thought: This inexperienced thing is really my disciple?

He coldly laughed: “Is killing it difficult?”

“That is, that is, for master, naturally it isn’t difficult. Master is most awesome!” Chu Mo didn’t know how much to sincerely brown nose.

The danger of praising the Demon Lord is extremely high. If he praised too much, nine times out of ten he would get a beating.

“I will clean it!” Chu Mo volunteered. Actually he was very curious about this thing.

The Demon Lord gave Chu Mo a glance: “You? With your current strength, you couldn’t even scrape off a scale. Wait over there.”

“Carefully watch me!”

Chu Mo didn’t obey. He sneered and ran forward.

The Demon Lord ignored him. He focused on cleaning the scaly dragon.

As a result, Chu Mo tried hard for a long time. He gritted his teeth and struggled, but not a single scale came off. He disappointedly gave up.

Breathing heavily, he sat to the side pissed off.

But quickly, Chu Mo forgot about this matter. Because with the Demon Lord’s handling, Chu Mo discovered this scaly dragon unexpectedly had a large amount of blood.

“Master.....this thing’s blood, is it not useful to you?” Chu Mo curiously asked.

“It is for you to use.” The Demon Lord unenthusiastically said.

“You lost too much blood in the past idiot. You need to replenish.”

Chu Mo immediately felt moved.

The Demon Lord expressionlessly said: “If you die my legacy will be broken.”

“.....”Chu Mo was speechless. He thought: Master is truly mighty. No matter how warm and tender the situation, from his mouth there are only hard words. There isn’t the slightest bit of emotion.

“Right, that scripture, Heaven’s Will My Will, did you look at it?” The Demon Lord suddenly asked.

Chu Mo shook his head: “Didn’t you tell me not to casually enter your room.....”

“That day I didn’t say.....” The Demon Lord’s eyes opened wide. It seemed in the next moment he would break someone.

Chu Mo’s neck shrank, and he hastily said: “You said after you die.....but right now you, you are doing fine.....cough cough..... disciple naturally, naturally cannot casually enter your room.”

“Humph!” The Demon Lord sneered, stood up, then carefully washed his hands clean.

He returned to his room and grabbed a very thin pamphlet. He

passed it to Chu Mo extremely seriously.

“This is Heaven’s Will My Will. It is said to be the most powerful scripture on the earth!”

“Not one of!”

“Although there are only two two incomplete chapters, but if you can thoroughly comprehend the two incomplete chapters, it will guarantee you, will be unrivaled throughout the world!”

“The cultivation speed of the top scriptures on these four continents aren’t even one tenth of this one!!”

“It is a pity, it has a shortcoming. If it was complete.....”

The Demon Lord showed a rare moment to Chu Mo. He sighed and his face revealed unabashed regret.

Chu Mo carefully accepted it. He strangely thought: What kind of method is this? It can make master reveal this kind of expression?

Curious, Chu Mo opened the first page of the thin pamphlet.

“The first chapter, Heaven’s Will!”

Chapter 13: Scripture Transformation

At this time, Chu Mo clearly felt, the jade on his chest, it suddenly transmitted a searing heat. It severely burned him.

“Huh?”

Chu Mo was slightly startled.

The Demon Lord didn't see Chu Mo's expression and said: “Go back to your room and study. I will make today's food. I'll call you when it's done!”

Chu Mo wanted to talk back, but the scalding on his chest made him somewhat panicked inside.

He momentarily nodded: “Okay.”

The Demon Lord only wants him to research the scripture, not think.

Chu Mo tore off his clothes at the first moment after closing his door. He pulled off the piece of jade and placed it in his hand, carefully studying it.

Following, he placed it on the pamphlet ‘Heaven's Will My Will’. Then the scripture suddenly disappeared without a trace!

Chu Mo was almost scared to death!

The scripture, even the extremely arrogant Demon Lord treasured it. He cautiously gave it to Chu Mo.

He would be in big trouble if he really lost it!

Chu Mo wrinkled his brows thinking back. He could vaguely see ‘Heaven’s Will My Will’ enter into the Jade in his palm.

This is somewhat ridiculous, unbelievable.

Could his piece of jade be one of those treasures that can store objects?

Given that it can store objects, but how did he make it go in?

Besides, if it can store objects, he had carried it for over ten years. Why has it never happened before?

Chu Mo felt his brain going in circles, and his mind felt unbelievably ridiculous.

This thing, it is unexplainable.

He couldn’t help but be angry. He glared at the piece of jade. He gritted his teeth: “Did you do it or not?”

A very powerful spirit fluctuated and smoothly shot out from between Chu Mo's eyebrows towards the white soft jade rock.

Suddenly.....

Bang!

Chu Mo felt the present scenery change. He unexpectedly arrived in a chaotic blurry space.

Looking down, he couldn't see his own body, but not far away he discovered a book placed on a very large green rock.

This is 'Heaven's Will My Will'!

Chu Mo let out a yell. He became slightly disoriented. Soon after, everything lit up before him. He looked again, and he was unexpectedly in his room.

"This.....what is happening? Chu Mo's heart constantly jumped.

He was just short of calling for master.

But in the end, he still didn't call out.

He attempted concentrating his spirit, and he stared at the piece

of jade in hand. The next moment.....once again he entered into that chaotic space.

This time, Chu Mo at last could confirm, this piece of jade on his body is a most valuable treasure!

It unexpectedly has a storage function!

Soon after, Chu Mo tested an intention. He tried to withdraw the book “Heaven’s Will My Will’, but it remained motionless after several tries.

Chu Mo couldn’t help but be somewhat worried. He leaned forward, but he forgot he doesn’t have a body here. There is only a spirit form. He extended out and grabbed towards the small pamphlet on the rock.

A strange thing happened. Chu Mo’s conscious withdrew from there and returned to reality. He discovered in his hand, surprisingly he was holding the pamphlet ‘Heaven’s Will My Will’.

Chu Mo was extremely happy, he repeatedly tried over and over gain, playing a long time.

In the end he clearly understood some principles of the space. One must concentrate their spirit to enter the space. If you want to grab anything, it is just like grabbing something normally, just “grab” and you can do it.

As far as what the theory is, Chu Mo isn't too clear.

At the same time, Chu Mo was a surprised. Chu Mo must use his spirit to make things outside enter inside.

But the book 'Heaven's Will My Will'.....why did it fly inside on its own?

He thought of how when he received Heaven's Will My Will, the jade on his chest suddenly scorched.

Chu Mo slightly wrinkled his brow. He subconsciously opened up the book.

The color of Chu Mo's face completely changed after one glance.

On the first page, there were surprisingly several more words!

A benefit of the Demon Lord's torment is that Chu Mo is now very familiar with these words. He could understand at a glance even though there were several more words.

Given that there were several more words, the whole meaning of the scripture completely changed!

"I didn't do anything....." Chu Mo clutched his chest. He thought afraid" How did this happen? The heck!

How did the scripture change after entering into the piece of jade?

And why did the jade suddenly open?

Chu Mo couldn't comprehend it. One could say it is because when he saved master, blood contaminated the surface.

He had gotten into fights before. Several times blood had contaminated the piece of jade.

Why didn't it open before?

And it unexpectedly opened at this time?

Chu Mo had too many question and no way to clearly explain.

He really wanted to ask the Demon Lord. He believed master should be able to explain everything that happened.

Furthermore, he wouldn't covet his jade treasure.

But in the end, Chu Mo still hesitated.

Because this piece of jade is the only clue to find his parents!

“Especially the change in Heaven's Will My Will. I don't know if

it is good or bad.”

“Master said in the past, when cultivating, the biggest taboo is.....after cultivating for several years, one suddenly discovers they were training improperly!”

“Like that one must bite the bullet, and force themselves to continue training incorrectly!”

“Because, they already passed the point of no return!”

“I’m afraid master already studied Heaven’s Will My Will to the greatest realm, don’t tell me he has to destroy and retrain?”

The thirteen year old youth revealed a rare dazed and hesitating expression.

Thinking back and forth, Chu Mo finally decided to temporarily hide this matter.

He would wait until the time he could clearly understand, and then he would tell master. But not any later.

Soon after, Chu Mo suppressed his excited frame of mind. He carefully withdrew the piece of jade and stuck it back to his chest.

Soon after, he cleared his mind and started to seriously study the first chapter of Heaven’s Will My Will.

Heaven's Will!

“The heavens have a path, illusory, all living creatures, each and every are searching.....”

The whole first page, Heaven's Will has a completely different concept after being sucked into the the piece of jade.

Chu Mo began to practice according this method. After a little cultivation, he felt a bountiful Yuan Qi momentarily burst into his body from all directions!

Boom!

All of the meridians in who body surprisingly completely opened in this moment.

Chu Mo's whole body all of the sudden became wrapped up in Yuan Qi. This feeling was wonderfully indescribable!

The meridians in his whole body were like river beds that had been dry for several years, and suddenly they were flowing with water.

An intense life force emitted in almost an instant!

“Too fast?”

Chu Mo was a little afraid.

The Demon Lord just told him, although Heaven's Will My Will has shortcomings, but it is still the most powerful scripture in the world.

The peak scriptures in the whole continent weren't even a tenth of it!

Chu Mo had never come in contact with the greatest scriptures in the world, so he didn't know if his master's words were exaggerated.

But the speed of his current accumulation of Yuan Qi is a hundred times faster than in the past!

Actually even more!

Before this, Chu Mo's Yuan Qi continuously hung at the realm of the second level peak.

Wanting to break into the Yuan Closure realm was impossibly difficult.

Because he didn't have a good scripture.

Fan Wudi always sought to find a better scripture for his

grandson.

The old man believed it would be an enormous waste for his grandson to study an ordinary scripture with his natural talent.

It would even be an insult!

Although one could cultivate in many different kinds of scriptures, but a person's energy would be limited.

If one studied a scripture for seven or eight years or more, when they switch to a new scripture, they could not only not have progress, but they could perish!

Because very many things have already become formed in that time.

All of the cultivation methods have an original scripture contract.

Once one switches scriptures, all the original cultivation methods must be broken and adapted all over again!

That type of strength suddenly dropping brings pressure and pain. It is not something everyone can withstand.

Reconstruction is an incomparably long process.

Nintey-nine percent of reconstructing cultivators don't persist until the end.

Wu Fandi naturally understood this concept.

This pity is, even though he is a General, the best scripture he could find didn't even go past the third Yuan rank.

In this world, the truly peak scriptures are only held in sects like the Immortal Sky.

This is why the old man wanted Chu Mo to enter the Immortal Sky.

Although Chu Mo couldn't enter the Immortal Sky, but he encountered the Demon Lord!

This was like encountering fate, letting Chu Mo receive an even stronger scripture.

The accumulation speed of Yuan Qi in Chu Mo's Dantian was astonishing.

The Yuan Qi became all the more abundant in the meridians all over his body following the implementation of the methods.

A steady stream converged in the Dantian.

On the shackles of the second rank Yuan Qi, in a short period of time, unexpectedly slightly.....a slight of a crack appeared!

This signifies, so long as he works hard, breaking through the Yuan Closure is just around the corner!

The excitement in Chu Mo's heart was simply indescribable.

最近很长的一段时间，楚墨经历了太多本不应他这个年纪经历的事情。

Chu Mo had experienced too many things a young person shouldn't experience in such a short time.

很多憋闷的事情，都堆积在这个十三岁少年的心头，让他时长在噩梦中惊醒。

Several depressing things accumulated in this thirteen year old's heart. It often made him have nightmares.

Even if the Demon Lord is his master, but he has to continuously recite these chants he doesn't know how to use.

A strong person like the demon lord, that can fly and leave the earth, it is also like a dream at the moment.

Until today, until this moment!

Chu Mo suddenly had a feeling of enlightenment!

It was like the whole world, inside his mind.....it brightened up.

A large cycle completed. Chu Mo felt he had been reborn.

His whole person's Essence, Energy, and Spirit experienced a huge change.

The Qi and blood in his body began to fill up.

He was like a completely different person from before he practiced Heaven's Will!

Chu Mo looked at the thin pamphlet in his hand. He had unmatched appreciation in his heart for his master.

Chu Mo was somewhat curious. This piece of jade. In the end, how much did it change the practice Heaven's Will My Will?

Then, he casually flipped to the second page of Heaven's Will My Will.

He was suddenly shocked.

Because that page is completely blank!

There isn't a single word!

“This this this.....what is this?

“It is truly seeing a ghost!

“The words?”

“Where did the masterpiece scripture go?”

Chapter 14: Breakthrough Yuan Closure

Chu wanted to grab the piece of Jade hung on his neck and ask: What did you do to my peerless scripture?

Because Master had just given it to him, he still hadn't seriously taken a look. But he knew, on the back.....there were words!

But now it is an empty white space!

He flipped the page.....no words!

Blank space.

He flipped it over again.....still no words!

Still blank space!

Apart from the top of the first page on Heaven's Will My Will where there are added words, the back is completely blank!

“Heavens.....”

Chu Mo used a hand to support his forehead. That extremely excited feeling just now was almost completely used up.

In tears he sat in a chair. His forehead full of sweat, completely

baffled.

At this time, The Demon Lord suddenly called from outside: “Come out and eat!”

Chu Mo slightly trembled. Inside he thought: This matter.....i can't say anything to master. It is too strange!

He must get a clear grasp in the time it takes to return.

Thinking, Chu Mo responded, opened the door, and walked out.

A strong fragrance wafted into his nose. Chu Mo's spirit immediately shook.

Then he was stupefied, looking at the food on the table. He simply couldn't believe his eyes.

“This.....this is made by you?”

Four dishes, a bowl of soup, and not only was there scaly dragon meat, but there was also fish and two types of vegetables.

Not only was the flavor delicious, but the presentation was amazing!

The Demon Lord unenthusiastically looked at Chu Mo: “Did you

really believe your cooking skill was good?”

“.....” Chu Mo was speechless. He even somewhat forgot the change to Heaven’s Will My Will. He confoundedly looked at the Demon Lord: “Master.....is there anything you can’t do?”

The Demon Lord payed no mind to Chu Mo. He grabbed a pot of alcohol and two chopsticks, then placed it before Chu Mo.

Chu Mo was stunned again. Master poured him a cup of wine. Mouth twitching he said: “Master.....you, this is?”

“Come over, drink with me.” The Demon Lord spoke, sitting there, he carefully looked at Chu Mo: “Not so bad, the Heaven’s Will chapter, it has already started!”

“In the future you must rely on yourself!”

Chu Mo relaxed a breath inside. But he suddenly became startled upon hearing these words. Looking at the Demon Lord: “Master you.....”

The Demon Lord waved: “Drink!”

It wasn’t the first time Chu Mo had a drink. He grew up in the military. Some old soldiers taught him at an earlier time how to drink.

It could be said he had some ability to drink.

But Chu Mo never thought, the alcohol master grabbed, it didn't feel special when he drank. But he was floating after one cup, a feeling like he was flying.

He also felt his Dantian heating up at the same time. Those cracks on the shackles of the Yuan Closure unexpectedly became bigger and bigger!

At this time, he suddenly heard the Demon Lord say in a deep voice: "Still slowly practicing the scripture, attacking the Yuan Closure? What are you waiting for?"

Chu Mo blacked out, and he started practicing the Heaven's Will chapter of the scripture.

A kind of vast power in his four limbs and hundred bones momentarily transferred out. It advanced towards the Yuan closure shackles and fiercely attacked together.

Boom!

Like a flash flood!

That power, it easily ripped open the formidable power of the Yuan closure shackles.

Chu Mo felt his body center, in an instant, it gave birth to a portion of inconceivable mighty power.

That power, it was like he could cut mountains to gravel!

He could tear apart anything!

Chu Mo's brain was still a little dizzy at this time. His body was full of power. He couldn't help but stand up and rush outside.

He roared and let loose a fist in the courtyard.

This fist was naturally Chu Mo's most familiar military martial arts!

Only, hitting this time was like two completely different concepts with the past.

Chu Mo completely couldn't believe it. If he faced the that Fan Lizi again, the 'Immortal Sky's Little Pride', he could split him apart with one punch! Even with Seventh Elder's hidden help!

Filled with intoxicated thoughts, Chu Mo snarled while he repeatedly practiced the military martial arts that he had studied for several years.

The last strike, Chu Mo hit a towering tree that took two men to wrap their arms around.

Peng!

The forceful power in his body moved through his arm in a flash. His fist smooth and ruthless.....crashed into the tree.

A muffled bang,

Soon after.

This tree that took two people to wrap around, it emitted a pulsating cracking noise.

Snap.....Crack!

Exploding rumble.

Rumbling to the ground!

Unexpectedly by Chu Mo's fist, a raw smash!

The huge tree collapsed, shaking the earth beneath their feet.

Chu Mo sobered up!

He stupidly looked at the fallen tree before him, eyes full shock!

“This really, my fist hit knocked it down? Chu Mo mumbled to himself.

The Demon Lord came to his side at this time. He looked at the split in the tree, nodded, then unenthusiastically said: “So-so.”

“Dragon-like power!”

“Master!”

“I am already dragon strong!”

“How could you say so-so?”

Chu Mo pointed at the split in the tree. He excitedly said: “Master look, I hit it with one fist. I focused here, then everywhere else shot out with dragon-like force!”

“This crack.....it’s clean as a knife cut!”

The Demon Lord Jeered: “A high level Body Refinement Stage, that’s it. You still don’t know, and yet believe you’ve become an exceptional master.....”

Chu Mo laughed, completely not caring about the Demon Lord’s attack.

Sweating all over, he had practically sobered up. Chu Mo suddenly felt very hungry, thus he ran back to the kitchen and ate.

Knowing him for such a time, Chu Mo already clearly understood the Demon Lord's temper. The Demon Lord making the assessment "So-so" illustrates he is actually satisfied.

The Yellow Ranks are the first, second, and third ranks. The first and second are common.

One could cultivate out some Yuan Qi with a lot of effort, but they still wouldn't be a Fighter that breaks through the Yuan Closure.

Although it is a 'mere common' rank, but one can sense the Yuan Qi. It can already be considered as stepping into the door of cultivation.

The first, second, and third ranks are the Body Refinement Stage.

Yellow Rank one warriors have the strength of oxen and horses.

It is obvious, if one can only sense Yuan Qi, and enter into the first rank, then they will be much more extreme than ordinary people.

At the very least when they enter the military, they can be a

sergeant or even a small captain.

Yellow rank two warriors have the strength of tigers and leopards.

This was Chu Mo's past level. Tiger and leopard power not only has a lot of strength, but it also has agility!

Warriors in this realm can already achieve a little fame in the secular world, and they can have a little status.

They can be a captain when entering the military!

Yellow Rank three persons possess dragon-like power.

This rank is the peak cultivation of the body refinement stage. Breaking through the Yuan Closure is the true beginning of going to the next level.

For warriors, it is equivalent to swimming from a small stream into a large river.

One can see the broader world.

From there on prospects are promising!

Several warriors are stuck at the Yuan Closure their whole life.

Even until death they cannot break through.

Chu Mo is only thirteen, and he has broken through this state.

He has already done something that the large majority of warriors cannot do in their entire life.

Warriors in this state already have the qualifications to become generals in some small countries!

Although the road before him is very long, but at this time, Chu Mo felt incredibly high spirited.

This time, the Demon Lord also didn't hit him.

Furthermore, a softness flashed in the pupils of his eyes as he watched Chu Mo wolf down food.

Chu Mo ate several large bowls of food. He was finally felt full after sweeping down a tray of food.

He finally put down the bowl and chopsticks, looked at the expressionless Demon Lord, and laughed: "Master, you cook too well!"

"If I could eat this every day....."

“It would be even better!”

“What are you thinking? Clean everything up and go down the mountain.” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo and duly said.

“What?”

“Down.....down the mountain?” Chu Mo foolishly stared at the Demon Lord: “Master are you joking?”

“Who is joking with you?” The Demon Lord coldly said: “I already taught you everything I could, and you’ve already learned it.”

“What will you do here if you don’t go down the mountain?”

“I.....what have I learned?” Chu Mo stared dumbfounded at the Demon Lord. He said: “Shouldn’t I study at least three to five years on the mountain, then leave master and go out?”

“Nonsense!” The Demon Lord grunted: “Those chants are the complete practice!”

“Since you’ve already learned them, the remaining is just a self cultivation process.”

“From here on return to Yellow Flame City. The time along the road is enough for you to become familiar with these practices.”

“From here.....return to Yellow Flame City?” Chu Mo saw the Demon Lord was completely not joking. He completely felt foolish.

The Demon Lord carried him, flying three whole days with hardly any stops. It was at least six thousand miles.

If he relied on his two legs to walk.....how long would it take?

He had broken through the Yuan Closure realm, but over six thousand miles. If he went day and night without stopping in a hurry, it would take him six month.

There is also the most important problem.

He didn't know the way!

“Yes, this time is enough for you to become very familiar with the methods.” The Demon Lord saw Chu Mo's thinking expression.

Chu Mo was immediately bitter faced: “Master, your disciple would hate to part with you!”

“Come on!” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo slanted: “Have you not taken enough trashings?”

Chu Mo laughed: “No, the key point is disciple doesn't wish to

leave master!”

“False!” The Demon Lord coldly said.

“True, I’m sincere!” Chu Mo slapped his chest.

The Demon Lord said: “Don’t speak nonsense, it’s been decided!”

Chu Mo saw Master truly wanted him to leave. His heart suddenly filled with sadness, but his face didn’t show anything. All smiles he said: “Master, look, I don’t have a single magic weapon on me. Master is so awesome. Surely you have all kinds of them right? How about giving your disciple some.....”

“Otherwise, this mountain range is so high and wide. Disciple cannot fly. What can I do in case I run into danger?”

“Besides, disciple doesn’t know the way!”

The Demon Lord’s eyelids jumped, and he coldly said: “I have none!”

“Then give me something else.....”

‘For example a high quality Yuan stone, or a high quality Yuan medicine.....”

The Demon Lord spoke: “Don’t have, I have nothing!”

“Master, in the past you said, if I won the bet, you would make me extremely wealthy!” Chu Mo eyes lit up: “That could also do!”

“I already gave you!” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “Don’t tell me you don’t think the thing I gave you, is it not priceless?”

“That counts?” Chu Mo’s mouth twitched. He muttered: “Simply too stingy, miser!”

Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord and said: “Then if disciple leaves, what about the poison in master’s body?”

“What does it have to do with you? Truly more nonsense!”

The Demon Lord stood up then said: “I see you don’t have anything to take with you, then beat it!”

He directly walked over, grabbed Chu Mo by the collar, then walked outside and threw him!

Chu Mo immediately skyrocketed.

“Aaaahhhh, master.....you’re joking Ahhh, don’t drive me away!”

“How will I find you after!”

Chu Mo yelled. Soon after an astral wind high in the sky blew him speechless.

He flew a thirty miles outside the mountain.

Crash!

Fallen to the ground.

Chapter 15: Mysterious Maiden

Chu Mo somewhat sadly looked at the far away tall imposing mountain. His eyes revealed a reluctance to part.

Thinking of his master's condition before, his heart became even more full of worry.

I won't be at master's side if he loses consciousness again. Then what can be done?"

"Not good, I still want to say goodbye to master!"

"I want to urge him, support him, don't give up!"

"I must find Yuan beasts, and use their blood to replenish his life!"

"Like that, I can have time to find the needed medicine for master!"

"As long as I live, I will not let you easily die!"

"I will use all my ability to rescue you!"

"I know, in your heart, there is too much unfinished business."

Chu Mo thought, faced the mountain, and started a mad dash.

After breaking through the Yuan Closure, his body has an endless stream of Yuan power. Although he doesn't have the ability to fly like master, but walking on the the mountain was like walking on flat ground, an easy matter.

Chu Mo only needed a little over two hours to run 30 miles.

“Master!”

“I will return!”

Chu Mo shouted and climbed up the face of the mountain.

The mountain is extremely steep. There's cliffs as far as the eye can see.

Chu Mo's voice reverberated throughout the mountain. It startled a few birds and sent them fleeing.

Chu Mo paid no notice. He continued to use his limbs to climb up the mountain.

Extremely exhausted, he finally climbed to the peak. But he stared dumbfounded, that original space is completely empty.

His familiar small log cabin is gone.

The various training apparatuses the Demon Lord gave him to practice were also gone.

The only thing remaining is empty land.

“Master.....”

Chu Mo’s eyes reddened a little. He whispered: “I know you are not fond of sons and daughters, but you.....”

“it’s too.....”

Chu Mo wanted to be heartless, but he couldn’t speak. Because he clearly understood. The Demon Lord is not the kind of truly heartless person.

He could only say, his master, this extremely arrogant to the core person.

He didn’t want to expose a shred of sadness in front of Chu Mo.

Chu Mo lingered there a long time. He recollected of every day and every moment here.

Finally, Chu Mo’s face revealed a touch of determination.

“Master, I know your hopes for me are very high. Disciple certainly won’t make you disappointed!”

Chu Mo kneeled and faced the empty land, then bowed three times.

He stood up, turned, and went down the mountain.

This time Chu Mo didn’t look back.

Chu Mo only knew the approximate direction of the way home.

Thousands of miles of road awaited him. It is an endless and arduous journey.

But Chu Mo wasn’t afraid. Chu Mo survived living with the Demon Lord. It’s illogical to think he couldn’t conquer his way home.

Chu Mo didn’t walk very far the first day because it wasn’t early when he left the Demon Lord. He had also gone back and wasted a lot of time.

Therefore, Chu Mo had only moved thirty miles away from the mountain before the sky turned dark.

Chu Mo decided to rest for the night, then set out tomorrow.

He found an enormous ancient tree and climbed up. He sat on a ten foot wide branch and leaned against the tree trunk. Chu Mo started to silently cultivate.

A starry night overhead. Silence between heaven and earth.

Following the implementation of the scripture, a large amount of surrounding Yuan Qi started like a flood rushing forth towards Chu Mo's body.

All of the meridians in his body acted along with the scripture. The acupuncture points of the meridians opened up and welcomed the Yuan Qi inside.

Chu Mo could clearly feel himself continuously growing stronger following his continuous practice of the scripture and the large amount of Yuan Qi entering into his body.

“No wonder master said this scripture is the number one in the world.”

“The result is amazing!”

“Looks like cultivating along the road on the way home, perhaps.....there is a possibility I could break through the fourth rank!”

“If it’s like that.....”

A cold light condensed in Chu Mo’s pupils.

A name and a face he loathed to the extreme floated before him.

“Xia Jie!”

“[Wash your neck and wait for me!](#)”

[TL: It’s a phrase used when someone wants revenge. I’m not 100% sure what it means. My best guess is that it means take care of yourself because I want my revenge.]

At this time, Chu Mo felt an itch. At the same time, faintly, there was a trace of scent. It transferred into his nose.

Chu Mo couldn’t bear it after a small cycle completed. He opened his eyes, wrinkled his brow, and sized up his body.

Borrowing the dim starlight, he subconsciously rolled up his sleeve and looked at his arm.

There was actually a layer of sticky gunk on his originally spotless arm, a thing pitch black like ink.

That strange smell is coming from this.

“Ou.....”

Even if it is coming from his own body, it still made Chu Mo feel nauseous.

“What is this?”

Chu Mo wrinkled his brow, gritted his teeth, and looked at the black thing on his arm.

Then he subconsciously untied his clothes and took a look.

Practically his whole body was covered in that black substance.....

“Ah!”

It is unknown how far this shrill cry traveled through the tranquil mountain forest.

In short, several flying and walking beasts were sent fleeing by this voice.

Some cowards would have a psychological scar left behind, and would never dare return here.

Chu Mo sprung into action. He climbed down from the tree, and

sprinted towards the nearest mountain creek he could remember.

Rushing to the side of the creek, he used the fastest speed to throw off his clothes to the shore. He jumped in with a plop noise.

“Ao Ao Ao!”

Chu Mo wailed like a ghost and howled like a wolf.

He jumped out of the water.

因为这齐腰深的溪水，实在是太凉了！

Because this waist-deep creek water is actually really cold!

It was somewhat unbearable even with a body that had entered into the Yuan Closure

But he dropped his head and looked at the black stuff all up and down his body.

Chu Mo had another burst of feeling fed up. He is a person that loves to be clean. Chu Mo was afraid he wouldn't be able to sleep if he didn't completely clean his body.

“Not good. I would rather freeze to death than be filthy!”

Gritting teeth, a plop sound, another jump.

This time, perhaps he somewhat adapted or mentally prepared, but Chu Mo felt the creek wasn't nearly as cold as before.

Chu Mo scrubbed like his life depended on it, but the filth was practically glued on his body. He finally managed to rub off a little bit after exerting an enormous amount of energy.

Chu Mo looked in disgust. He abruptly dove into the water and grabbed a handful of sand to start rubbing.....

Chu Mo repeated this in the cold water for over two hours. Chu Mo finally cleaned off almost all of the filth on his body.

Hu!

Chu Mo let out a breath at last. He mumbled: "What in the devil, there's no rhyme or reason. My body just produced so much filthy stuff. What just happened?"

A sudden light laugh came from within the woods.

"Hehe, how stupid!"

"But it is the process of cultivation. The body discharges impurities. It makes your physique even better. They call it washing the essence!"

Chu Mo was scared, and he shivered: “Who are you? Come out!”

“Hiding in the dark, what are you doing sneaking around?”

The forest quieted down all of the sudden after Chu Mo’s indignant yell.

But right away.....

“What are you roaring for?”

“Showing you have a big voice?”

“It isn’t your family’s forest. How can other people be sneaking around?”

An indignant young girl’s voice came from the forest. Soon after a girl wearing a blue dress came out of the shadowy woods. She stood at the shore and looked down upon Chu Mo in the creek.

“I came out, how about you?”

“You.....” Chu Mo almost fainted from not breathing. Does this girl not have the least bit of shame? Does she not see I’m wearing no clothes, and I am bathing in the creek?

“You, what you? Who cares to look at you? So thin, and it’s dark..... cough cough.” The girl realized her slip of the tongue, and she immediately shut up.

Chu Mo couldn’t help but give a supercilious look. He had always heard of men taking a peek at women bathing, but he had never met a women who peeps on men.

“Fine, sister, I have nothing much to look at. Please go away and [let me put on some clothes](#) okay?”

[TL: I was in the pool!]

Chu Mo spent a long time in the water, freezing and shivering. He refused to pursue the origin of the girl and only wanted her to go away.

“Humph, who cares see any more of you!” The girl snorted, then turned and left.

He couldn’t see the facial expression in the dark of night, but Chu Mo could tell the girl was blushing from her voice.

Chu Mo watched the girl from behind as she disappeared into the forest. He waited a moment, then he tested out: “You better not peep at me!”

“Pei Pei Pei, you little brat, who dares care about you. If you keep talking trash this girl will kick your clothes into the creek!”

“You can freeze to death!”

The girl sure enough hadn't left, and her voice came over from a distance.

Chu Mo hurriedly climbed out of the water. He was afraid she would really do it, and that would be miserable.

Chu Mo didn't say a word after he quickly dressed, and he turned to leave.

Chu Mo had learned several things a youth his age shouldn't know due to growing up in the military.

He was much more mature than people his same age.

In this desolate stretch for thousands of miles in the mountains, in the middle of the night, there is a girl with enormous courage that has a strange atmosphere that penetrates inside and out.

“Such a person of unknown origin.....”

There was only one thought in Chu Mo's mind after he put on his clothes and calmed down: Get far away from her!

“Hey, how could you not have manners? Are you leaving without saying hello?”

Chu Mo never thought the girl would chase after him. She rushed before Chu Mo and scowled.

This time, Chu Mo could see her clearly through the hazy starlight passing through the canopy. His heart couldn't help but praise: Gorgeous!

She wore a blue dress. Her hair draped her shoulders, and she had thin and soft willowy eyebrows. She had [red phoenix eyes](#), and cherry lips with a touch of purple-red.

[TL: Red phoenix eyes is how Chinese people describe eyes that tilt up at the corner. [They look something like this.](#)]

Her skin is extremely white. Even in the middle of the night it was like being blown away. Her watery eyes glittered like the stars in the sky overhead.

Her waistline was a slight hourglass, and two tall and thin perfectly straight beautiful legs that were faintly discernible through her dress.

Although she didn't look old, but she she was a breathtaking beauty.

“What are you looking at?” The young girl face became a little red from Chu Mo's somewhat reckless staring, and she couldn't help but be angry.

“You are so beautiful. Are you a fairy of the mountain?” Chu Mo

asked.

His heart slightly felt strange. This place wasn't too far from where he and master secretly trained.

Relying on the Demon Lord's abilities, he would certainly know if there were top rank Yuan Beasts nearby that could change into human form.

Then why didn't he grab this girl?

Was it because she is beautiful that he couldn't bear to touch her?

Don't joke!

Given that this young girl is very pretty, in Chu Mo's eyes, he wouldn't go easy if she is truly a Yuan beast.

Chu Mo basically didn't believe this girl was the same as him, a human. He only had one reason: He doesn't believe!

"You are a fairy!"

"Your whole family are fairies!"

"Look with your own eyes, did I grow up to look like those ugly Yuan beasts?"

The girl indignantly looked at Chu Mo and scolded.

“How could you appear here if you aren’t a fairy Yuan beast that can change into human form.”

“Pei, aren’t you also here? Aren’t you a shape shifting demon?” The young girl had a silver tongue, and her words were unusually sharp.

Chu Mo scratched his head. He felt what the other person said is reasonable. Therefore he asked: “Who are you?”

“Yes.....who am I?”

The girl puckered her willow brows. A color of pain and ignorance appeared on her beautiful cheeks.

“In the end who am I?”

“I can vaguely remember my name.....”

“Ah ah, you are annoying!”

“What does who I am have to do with you?”

Chapter 16: Marvelous Cultivation

Chu Mou could still see the girls fierce expression even if the night was pitch black. His mouth twitched as he said: “Who cares about your affairs? The road is big, let’s each take our side and bid farewell!”

The girl is very beautiful, but so what? Chu Mo had seen several beautiful women before.

Which of the grand ladies from Yellow Flame City are not gentle and loving?

Even if they are dressed up.....

Chu Mo didn’t wish to provoke this crafty and headstrong little miss high and mighty.

“Hey, Don’t go!” The girl’s image flashed, and she unexpectedly blocked in front of Chu Mo. A pair of vivid black eyes stared at Chu Mo: “You are rude! I’m a girl, do you not know how to take a hint?”

Chu Mo’s brow filled with wrinkles. He looked at the girl and honestly said: “Please young lady. We aren’t acquaintances. Why must you persistently trouble me?”

At the same time, the level of danger Chu Mo felt towards this young woman jumped up several times.

Her action just now of suddenly appearing before him clearly shows this girl's state isn't low. She is at least a higher level than himself.

Because he still can't do anything right now.

“This dense dark forest has too many scary things. You are willing to ditch a beautiful girl like me here?” The girl stood with two hands on her waist, and she glared furiously at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo couldn't even see half the word “fear” on her face.

“Why don't you speak? Do you feel in the wrong? Humph, fancy that you're a man!” The girl's logic was not forgiving.

“You still aren't finished.....”

Chu Mo returned a supercilious look: “First, how did you appear in a dense forest like this girl?”

“Second, how is your skill so good? You are climbing through this mountain like it is flat land. What could you be afraid of?”

“Also, I'm not a man. I am a boy.”

Chu Mo looked at the girl in the blue dress and added a final stab: “Look clearly. I am a boy!”

“Big sister!”

“Big sister? You are calling me big sister? Do I look like a big sister?”

The girl looked like a cat that had its tail stepped on. Her hair stood on end.

“You have a sharp mouth brat. I’m eleven years old. In one look you are older than me. Based on what do you call me big sister?” The girl raged.

“[Ze.....](#)” Chu Mo was momentarily speechless. He looked at this young girl that was already half a head taller than him. She had curves in the places that should have curves, and she was thin in the places one should be thin, extremely attractive.

[TL: Ze is an interjection to express disgust or admiration. In this case it is disgust.]

Chu Mo glanced at the girl’s chest, and he cursed in his heart in disagreement: Eleven? What did she eat to grow up like this? I’m an educated person. Is she trying to cheat me? Impossible!

“Younger than me huh, then, little sister, do you have anything else? If there is nothing else then should we not part?” Chu Mo said.

“Who is your little sister?” The girl stared, then wrinkled her

willow brows. Her pupils flashed a trace of having no knowledge about something. She looked at Chu Mo and said: “I cannot find my family. I don’t know who I am.....”

At the last two sentences, one could hear the softness that a young girl should have be revealed.

But Cho Mo didn’t believe this girl’s softness. Afraid he couldn’t believe a young weak girl could suddenly appear here.

“What does that have to do with me?” Chu Mo bitterly smiled inside as soon as these words came out. Sure enough the proximity to pitch makes you black. He had spent a long time with master, and began to adopt his style of words.

Just like the past, even though he doubted the origins of the girl, he would still not say such a thing.

“Yes, it really has nothing to do with you.” The girl sighed loudly. Her face revealed a delicate and pitiful expression that causes one to feel pain.

Chu Mo yet unmoved, only calmly looked at the young girl.

The girl wanted to say something. All the sudden expression between her brows slightly changed.

“Fine, you have business, leave and have fun fun!”

Chu Mo felt the image of the girl before him flash, and it disappeared from there.

It immediately stunned Chu Mo. Chu Mo had secretly judged her strength in his head. He thought she was stronger, but her strength had limits.

If he truly used his skills, he wouldn't be much worse off than her.

But this girl used her full skill when she left. Chu Mo had only seen that kind of skill used by his master the Demon Lord!

Don't tell me, this young girl.....she has strength comparable to the Demon Lord?"

Is it not too ridiculous?

Chu Mo shook his head. He couldn't believe this is possible.

Chu Mo was no longer sleepy due to the girl's disturbance. He decided to immediately leave this troublesome land.

Chu Mo walked a long time. The girl once again appeared at the place she was just at. Only this time she held a pitiful expression on her face. She lightly patted her stomach and muttered: "What a terrifying aura!"

“He should be able to kill me, but he didn’t raise a hand against me.”

“Don’t tell me he has something to do with this young boy?”

“Did he perceive I had no killing intent towards the young boy?”

“This boy.....it appears he is related the the purpose of this trip.”

“But, who am I?”

“Where did I come from?”

“Why did I come here?”

The girls face once again revealed a painful expression as she muttered. She used her hands to massage her temples. She depressingly said after a while: “This type of feeling is truly uncomfortable!”

The girl smoothly went through the dense forest. She looked at the clear night sky. She looked at the direction Chu Mo went in and hastily pursued.

A figure gradually appeared in the empty sky after the girl had walked for a long time.

The black robed Demon Lord. He restrained his breath and coldly stared in the direction Chu Mo and the girl left in. He softly said with distinction: “That world’s.....why come find my disciple? Humph, I’ll kill you if you have ill intention, thereby eliminating any trouble!”

Finished speaking, the Demon Lord’s Image flashed, disappearing without a trace.

Naturally Chu Mo knew nothing about this.

The light began to shine. A red sun climbed in the trees, shedding little spots of light into the forest. Chu Mo had already walked sixty miles.

At this time, he was practicing a large amount of the chants the Demon Lord taught him.

“Other people’s masters teach disciples knife skills, sword skills, fist skills, palm skills, and footwork.....always explaining clearly.”

“Then carefully give guidance in simple terms.....”

“My master teaches me a pile of chants. But he doesn’t tell me what a single chant is. I must use the scripture to attempt each one.....”

Chu Mo frowned muttering to himself. This path, after sixty miles he only clearly understood what one method was.

This was a type of fighting skill that had three moves all together.

But that chant is very long and very abstruse.

Chu Mo originally wanted to study a type of footwork. He could increase his speed along the road by studying footwork. He could increase several times or even dozens of times if he footwork was high enough.

But after using the scripture at the same time to study this long chant, he discovered it is a boxing skill.

He didn't know if it had a name. Chu Mo reckoned it did, but the Demon Lord never even told him.

Although this boxing skill only has three moves, it can change into countless variations. It can be rated as an exquisite peerless skill.

The difference between the military martial art skills Chu Mo refined growing up and this skill is like the difference between the heaven and the earth.

Therefore, Chu Mo's whole person was consumed in the three move technique after first complaining.

As a result, an interesting scenery appeared in this peaceful forest.

A teenager was galloping through the forest while constantly flailing his arms around and muttering chants. It looked extremely silly.

One wouldn't know if it was training or an idiot.

The girl in the blue dress secretly following Chu Mo thought the latter.

“This brat had a razor wit. Why does he look like an insane person?”

The blue dress girl wrinkled her brow and watched Chu Mo from afar. She saw his gestures. Her rosy face completely puzzled.

“Haha, I understand. It is originally like this!”

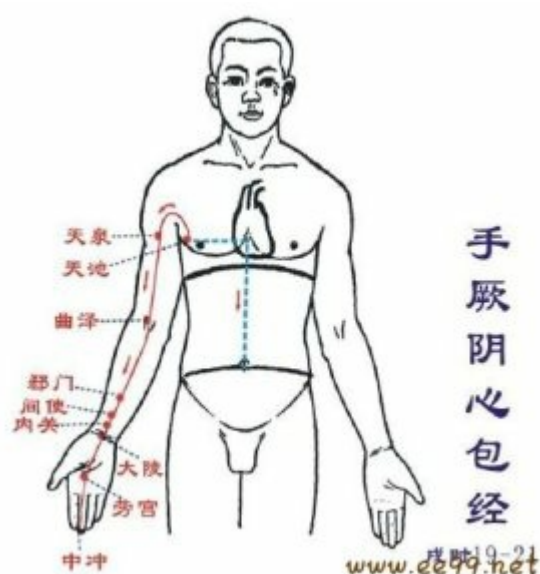
“Qi starts in the [Dantian](#), passes through the [Tian Shu](#), and strengthens in the [Tian Chi](#).....”

[TL: A Dantian is a place below the navel. The Tian Shu are meridians to the left and right of the navel. The Tian Chi is a meridian outside the nipple towards the armpit.]

“Via the [Tian Quan, Qu Ze, Xi Men, Nei Guan, and Da Ling](#).....to

[the Lao Gong.](#)”

[TL: Tian Quan is a meridian on the arm beneath the shoulder. Qu Ze is at the elbow. The Xi Men is at the center of the forearm. Nei Men is between the center of the forearm and the wrist. Da Ling is at the wrist, and the Lao Gong is in between the knuckle of the index finger and the knuckle of the middle finger. This picture contains most of the points.]



“Finally gathering at the [Shao Zi, Guan Chong, Zhong Chong, Shang Yang, and Shao Shang](#).....”

[TL: Meridians on all of the fingertips. The picture shows an extra meridian on the pinkie not mentioned.]



“and strikes out with a spiraling force.....”

Suddenly Chu Mo let out a large laugh scaring the girl in the blue dress behind him.

Soon after Chu Mo's image flashed, and he moved extremely agile towards a large tree.

Chu Mo flew into the sky when he got within ten feet of the enormous tree, ruthlessly punched, smashing into the tree.....

Crash!

A muffled bang, Chu Mo's whole person struck into the large tree.

The outline of a person with their arms and legs spread out was stuck in the tree. It slowly slid to the ground and laid motionless.

The girl in the blue dress had huge eyes, her mouth wide open shocked by the scene.

After a time she finally mumbled: “Is he insane?”

Of course Chu Mo isn't insane. He is in unspeakably bitter suffering. Originally Chu Mo thought he understood the chant's brilliant areas. He was very pleased with himself and wanted to

give it a test. The result..... cough cough, turned into this.

This three move boxing skill is peerless and exquisite. Even though Chu Mo is a genius, he could not completely comprehend the essence in such a short period of time.

Therefore, tragedy.

Chu Mo lay on the ground a long time before slowly starting to move.

He climbed up, slapped the dust off himself, and couldn't help but scold: "Master, you old devil. What kind of bullshit boxing skill is this?"

"Hisss.....it hurts!"

"Teach the chant and don't care anymore....."

"Where is there such an irresponsible master under the heavens!"

"I curse you, how do I do it?"

"You'd just come out and hit me!"

The girl in the blue dress blankly stared at the teenager cursing

and hopping around from far away. Her brain couldn't comprehend, how could this world have such a master and disciple?

“The master only teaches chants then flings them away without a care.”

“The disciple doesn't respect the master and dares to criticize?”

If it were me, acting like him, I would certainly have been expelled from the sect.....”

“I would be fortunate if I wasn't struck to death!”

“Huh? Why am I speaking like this? I.....am from where?”

The blue dress girl wrinkled her brow and bitterly pondered.

Chu Mo muttered something after he had his fill of cursing. He began to walk and make gestures.

The blue dress girl followed Chu Mo for nine whole days like this. It was nearly the same sight every day.

At the same time she learned of the teenager's stubbornness and persistence.

According to the young girl, Chu Mo is simply a little madman.

Every day he finds new ways to torment himself.

He either slaps himself into a tree or a cliff. He makes weird gestures and plunges into waterfalls, welcoming the rapids snarling.

Every day he goes crazy covering himself in dirt, yet he doesn't give up.

Every day he scolds his irresponsible master, then after taking a rest, he is bursting with life and tormenting himself all over again.

The girl had never seen such a cultivator before. It truly opened her eyes.

At last, things began to change on the night of the ninth day.

Chu Mo encountered trouble!

Chapter 17: Demon Lord's Past Events

He was next to a big river preparing to catch a fish, carelessly.....he entered into the territory of an enormous python.

The enormous python was as thick as a bucket, twenty feet long, faint blue scales flickering an ice cold light, and a pair of blood red eyes staring death at Chu Mo. From head to tail, it emitted an intense death aura.

The small half of the python was submerged under water, remaining motionless despite the rapids. It coldly stared down Chu Mo, at any time it could possibly attack him.

Chu Mo felt a cool air on his back, because he recognized the python!

This is a Yuan beast!

Rank four Yuan beast!

Chu Mo didn't recognize many Yuan beasts. But this python is one of the ones he knows.

It is named Red Eye Ice Python!

In Demon Lord's eyes, this rank four Yuan beast wasn't much

different than a little earthworm, easily squishable.

But for Chu Mo, this is a terrifying creature possessing incredible killing power.

Chu Mo recognized this thing because he saw a Red Eye Ice Python when he was young.

Speaking of, that was already six years ago. Chi Mo was only seven at that time.

Fan Wu Di was guarding the border between Da Xia and Da Qi at the time. He brought Chu Mo along because there wasn't a war.

Boys can only grow into true men by being in the military according to grandpa.

There was a big river not far away from the camp. It was a natural border between Da Xia and Da Qi.

There had never been anything scary in the river, always peaceful.

But one day, a Red Eye Ice Python came from somewhere unknown. That one was a bit bigger than the one today.

Chu Mo saw that Red Eye Ice Python eat a soldier whole as the man went to fetch water. Chu Mo was completely terrified.

The Red Eye Ice Python wasn't satisfied after devouring the soldier, and it charged towards them.

The other soldiers put up a resistance when they saw what happened, and they staked their lives escorting Chu Mo away.

Grandfather enraged when he heard the news. He brought a group of elite soldiers to go kill it.

Chu Mo didn't see the later course of events, but he heard from the mouths of other people.

The Red Eye Ice Python killed seventeen yellow rank one team leaders and injured more than thirteen yellow rank two captains.

One yellow rank three deputy general that had broken through the Yuan Closure had his arm ripped off.

Although grandfather wasn't injured, but he had no power left after killing the Red Eye Ice Python.

These are the injuries that occurred after a large amount of military experts laid siege!

Grandfather was the first one to charge!

Grandfather was already a rank four cultivator at that time!

Chu Mo heard the Red Eye Ice Python's scales were extremely hard. Sharp swords only left a slight trace when they struck the Python. Rank one and two warriors fundamentally couldn't break through the defense.

Furthermore that thing could shoot ice breath from its large mouth. People could be frozen stiff upon getting hit.

Then it uses its tail to ruthlessly strike. A person would be broken into pieces, like crushing a piece of ice.

Unbelievably terrifying!

In the end after the Red Eye Ice Python was killed, they dragged it back. It was completely mutilated from head to tail, no longer showing its former prestige.

But the created destruction left all of the participants with an unforgettable impression.

Afterwards Fan Wudi once said, even after breaking through the fifth rank, entering into the Thousand Man Killing state, upon meeting this thing, the farther away the better!

The rank three deputy general from that time is now a household manager for the Fan house in Yellow Flame City.

His strength suddenly dropped because his arm was ripped off. He was no longer suited to stay in the military.

Feeling guilty, grandfather arranged for him to be a household manager to repay him.

Chu Mo knew from the first portion of leaving the mountain that his return home wouldn't be peaceful. But he never thought the first Yuan Beast he encountered would be a Red Eye Ice Python!

Chu Mo strongly laughed while looking at the huge python before him emitting a strange brilliant ray of light in its eyes: "Hey, Python brother, hello ah.....the weather today isn't bad. Have you also come out for a stroll?"

Rank four Yuan beasts possess a certain consciousness. Although it isn't too high, but they can practically understand most of human speech.

Hissss!

A scarlet light shot out from its pupils, the murderous intent condensed even more.

Chu Mo's words were no good. He turned to the side and rushed away.

Ah!

A ball of ice breath spit out of the python's mouth. It landed at the location Chu Mo was just standing.

After a burst of icy sounds, the grass at the original place was already covered in a layer of ice, temporarily frozen!

A gust of wind happened to blow by at this time. The frozen grass made a burst of crackling noises. Disintegrated, it fell to the ground still completely frozen!

If Chu Mo had reacted a little bit slower just now, those frozen popsicles would be him!

Chu Mo felt a numbing sensation on his scalp. He looked at the Red Eye Ice Python and said: "Are you playing? Strangers come together by chance.....can we not peacefully get along?"

Chu Mo spoke while slowly retreating at the same time.

The Red Eye Ice Python already considered him prey. It moved peerlessly quick and violent towards Chu Mo.

Chu Mo screamed, turned round, and ran!

His grandfather didn't wish to face this thing. How could a guy like him who just broke through the Yuan Closure fight it?

There are times to be brave and hot-blooded!

The present is not the time to risk one's life.

The running speed of the rank three state is naturally very fast. The Red Eye Ice Python isn't the least bit slow on land even though it is a Yuan beast that lives in the water.

In the blink of an eye, the boy and python already crossed a distance of thousands of feet.

.....

The girl in the blue dress naturally was watching the scene from far away. She watched with interest, then wondered if she should help him.

“If I don't help him, nine times out of ten.....he will die by this python.”

“I feel, Him and I are related together in this purpose.....”

“I'm sick of it, only the heavens know what my purpose is!”

“But I can't let him die.”

“Or I could continue watching. I could rescue him right now, and

he wouldn't necessarily appreciate me. Humph, detestable boy, let him suffer a little bit."

The blue dress girl muttered, her pair of eyes yet locked onto the Red Eye Ice Python, ready to act at any moment.

She yet didn't know, high up in the sky, there is another person!

The black robed Demon Lord's face was even more pale than before. Clear cold pupils watched the scene.

Although he drove Chu Mo away, but this is a doomed road. How could the Demon Lord easily let him go off alone?

High in the empty sky, the Demon Lord could feel the weakening of his body.....continuously intensify.

Originally, he had his mind set on dying.

Being beaten down to this world practically cut off any of his hope!

Finding a successor. He did not wish for his heritage to come to ruin.

But he had no desires for his disciple to get revenge or help him. Given that with his ability he couldn't.

His life, apart from that one deep shadow, had practically no regrets or restraints.

He never took a disciple. If it were not for his limited time, he would have never done such a thing.

Therefore.....he thought very simply.

“Find a naturally talented child. Teach things that should be taught then kick him out!”

“Die or don’t die, does it have anything to do with me?”

‘Anyways, if my heritage breaks at my hands, I cannot face my ancestors after death.’

It is an easy thing to think, but doing.....it is yet another matter.

So long as one doesn’t have a heart of stone, how can they truly be heartless?

Kicking out Chu Mo from the mountain, then Chu Mo runs back. The Demon Lord already knew when Chu Mo bowed at the empty land. To stop caring about one is in fact a difficult thing.

Therefore he grabbed some Yuan beasts to replenish his life, then he secretly followed Chu Mo.

Death, according to him is already unavoidable. Unable to restore himself, it is a sooner or later kind of thing.

His original plan was to find a quiet place to die after passing on his complete teaching.

But he has worry right now, and is no longer unaffected.

He wants to see Chu Mo return to Yellow Flame. He wants to watch Chu Mo reach a certain level then completely be at rest.

This is the voice in the deepest pit of his heart!

Even if he doesn't want to face it, it is inescapable.

“Ah.....”

A rare sight from the Demon Lord. He let out a sigh.

That pair of cold clear pupils observed his disciple. He mumbled watching the little worm chasing after his disciple: “Looks like..... this thing, after all it still has use.”

“Butterfly, you were right. One is never truly free if there is something they care about.”

While he was speaking, a pale little jade bottle appeared in the

Demon Lord's hand. He opened up the cork, and an extremely strong medicine scent came out.

“Seven Revolution Immortal Pills.....”

“At that time, to grab this thing for me, you didn't hesitate, sneaking into the Pill Sect to give it to me.

“Because of this thing, it invoked your entire clan's wrath. Those elders who should die didn't have the slightest bit of compassion towards their own clan member. They smashed your corporeal body, destroying all of your ability.....”

“They imprisoned your Yuan Spirit on the altar. Day and night your spirit flame burned.”

“He he, they are truly ruthless.....truly out of hand!”

“The people of the Pill Sect.....all went over the line. They said this is good. This woman is guilty of stealing the medicine, but she had reasons. Give out a corresponding punishment, this matter is enough.”

“But those animals.....for a little bit of resources, for their selfishness, they unexpectedly acted and suppressed you!”

“My pitiful Butterfly.....”

“They should all die!”

“I should die!”

The Demon Lord revealed a ferocious color from his sharp and pointy featured face. Eyes full of remorse and pain.

“Moreover I.....couldn’t do anything!”

“Couldn’t do anything!”

“The person who should die is me!”

“The person suffering the spirit flame.....it should be me!”

“I originally believed the poison of the Seven Demons could be cured. I wished to resolve this poison after being struck down to the mortal realm, then go rescue you.”

“But I underestimated this poison in the end.....alas I thought too high of myself!”

“I am trash!”

“I cannot cure this poison. I can only wait for death.”

“I already resigned to death, but who would have thought I

would encounter a youth with such frightening talent.....”

“Butterfly, he is truly an outstanding child. You would certainly like him.”

“Forgive my selfishness. I wish to watch him grow up.....”

“Seven Revolution Immortal Pills. One revolution replenishes one year of life.....Butterfly, sorry, wait another seven years for me!”

“This child will be grown after seven years. My soul will come find you. Even if I am scared out of my mind, I will make you free!”

A tear smoothly rolled out of the corner of the Demon Lord’s eye.

Soon after the demon Lord’s hand trembled. He withdrew a medicine pill from the bottle, raised his head, and swallowed.

Chapter 18: Desperate Growth

“Master.....master.....monsters have come, quick save me!”

“Don’t save me and your apprentice will die!”

“Your legacy will be broken!”

Chu Mo ran and yelled at the same time, appearing to be in an amazingly difficult situation.

But in the process of fleeing, he used one of the footwork techniques he had studied from the numerous chants, and he very naturally put it to used.

That footwork technique is one he had just tested from a chant two days ago.

He knew the technique was one to lighten the body. But just like the boxing skill, it is extremely profound and cryptic.

Chu Mo gave up at that time. He planned to first completely learn the boxing skill then learn it.

Chu Mo never thought he would unexpectedly exert his maximum potential in the process of fleeing for his life. He naturally casted out the skill without pondering the meaning!

This foot skill is quite formidable. Chu Mo put it to full use and discovered he was twice as fast as before!

One should know he merely implemented the skill, he is certainly not proficient in this branch of footwork.

But it is too late to be happy. Because after he increased speed, that Red Eye Ice Python that should die.....unexpectedly also increased speed!

“Have you just been feeling like taking a walk? Bastard!”

Chu Mo seethed in anger. He couldn't help but shout for someone to rescue him.

In his opinion, this wouldn't be losing face. His life would soon be gone. What else could he do but yell for help?

The Demon Lord in the sky didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He believed this disciple naturally talented with outstanding meridians. The most important thing is, Chu Mo is smarter than himself!

Persistent and stubborn, the Demon Lord admired Chu Mo's all out effort. Chu Mo wouldn't yield even to his methods.

If it were not for using the little method to blind the eyes of the Immortal Sky idiots, and Seventh Elder biting the hand that feeds him.....making this young person the disciple of the Demon Lord

would have been an impossibility.

Therefore, who could say Chu Mo is a spineless coward afraid of death? The Demon Lord would not agree.

But this child is just the opposite. He is extremely clever, understands the situation, and knows how to use everything to defend himself!

He definitely does not hesitate in times he should risk his life, but in times he should slack off, he was definitely not willing to waste a portion of strength!

This made him a lovable and hateable little thing!

Only such a person can go far!

The Demon Lord's whole Essence, Qi, and Spirit experienced an enormous change in a short moment after eating the Seven Revolution Immortal Pills. All kinds of weakness in his body completely disappeared.

All of the blood in his body recovered to peak status.

His whole body was like enshrouded in an ethereal Qi.

Floating like an immortal!

Hearing Chu Mo's cry for help, he unhappily transmitted a concept: "Idiot! Is the boxing skill you studied a decoration?"

Boom!

Chu Mo felt a miraculous column of light flash in his brain. He ran and slapped his thigh: "I am also a skilled person!"

"That three move boxing skill, do I not comprehend the first move?"

"How could I be so stupid and forget this?"

The Demon Lord used this concept extremely cleverly. Chu Mo thought it was just a flash of an idea. He could never have thought it was the master secretly helping.

Chu Mo turned and charged at the Red Ey Ice Python behind him: "Hello, big worm. If you keep chasing me, I won't be so polite!"

Pu!

The Red Eye Ice Python in hot pursuit didn't have the slightest notion of stopping. Another cold breath sprayed towards Chu Mo. A tree that needed three or four men to wrap around was turned into an ice sculpture in an instant.

Crash!

The Red Eye Ice Python's tyrannical body struck into the large tree soon after, immediately breaking apart the large frozen tree.

Those frozen chunks quickly splashed towards Chu Mo!

“Fine, my good intentions have been taken advantage of. Wait a moment and this kid will rip off your skin and use your flesh for snake soup!”

Chu Mo gritted his teeth, activated the footwork skill, and actually turned, rushing towards the the Red Eye Ice Python.

He raised his hand into a fist.

“I'll beat you to death animal!”

The blue dress girl had already prepared to rescue Chu Mo to make him appreciate her.

“Hmph, this girl wants to know what kind of expression you will reveal after she rescues you!”

The girl in blue raised an eyebrow pleased with herself. Just about raised her hand, yet was surprisingly shocked.

Because that youngster already acted!

The Red Eye Ice Python that had been chasing Chu Mo unexpectedly saw Chu Mo turn and rush towards it. Its blood red pupils shot out an extremely disdainful light.

It's body slightly stopped. That extremely powerful tail advanced towards Chu Mo.....ruthlessly striking.

“Qi, rises from the Dantian, passes through the Tian Shu, strengthens in the Tian Chi.....”

“Via the Tian Quan, Qu Ze, Xi Men, Nei Guan, Da Ling.....Lao Gong.”

“Finally gathering at the Shao Zi, Guan Chong, Zhong Chong, Shang Yang, and Shao Shang.....”

“and strikes out with a spiraling force.....”

Chu Mo snarled.

Boom!

The fist ruthlessly collided together with the Red Eye Ice Python's tail.

The blue dress girl's mouth opened wide in shock. She practically couldn't help but rush over to momentarily rescue Chu Mo.....

That peerlessly powerful python that could easily crush a large tree, unexpectedly.....struck open by Chu Mo's fist!

Blood streamed in the empty sky.

The blue dress girl almost forgot to breathe watching this shocking sight.

Her face held an expression of absolute disbelief.

Chu Mo's confidence greatly increased after the fist struck, He leaped right behind the Red Eye Ice Python using his not yet proficient footwork skill. Then he rushed towards its throat.

Hit where it hurts!

The weak point of the enormous snake is right there!

The immensely powerful tail had been cracked by one fist of the opponent. The Red Eye Ice Python let out a painful hiss, and it also followed with extreme rage!

It basically didn't have enough time to turn around before feeling a deadly aura surround it.

The intelligence of a rank four Yuan beast isn't low. The first reaction the Red Eye Ice Python has to danger isn't to run, but

rather to “[Swish](#)”. It raises up all of the scales around its neck!

[TL: The “swish” is a sound effect describing the sound the snake makes as it raises the scales.]

Each of the scales flashed with a cold light, all extremely sharp and the size of Chu Mo’s palm!

It scares any attempt from the enemy to attack the weak point!

But Chu Mo isn’t the least bit afraid.

This is a time of you die I live. The least bit of hesitation changes a life or death situation!

Chu Mo gritted his teeth: “Little worm.....go die!”

Once again the first move of the three round strike ruthlessly smashed into the already raised.....sharp like knives scales!

The top rank skill used the apex of Yuan power. Taking its power.....implementing it to the maximum!

Common skills that can bring into play thirty to forty percent Yuan power are already considered not bad.

But Chu Mo’s cultivation skill can bring practically ninety percent into play!

The sharp scales easily cut open Chu Mo's fist. Fresh blood..... dripped out instantly.

But Chu Mo vigorously sunk the fist.....ruthlessly smashing this Red Eye Ice Python's weak point.

Boom!

A muffled bang.

The fist gathered a large amount of Yuan power, striking with a loud sound into the python's throat.

Immediately rupturing the inside flesh.

The arteries burst, and the flesh broke apart!

The tyrannical Yuan power wreaked havoc in the Red Eye Ice Python. It made this rank four Yuan beast temporarily insane!

The enormous body madly writhed, crashing and sending Chu Mo flying.

But this Red Eye Ice Python was already struck half dead by Chu Mo's fist.

Although it was madly writhing on the ground, it was just a last ditch effort before death, that's it.

Chu Mo was sent flying backwards dozens of feet. He landed in some underbrush, and his whole body felt like a scattered frame.

He spit out a mouthful of blood and scolded: "Thing that should die, facing death you still want to retaliate against this kid. Do you wish to end in mutual destruction? This is a person that has been hit countless times by the Grand Demon Lord! My body is strong, could I be struck down by you? Dream on!"

Speaking, he unexpectedly climbed up like a person that had nothing happen to him. Chu Mo faced the Red Eye Ice Python and walked over.

But if one carefully looked, they would discover that the back of his dirty dusty clothes.....were all completely drenched!

The legs he walked on both slightly trembled.

The attack just now.....it used up nearly all of this youth's power!

The eyes of the blue dress girl in hiding maintained their shocked color. She looked at the boy's fist dripping with blood completely speechless.

She originally believed him a coward afraid of death. She never

thought he would explode with such madness!

So ruthless!

“Truly a terrifying little monster!”

The blue dress girl slowly came back to her senses after some time. She slightly gained a little bit of respect for the young man in her eyes.

The Demon Lord in the cloud plainly looked at Chu Mo and coldly snorted: “Idiot!”

He turned and left.

Chu Mo looked at his right fist constantly dripping with blood. He gritted his teeth and scolded at the huge python: “Come again and bite me!”

“The tiger didn’t show its power, did you believe this kid is a kitty?”

“Damn you, could you not obediently say in the water? What did you come out for?”

“Is the land your territory?”

“Time to bury your little life here. Is that clear?”

Pff.....

The blue dress girl couldn't help but laugh.

Chu Mo kicked using his footwork skill, fiercely turning. A cold murderous aura flashed in his pupils in that instant.

The small amount of Yuan power in his body momentarily boiled, ready to strike at any time!

Seeing blue dress girl, he immediately relaxed a breath and said: “Why are you still following me?”

“Hmph, is this mountain the territory of your family? Why do you care about where I go?” The blue dress girl gave a lovably arrogant expression. She gave a slanted look at Chu Mo and said: “I didn't know who it was just now, yelling out save me. How did such impressive power appear?”

Chu Mo's face revealed a little embarrassment. He returned a superior look and said: “So what? Was it not killed by me?”

“The one who laughs last is king!”

“Luck, that's it.”

“Kill a little snake and you’re king? Absolute ignorance!”

The blue dress girl spoke and walked over. She kicked the twitching body of the Red Eye Ice Python with a disdainful look: “Little rank four Yuan beast. It doesn’t even have a beast pellet. It’s flesh can only increase power a little bit. Contrary to what one might expect, it’s worthless.”

Chu Mo didn’t wish to respond to her. The bones, flesh, and skin of the Red Eye Ice Python were taken back to auction that one time long ago. It sold for a large amount of money.

His grandfather used the money to compensate for the soldiers killed and injured. It was enough to make sure their families could live well for a lifetime.

How could this blue dress girl say it is worthless?

“Help me out.” Chu Mo pointed at the Red Eye Ice Snake: “Rip off the skin, pull out the meat, and extract the bones.”

“Disgusting!” The blue dress girl was like a little rabbit, instantly jumping: “You want me, a girl, to do that?”

Chu Mo’s lips curled. He pulled out a short sharp knife and started to clean it himself: “Don’t help then don’t help. What does speaking so much nonsense do? If you can’t do it you can’t do it. Is it because you are a girl?”

Even though the snake had already died, the skin was still incredibly tough. Chu Mo had to use a lot of effort.

The blue dress girl watched Chu Mo grit his teeth and struggle. She thought a moment and walked over. Using an unwilling voice she said: “Give me the knife!”

Chapter 19: Withered Shrub

“What are you going to do?”

Chu Mo looked somewhat on guard at the girl.

Blue dress girl unhappily said: “Help you clean the snake! You’re so stupid and weak. How long is it going to take you?”

“Uh.....”

Chu Mo smiled then gave the short knife to the girl.

The maiden didn’t say she was a weak little girl this time. Her actions were neat and sharp. Her actions were extremely graceful even though it was a bloody matter. It was a type of strange beauty.

“Have you done this type of thing often?” Chu Mo asked a little startled.

The maiden was slightly startled and immediately wrinkles her willow eyebrows, an unsure expression: “Yes ah.....why am I able to do this?”

“.....” Chu Mo looked a little depressed. He said to her: “You didn’t really lose your memory right?”

“Lose memory?” The blue dress maiden seriously thought, then nodded: “Must be right!”

“How can you be so certain?” Chu Mo is honestly a little reluctant to trust her words.

“Without a doubt ah, I can’t remember anything. And yet I’m so skilled, it must be amnesia!” The blue dress girl looked with a cute arrogant expression at Chu Mo.

“Then, what is your name?” Chu Mo gave approval in his heart as he watched the girl skillfully clean out the Red Eye Ice Python, and he casually asked.

“My name. Let me think.....” The girl thought a long time, then she spoke: “My name, it seems like.....Qi Xiaoyu.”

“It seems like?” Chu Mo a little depressed, looked at this charmingly beautiful maiden before his eyes: “Are you guessing?”

The girl said feeling a little wrong: “Remembering my name isn’t very easy okay?”

“I have to rack my brains to finally remember with great difficulty!”

“Then, it is Qi Xiaoyu.....” Chu Mo’s mouth twitched, then he asked: “Can you remember anything else besides your name?”

The maiden nodded: “I only remember, I came here to do something. It seems that matter is related to you. I can’t remember anything else.”

“Had to do with me?” Chu Mo looked startled at the maiden: “Big sister can we stop it? We aren’t acquaintances. How could your affairs have anything to do with me?”

The girl returned a supercilious look: “Big brother! I am speaking the truth. Why don’t you believe?”

“It is best to have nothing to do with me.” Chu Mo muttered.

Soon after Chu Mo started a bamboo fire. He waited until the fire pretty much extinguished, until there were only some glowing red coals remaining.

He finally roasted some snake kabobs. He also pulled out some seasoning and evenly sprinkled them on top.

The meat of the rank four Yuan beast was extremely fatty. Oil constantly dripped into the coals and made spattering noises.

A fragrant smell rushed into the nose after a short period of work.

The girl who originally thought it beneath herself puffed her

nose a few times. The she watched food Chu Mo cooked, her mouth dripping with saliva.

“You can actually barbecue?” The girl’s eyes stared at the roasted meat without blinking, and she absentmindedly asked.

“You can’t?” Chu Mo glanced at her.

“This type of thing, how could a girl do it?” The maiden strangely looked.

“.....” Chu Mo was speechless. You can clean a Yuan beast by heart, almost as skilled as my master. Yet you unexpectedly cannot cook, who would believe your words!

Soon after Chu Mo gave her a roasted snake meat kabob. He asked: “What have you been eating the past few days?”

“Me?” The maiden thought a moment then responded: “I don’t need to eat!”

“Don’t need to eat? You aren’t hungry? Who are you trying to deceive?” Chu Mo returned a very condescending look. He was a little worried about this girl’s intelligence.

“Of course I’m not hungry!”

“Are you not eating this?”

“This smelled too good!”

“Fine, you win.”

Continuing on, Chu Mo practically didn't eat anything. Practically everything entered into the belly of not eating, not hungry Qi Xiaoyu.

Chu Mo saw her seemingly never changing stomach. He couldn't help but wonder if she was putting the meat into a storage space.

Finally–

She could eat no more.

Rubbing her full tummy, she said completely satisfied: “Thank you, this is the best thing I've ever eaten!”

She looked a little started at Cho Mo: “Ah? Are you not eating?”

Chu Mo held back the tears, he looked at her blankly, not wishing to comprehend her.

He silently turned his head and continued cooking!

“Hehe, I'm going to go play. I'll come back and play with you!” Qi

Xiaoyu's image flashed, disappearing from Chu Mo's line of sight.

Chu Mo's mouth twitched, and he muttered: "Clean me out then leave.....why kind of style is this?"

But he turned to the side and looked at the neatly arranged snake bones, meat, and skin. Chu Mo felt this girl isn't too bright, and she is a chowhound, but at least she is a little useful.

Chu Mo bundled up the snake bone, meat, and skin on his back after eating.

He originally wanted to put this stuff into his piece of jade, but he didn't want to reveal he has a storage space. Anyways it wasn't too heavy, might as well carry it.

That piece of jade is his biggest secret.

Chu Mo is very happy he comprehended that footwork skill in the life or death situation just now.

Speaking of, his cultivation road is very bumpy. Knowledge is readily available for disciples of other sects. Chu Mo must go through practice to grasp a little meaning.

Disciples of other sects only need a few hours to learn things. While Chu Mo needs several days to learn the same things, and an even longer time to master it.

But there is one point the disciples of other sects cannot compare to.

The solid level Chu Mo grasps from experience is unmatched compared with those other sect disciple!

Real battle experience is also countless times richer than them!

Of course the current Chu Mo doesn't see these things. He only knows studying real skills is not that easy!

Therefore, he is insanely happy every time he learns a new skill.

“It is a pity, apart from Heaven's Will My Will, master never told me the names of other skills!”

“Don't mention large sects, even worldly family clans and small sects skills, they all have mighty names!”

“For instance five tiger decapitating blade, falling meteor sword.....so impressive! A skill one knows is powerful as soon as they hear!”

“The skills I studied.....should I name them?”

Chu Mo deeply pondered a long time, but he couldn't think of an awe-inspiring name that stands apart from the masses.

Somewhat giving up he muttered: “The skill I studied only has three moves. Simply call it ‘One Fist, Two Fist, Three Fist’!”

“Master will find out later. If he loses face I will tell him...”

“Who made you not tell me the names of these skills?”

Chu Mo was at a loss as far as the skill naming matter went. The name isn’t important. As long as the skill is strong enough, then that is is good skill.

Chu Mo didn’t encounter the blue dress girl Qi Xiaoyu over the next several days. He was happy, peaceful, and quiet. He walked in the mountains, continually studying new skills. Although it was bitter, it was yet self-liberating.

The back of Heaven’s Will My Will still had no words. Chu Mo tried several times. He would put Heaven’s Will My Will into the piece of jade and take it back out. He would put it in, then try withdrawing after several days.

It still had no change.

The fortunate part is at Chu Mo’s present state, The Heaven’s Will portain was enough for him to use.

Because of this, he wasn’t especially worried.

Worrying is no use.

Only heaven knows what actually happened.

One day, Chu Mo walked into an open land. A grassland with a three mile circumference. It was a rare sight in this thousands of mile mountain range.

A vast mountain lay at the end of the grassland.

Going up into the sky.

If one wanted to cross here, they either crossed over the mountain, or.....they circled hundreds of miles around.

As for Chu Mo, he naturally didn't wish to circle around.

Chu Mo faced the mountain and directly walked forward.

But Chu Mo felt a burning heat in his chest as soon as he was about to pass through the grassland.

Chu Mo immediately froze.

The last time this feeling appeared is when he received Heaven's Will My Will.

Then, Heaven's Will My Will was sucked into the jade space. After that.....the first page had many more words, and completed the first page of the scripture.

And on the words on the back.....completely gone.

The piece of jade had no other activity after that.

Who would have thought it would start to emit heat here.

“What is going on?” Chu Mo didn't feel good. He slightly wrinkled his brow, stood there, and started to slowly circle back.

Someone who could be favored by the Demon Lord at a glance, there is no need to talk about his intelligence.

Although he didn't dare come to an immediate conclusion, he believed the piece of jade only emits heats when it discovers a treasure. But Chu Mo only held an eighty to ninety percent certainty.

Sure Enough, when Chu Mo slowly turned to a direction, the piece of jade once again would heat up. Seeming to alert Chu Mo.

Chu Mo faced that direction and strode forward.

The burning feeling became stronger, even beginning to scald!

Chu Mo's heart jumped and continuously beat faster. A youth's nature towards uncertain things holds enormous curiosity.

At last, the scalding sensation went away right at the point Chu Mo could no longer bear it.

Chu Mo saw a strange plant at this time.

It is strange, because it is incompatible with the surrounding plants. One can see its existence as soon as they approach.

But no one would have any interest after seeing it!

Because this fantastic oddity has branches like a dragon, but it is a completely withered and dry shrub.

The shrub was only three feet tall. It was an ashy color. There were no leaves on the top, and one couldn't feel a single sign of life.

Chu Mo looked a little foolishly and mumbled: "What you saw is this thing?"

The piece of jade momentarily sent out a trace of heat that scalded him.

"Ah? You can understand my words?"

“Can you scald me again to test?”

“Quick quick, scald!”

But the piece of jade didn’t react again.

Chu Mo’s pursed his lips. He walked over the the shrub, and extended a hand to grab a branch. He muttered: “This dried up dead shrub, what value could it have?”

“Ah?”

Chu Mo muttered, then he froze completely motionless.

Because he unexpectedly couldn’t break this little branch with both hands!

The tree was already completely bent by him, but it didn’t break!

Chu Mo continue to try somewhat unconvinced.....until he bent the shrub around in circles without breaking!

Chu Mo was utterly dumbfounded.

He is a yellow rank three. He has stepped into the Yuan Closure!

This little bush is actually unbreakable?

“How is it possible?”

Chu Mo let go of the branch, and he used his hand to grab the trunk. He used force to pull up–

Boom!

The tree was pulled directly out of the ground. Chu Mo ended up falling on his butt because he used too much force.

Then a huge sucking power passed over, and the shrub disappeared from Chu Mo’s hands.

Chapter 20: The Road Home

“Come!”

Chu Mo muttered. This time he was already experienced. He focused his thoughts and entered into the space of the jade on his chest.

He already didn't need to take the piece of jade out after repeated testing. Chu Mo only need to focus his spirit, think about entering the jade, and then enter.

Chu Mo couldn't help but stare, exposing an incredible expression upon entering. Although he already expected it, but to see the shrub he just pulled out of the ground rooted in the jade space was still a strange feeling.

Heaven's Will My Will was also calmly resting on the green stone that resided in the piece of jade.

It wasn't sucked inside, but placed inside by Chu Mo earlier. After all this is the safest place.

He didn't know if it was an illusion. It seemed this shrub became more lively inside the piece of jade. Chu Mo walked closer to carefully observe. He unexpectedly discovered some needlepoint green colored sprouts coming out of one of the branches.

Chu Mo's eyesight is extremely good, ordinary people couldn't

see it.

“How could this happen?” Chu Mo uncertainly muttered. Then he extended a hand to give it a test. He wanted to see if he could pull out the shrub inside of here.

The result, he strenuously tried for a long time, but this new guest in the jade space was like a towering tree that had taken roots long ago. It was completely motionless now matter how much effort Chu Mo put in!

“Fine, this worthless.....cough cough, this is a god tree that is rarely seen in heaven and on earth. I’ll see you off! Don’t forget my goodness!” Chu Mo was only pretending. He said the words, but his face showed he didn’t believe.

Because he honestly didn’t feel this shrub had any value. Since this piece of jade likes the shrub, the jade can have the it.

Just as Chu Mo prepared to leave, he had a sudden thought. He extended his hand and grabbed Heaven’s Will My Will, then he left the jade space.

After coming outside, he turned over Heaven’s Will My Will and muttered: “I gave you a god tree, did you give me more words?”

The first page didn’t have any change, Turning to the second page, Chu Mo’s vision, it suddenly focused.

“Ah?”

The second page of Heaven’s Will My Will actually has two more lines of words!

“This, is this real?”

Chu Mo carefully read over the two extra lines. He discovered it blended extremely well together with the previous Heaven’s Will chapter. There wasn’t a strange feeling to it at all.

He started to practice the two extra lines of the Heaven’s Will chapter. He actually saw a clear improvement in the amount of Yuan power absorption rate after one large cycle!

The most important part is, this Yuan power is even more pure than the Yuan power he absorbed before. This piece of jade gave him unimaginable benefits after absorbing the shrub.

It was only two extra lines, but Chu Mo clearly understood, these two lines—the value is beyond measure!

“Truly it is quite a thing!” Chu Mo exclaimed in praise, then he said: “Later on, whatever you want, even if you scald me, I will certainly get it for you!”

“Hahahaha, a treasure, it is truly a treasure!”

Chu Mo memorized the two extra lines, then he returned Heaven's Will My Will back into the jade space. He advanced towards the large mountain with a face full of smiles.

Time flew by. Chu Mo had already left master and gone on the road home for over a month.

Several times he encountered low level Yuan beasts that blocked the path. The strongest of them didn't surpass the Red Eye Ice Python. They all became Chu Mo's prey in the end.

Chu Mo's combat strength unknowingly increased rapidly.

The blue dress girl Qi Xiaoyu appeared a couple times. Each time was after Chu Mo had killed a Yuan beast. She would suddenly appear and help Chu Mo clean the beast.

Chu Mo treated her to a large barbecue as a reward. She would fade away after eating her fill. Chu Mo even suspected this girl lives in the vast mountains. Otherwise, how could she be so familiar with the area?

Every time Chu Mo asks Qi Xiaoyu where she goes, she just looks innocently at Chu Mo: "I go play!"

In the end, Chu Mo had no other choice but to pinch his nose and concede that she goes and plays.

This month long life of training gave Chu Mo several benefits.

His sole regret is the piece of jade never gave him another sign.

There was not a single thing in the vast mountain range that caught the jade's eye apart from the shrub.

Chu Mo was still quite happy generally speaking. His state had quickly reached the middle of the third rank after breaking through the Yuan Closure.

This type of progress was unimaginable before.

He normally would have needed one to two years to reach the middle of the third rank after breaking the Yuan Closure. This is only possible with a large amount of natural ability.

And Chu Mo had reached it in one month along the road home.

It could be said this is a small miracle!

Chu Mo carried the Yuan beast bones, meat, and skins on his back. The foodie Qi Xiaoyu naturally looked down upon these things.

But according to Chu Mo, it was all money!

Chu Mo's days weren't that rich despite growing up in the house of a general. It could be said the Fan household was spartan like. It was like a poorhouse compared to those grand chancellor

households.

Chu Mo saw his classmates at school living a life of luxury when he was little. He asked his grandfather: “Why are their lives so good. Why is our house bad?”

Grandfather was silent a long time. He finally said to the young Chu Mo: “If our family was like theirs, wearing brocade garments, eating jade meals, and living in high buildings.....this nation would quickly fall apart! Their extravagant lives will quickly come to an end!”

Grandfather had some mixed feelings when he made this remark and added: “Of course, those people have no morals and are spineless. If the country falls from grace, those high families may not necessarily fall as well. So long as they easily say the words surrender, their extravagant lives can continue on.”

“We aren’t like them. We are soldiers! Our mission is to defend this country. Defend the people of this nation.”

Chu Mo asked at that time: “That includes those spineless people lacking morals?”

The old man laughed, patted Chu Mo’s head, and didn’t answer the question. He said: “You are still too young. One day you will understand. This country is not merely made up of these high officials. There are still millions of citizens!”

“The people we protect is them!”

Chu Mo recollected the memory with his grandfather as he carried the Yuan beast materials. His face revealed a trace of a smile: “Grandfather, you are a true soldier! Your grandson has kept to heart all of your teachings. Didn’t you always want to help the soldiers who were injured and had to leave the military? The ones who couldn’t get any assistance. I think now we can do something about it!”

Although Chu Mo didn’t know the exact value of the things he carried, but he knew it was a small fortune!

One bone of a rank four Yuan beast can sell for an astronomical price in Yellow Flame City.

Yuan beast teeth are rumored to ward off evil spirits. They are even more priceless!

The most basic response of businessmen when they see a rare treasure is to slam money down.

Chu Mo plotted how to spend his money after selling these things. He could first renovate the Fan family household.

The Fan family’s courtyard wasn’t small, but several rooms had fallen into disrepair. They had been in ruin for a long time. There was only one ancient arch that barely supported the dignity of the general.

“Then, I can give the remaining money to my one armed uncle.”

“One armed uncle is very amazing. He was a valiant soldier on the battlefield. He came to the Fan household after the injury, and he made sure the whole Fan house was well kept.”

“I’m afraid the whole Fan household would have fallen apart without one arm uncle.”

“Grandfather has a kind nature. All of the family’s wealth has been distributed. Because he didn’t want to see his subordinates suffer after leaving the military.”

“Grandfather would help no matter how difficult so long as they paid a visit and asked.”

Many people didn’t understand. They believed that a Da Xia General wouldn’t be extremely wealthy, but he certainly wouldn’t be poor. But in fact, grandfather.....he is actually downright broke.

“One arm uncle is much more financially savvy. It is better to give the money to him than grandfather.”

“At least one armed uncle is more clear headed than grandfather. He only helps the people that should be helped.”

Chu Mo muttered, then lightly sighed: “It is a pity I cannot openly enter into Yellow Flame City at this time. Xia Jie.....i do not know if you have [entered into the palace and become a eunuch!](#)”

[TL: Palace eunuchs held a large amount of authority in ancient China. They were given great power because they couldn't have children, and they therefore were not considered a threat to the ruling dynasty.]

“It looks like I should thank you. If you did not slander me, and had honestly plead guilty at that time, I Chu Mo.....would not have such fortune today. I naturally wouldn't have met my master.”

Chu Mo's vision fell upon an endless plain as he spoke. At this time, he had already walked out of the thousands of miles of mountains!

Chu Mo turned and looked at the majestic mountains stretching behind. He was somewhat excited and whispered: “At last I have emerged!”

“This should be the territory if Da Qi!”

Chu Mo squinted. Far away he saw a group of men and horses slowly advancing in his direction.

The other side discovered Chu Mo right as he discovered them. Then, they accelerated their speed towards him.

Chapter 21: Bandit Encounter

Chu Mo wrinkled his brow, then walked into the underbrush to the side.

He wasn't afraid, but he didn't wish to find trouble. The only thought on his mind right now is to quickly return to Yellow Flame City in Da Xia. He wanted to take his acquisitions and share with grandfather.

“Stop!”

“Don't run!”

“Talking to you little beggar!”

A shout sounded out from far away, coming from the group of people.

Soon after, that group of people spurred the horses and rushed towards Chu Mo.

Chu Mo is young and inexperienced, but a trace of anger flashed across his face full of heroic spirit. Based on what do they call me little beggar? He was extremely sensitive to this name. It made him unable to restrain his emotions and think about that encounter below the lonely mountain peak.

But dropping his head and looking at his clothes, Chu Mo's mouth twitched, somewhat in despair.

Because right now he indeed looked like a little beggar. He looked completely different than that time under the lonely mountain.

Chu Mo hadn't washed his clothes. The Demon Lord isn't a nanny, and naturally didn't think of these things.

Chu Mo had been exposed to the elements and fought many battles along the road. The clothes he wore were already ragged.

Bushy black hair, completely scattered, bundles of Yuan beast items, and the ragged clothes, made him look like a wild and savage person!

The opposing troops, a dozen total, quickly surrounded Chu Mo. They looked at him harboring evil intentions. Two of them had good eyes. They saw the items on Chu Mo's back, and couldn't help but let out startled yelp.

“Heavens, this little beggar is carrying Yuan beast articles!”

“Not bad, it is vibrating with Yuan Power!”

“Hahaha, I see rank three Yuan beast skin! We are rich!”

“I never thought we would get such a huge gain today. If the

other troops knew they would certainly be envious enough to kill us.”

“You spoke correctly. They certainly wouldn’t admire us.....they would envy!”

“Envy, right, envious, hahaha, Lao Wang is cultured!”

The whole group laughed. No one placed Chu Mo in their eye.

He looks like a thirteen or fourteen year old youth, and he wears ragged clothes. Anyone who met Chu Mo would look down upon him.

At this time, a middle aged man from among the group slowly strolled over on a tall mare. He looked down upon Chu Mo, and his body carried a very strong baleful aura.

He didn’t speak, seeming to want the little beggar to make a fool of himself.

He often did this. The man very much liked the helpless expressions of opponents when they were suppressed by his pressure.

But he miscalculated this time.

His Yuan power fluctuated. At most he is a peak rank two,

basically unable to give Chu Mo any pressure.

Therefore, Chu Mo strangely looked at the middle aged man and asked: “What are you doing?”

The middle aged man arrogantly smiled, but he didn’t pay attention to the question in Chu Mo’s words.

‘What are you doing’ and ‘What are you trying to do’ are two completely different things. He only believed the little beggar couldn’t resist the enormous pressure coming from his body.

“Little thing, where did the things you carry come from? Were they not stolen? Ah?”

The words the middle aged man spoke were very cold. Full of intimidation, a normal thirteen or fourteen year old would be scared.

Everyone else teasingly smiled, looking like they were determined to eat Chu Mo.

“You want to rob me?” Chu Mo didn’t reply to the middle aged man’s words. The tip of his eyebrow raised, and his handsome face flashed a cold color.

“What robbing, you are a little animal. You actually dare steal the Yuan beasts we hunt. Isn’t it a crime?” A thirty year old man with dark skin lead his reigns and rushed towards Chu Mo. He saw Chu

Mo didn't move as he approached, and he pulled up on the reins. The horse's two legs came high in the air and promptly stopped there. The other people immediately applauded.

“Haha, Zhao Laosan's riding skill is brilliant!”

“Ah, he is worthy of the most talented horseman title in our group!”

“That little beggar is scared stiff, hahaha!”

Chu Mo smiled extremely indignant. He never thought he would run into highway robbers as soon as he left the mountains.

Chu Mo raised his head and looked at the dark skinned youth. He seriously said: “I killed these Yuan beasts myself. As such, you all are wrong!”

“Huh? This little thing, are you arguing with us?” The dark skinned youth looked like he had seen the funniest thing in the world. He couldn't help but laugh.

The other men all began to resound with laughter. They felt this little beggar is truly too naive. As far as Chu Mo saying ‘I killed these Yuan beasts myself’, it was automatically ignored.

Who could believe!

Chu Mo seriously said: “Really, I’m not cheating you all. You don’t want to cause me trouble, otherwise.....”

“Little bastard!” The dark skinned youth coldly shouted, interrupting Chu Mo’s words. He raised up his horsewhip and ruthlessly cracked towards Chu Mo’s head.

Obviously, he had wasted enough time and prepared to act!

Crack!

The whip made an enormously loud crisp sound in the air.

This whip lashing would certainly split a person’s skull if it landed!

The other people didn’t show a trace of compassion. They all had an expression like watching a show.

Chu Mo’s pupils coldly flashed. His image faltered. Raising a hand, Chu Mo grabbed the whip that cracked towards him: “I still haven’t finished speaking. Not only are you ugly, but you are also rude!”

He pulled using force–

“Ah!” The dark skinned man let out a panic-stricken cry, and he was pulled down from the horse and thrashed into the ground,

making 'Peng' noise.

The surrounding immediately became dead quiet.

Everyone looked at the scene dumbstruck, completely not believing their own eyes.

Who would have thought this little beggar would actually have so much strength, able to pull a full grown strong man down from a horse. Even more unbelievable is this extraordinarily skilled, because they didn't dare block that fierce whip.

Chu Mo grabbed the whip, and he tranquilly looked at the crowd of people: "Enough? Seeing people's wealth and having evil ideas, stealing the treasures of others. All of you are lowly. I don't wish to cause a disturbance. Leave."

"Ah.....try to kill me, little animal.....shit, what are you all still staring for? Cripple him!" The dark skinned youth [**](#) and yelled at the same time.

[TL: ** is in raws]

A fierce light revealed in the other men's eyes. They stared at Chu Mo like wolves staring at their prey.

The previous middle aged man coldly laughed: "Little bastard, I never thought you would be skilled, you really know your stuff. Everyone grab him together!"

The remaining men jumped off their horses, grabbed out their weapons, and moved to circle around Chu Mo after hearing the orders.

“Little animal, don’t blame us if you get hurt. Tactfully give us the stuff you are carrying. I guarantee you won’t die. Otherwise you will be lacking an arm and a leg.....even your little life could be thrown away. Do not doubt our viciousness!” The middle aged man antagonistically looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo also indignantly looked at the middle aged man: “Do you all truly want this?”

The middle aged man trembled from Chu Mo’s look, but soon after he became furious. This is the first time in all these years he has been scared by a thirteen or fourteen year old ignorant child. Other people would die of laughter if word got out.

“Little animal, don’t propose a toast you aren’t prepared to drink!” The middle age man coldly said.

“Lao Wang, what are you still talking trash with him for? Cripple him!” The dark skinned youth struggled up from the ground. His face was full of dirt and grass, and his nose was bleeding. He looked to be in an extremely bad state, and he was entirely furious.

“Kill!” The middle aged man looked into Chu Mo’s pure pitch black pupils that emitted a distinctly cold ray of light. For some reason he felt lacking in confidence. The middle aged man then immediately came to a decision after hearing his partner’s words.

A dozen people snarled one after the other. They rushed towards the thirteen year old youth.

It is unknown. It could be their intense hatred. Where would one think that a group of adults would kill a teenage child for their goods.

Chu Mo stood there in tattered clothes. Ice-cold pupils faced the vicious group of men, awe-inspiring and fearless.

“Little animal, go die!” A youth wearing leather armor flourished a large knife. He ruthlessly slashed towards Chu Mo’s head. This knife wanted Chu Mo’s life.

Weng!

The thick heavy large knife emitted a heavy piercing sound in the moment it slashed at Chu Mo’s head!

Chu Mo started his footwork skill, and his image flashed like a demon. Extending his left hand–

A slap sound!

He slapped the surface of the large knife with a powerful amount of force. The youth could no longer hold on, and it fell to the ground.

Chu Mo charged in front of the man in the blink of an eye. Picking up the right arm, a ruthless fist boomed towards the youth's face.

Crash!

A thunderous fist.

Yellow rank three dragon-like power ruthlessly crashed into the youth's face, sending out a thud.

Crack!

The young man's face made a sound of bones shattering into small pieces. His whole person was like being struck by a mountain.

He was ruthlessly sent flying dozens of feet away, fainting on the spot.

Continuing on, Chu Mo used his elbow to fiercely strike into a man's chest that was preparing to steal from him.

Crack!

Another bone disintegrating sound. The man screamed as he was tossed backwards.

Chu Mo was enraged. This group of people's robbing tactics were merciless and precise. Heaven knows how many people they have done this to in the past.

Kindness to enemies changes into cruelty for oneself.

This is what his grandfather taught him.

"The enemies on the battlefield, although they have families, ones they love, and their own stories..."

"But war is war! If you are charitable, your comrades, your family, your hometown.....they will be trampled!"

Therefore—

Chu Mo no longer held back as he faced these vile robbers.

Another two men suffered heavy losses from Chu Mo in the blink of an eye.

The power of a middle yellow rank three could not be resisted by a group with only one yellow rank two.

Although Chu Mo was one person, but he was like a human shaped high level Yuan beast. He dashed left and right through the group of people. Seven or eight people collapsed to the ground in a

short period of time, wailing unable to stand up.

There was only the middle aged man and three other men remaining. They looked at each other, and they couldn't help but step back.

They could see fear concentrated in the eyes of their partners.

As well as regret!

They would never have thought in their wildest dreams that a thirteen year old teenager would have such terrifying combat ability. Then finally thought of the words this teenager said before.

“I killed these Yuan beasts myself!”

They sensed this young man wasn't lying. He actually told the truth!

Where did this terrifying little monster come from?

Could it be a disciple from one of those large sects?

The middle aged man's heart held unparalleled regret.

A moment of greed, Not eating the fish could make who whole house smell, it could even influence the lord's affairs.

If it is like this, it is endless regret.

It would be great if one could turn the clock back.

But where is such medicine for regret in this world?

Chu Mo looked at the middle aged man and coldly said: “Had enough? Do you wish to continue?”

The middle aged man’s mouth violently twitched. He looked at Chu Mo, gnashed his teeth, and said: “What do you still want?”

Chapter 22: Night Pursuers

“How can you ask me what I want?”

Chu Mo looked at the middle aged man: “The people who stopped me are you!”

“You are the ones who want to rob me!”

“Now when you can’t beat me, you ask me what I want?”

“You all are the ones who have been applying the pressure from the beginning to the end!”

The middle aged man immediately relaxed his breath. He secretly thought: ‘Although this little thing is alarmingly powerful, but in the end his is still a child and rather soft. If it was an adult, I’m afraid he wouldn’t let us leave here alive.’

The middle aged man revealed a trace of a bitter smile while thinking: “This group was unaware of this little hero in the past. We have offended you, and are truly sorry.”

He bowed in respect to Chu Mo, then continued saying: “We have received the proper punishment, look.....my brothers have all suffered serious injuries. Could you.....release us? Let them receive aid? Otherwise they will all die!”

Chu Mo looked at the middle aged man, and he struggled a lot on the inside.

He didn't blame idiots. Chu Mo clearly remembered the things his grandfather taught him when he was little. There could be endless trouble if he releases this group of people. He carries a large treasure, and it would be a miracle if this group returned home and didn't cause trouble.

Continuing on this road could become even more difficult!

But knowing a matter, and acting.....yet are two different things.

No matter how you say it, he is only thirteen. It would be hard for him to raise the knife and kill unless it was true deep hatred.

Chu Mo hesitated, the good side won out in the end. He looked at the middle aged man and seriously said: "It is useless to use your words to fool me. You are all horrible people!"

"You appear to be a group of adventurers, but as soon as you see a wealthy person, you immediately surround and rob them. Obviously in the past.....you all have done these types of things!"

The middle aged man was frightened back a step, and his face revealed an embarrassed color as he spoke: "You misunderstood.....we, we aren't like you said, only.....we only saw little hero is young, and we wanted to tease you, really....."

Chu Mo looked at him and said: “Today I won’t kill you all, but remember. If in the future I run into bandits, as soon as I find out they are related to you, you had better say your prayers. Hope you never see me again.”

“This world is very large. The heavens and the earth are vast. But sometimes, this world is very small, maybe we’ll meet again.”

“You all best behave!”

Chu Mo spoke, looked at the middle aged man, and lead along a horse he said: “This horse is my compensation!”

Finished speaking, he got on the horse and rode out.

A soon as Chu Mo left his line of sight, the middle aged man’s face revealed a vile expression as he ruthlessly stomped: “He should die!”

The several uninjured men helped assist those on the ground unable to get up. A man in his twenties cried out: “Lao Wang, we were toyed around with by that little animal. He is too severe.....”

“How?” The middle aged man had a baleful aura. He gritted his teeth as he asked.

“That child.....crippled several of our brothers, the Yuan Qi is broken.....they can no longer use their Yuan power, waa waah!”

“Cry you baby!” The middle aged man snarled, then he gritted his teeth and said: “What a little animal, truly savage. What is the difference between crippling our people and killing them?”

“He even threatened me before leaving. Little thing, if I let you walk peacefully through the grassland, this boss’s name will be turned upside down!” The middle aged man roared as he made the oath.

The young man scolded just now by [Lao Wang](#) weakly said: “Your name will still be written the same if it is turned upside down.....”

[TL: The man’s name is “老王” which translates to ‘Old King’. The ‘王’ wang portion is what he is referring to.]

“You scram!” The middle aged Lao Wang kicked the young man over. Then he blew out a big whistle.

The strange thing is, no noise came out. But a black outline appeared in the sky after a moment. A hawk actually descended from the sky and landed on Lao Wang’s shoulder.

Lao Wang pulled out a pen and piece of paper. He quickly wrote a couple lines and tied the paper to the hawk’s leg. Then he pulled out a piece of meat and to give it.

The hawk took the piece of meat in its mouth, extended his wings, and flew high up into the sky.

Lao Wang finally heaved a sigh of relief: “The child is carrying gold bricks into a busy city.....you want to die, I can give it to you!”

But Chu Mo was galloping out of the grasslands after he snatched the horse.

Chu Mo vaguely remembered this grassland. His grandfather had mentioned, located to the north of Da Qi is a place that belongs to Da Qi in name.

But in reality, the power is held in the hands of the wandering herdsman clans.

This grassland is very fertile, and it produces top level war horses.

Three fifths of the horses in Da Qi’s military come from these grasslands. But it is extremely difficult to reign them in.

Da Qi has fought several times with the herdsman clans, but they have never been successful.

Those herdsman clans are matchlessly familiar with these plains. Furthermore their policy is: “Hit and run’. Therefore, the grassland is the greatest headache for successive dynasty rulers of Da Qi.

The relationship between Da Qi and Da Xia couldn't be called cordial, they could even be called rivals.

It is unknown how many times they have fought since ancient times. Only the past twenty years have been very peaceful. Apart from a few minor conflicts, the great majority of times the two sides are on friendly terms.

But grandfather said the peace won't last long. Da Qi has been sharpening the knife these past few years. They have adopted an appeasement policy to the herdsman in the north, but in reality, they have enacted several secret plans.

The northern grasslands will be captured as soon as these plans erupt. At that time, Da Qi will have a well trained and powerful army.

Then the war with Da Xia will quickly approach.

"Since this time I have to traverse the grasslands, why not explore the actual situation? I can give grandfather some useful information when I return!" Chu Mo rode into the wind, squinted his eyes, and thought secretly.

"Hey, why did you release those men? They clearly want to kill you!"

A crisp voice like a lark sounded out behind Chu Mo. Chu Mo wasn't even alarmed, because Qi Xiaoyu elusively appears this way

every time.

“That group of people already can no longer resist. Moreover several of them were crippled by me. They can no longer use Yuan power if they recover later on. They can only be an ordinary person in this life. This type of punishment is not enough?” Chu Mo didn’t turn around. He only stopped his horse and plainly spoke.

“I feel it isn’t enough.” Qi Xiaoyu spoke. She went before Chu Mo, looked at the horse, and said: “You should know. The leader immediately sent a message after you left. I’m afraid your road won’t be so peaceful.”

Chu Mo angrily said: “I knew it! That group of shameless people couldn’t have any credibility!”

Qi Xiaoyu looked in his eye: “Since you knew, why did you release them? Certainly directly killing them is more clear cut? It saves a lot of regret.”

Chu Mo blankly looked at Qi Xiao Yu and said: “How can you be so cruel hearted?”

Qi Xiao Yu immediately said annoyed: “How can you say that to me? I have been kind to you, yet you call me cruel hearted. I refuse to acknowledge you!” Finished speaking, her image flashed and floated far away.

The remaining Chu Mo blankly stared for a long time. Then he

subconsciously shook his head and muttered: “Could it be I am wrong?”

He sighed. The thirteen year old revealed a slight pondering look on that handsome yet young and inexperienced face. He sat on the horse, slowly moving, and continuously contemplated.

Many times right and wrong is not absolute.

It is really far-fetched for a young thirteen year old to be cold blooded and merciless, decisively slaughtering.

The moon and the stars hung in the sky into the night. The line of sight was very good, and the heavens and earth were tranquil.

Chu Mo’s heart was yet uneasy. He felt what he said to Qi Xiaoyu during the day seemed a little excessive.

This girl has been very helpful along the road despite being mysterious and elusive. Although they didn’t speak often, but at least he counted her as a friend.

“Perhaps, my words today wounded her. Will she refuse to speak to me later?” Chu Mo laid in the grass and looked into the stars somewhat regretful.

The horse he snatched from the robbers peacefully ate grass to the side.

Suddenly, Chu Mo heard a burst of hoof stomps extremely far away. It seemed to advance in his directions.

Chu Mo's thoughts began to act. He immediately saw a black shadow under the moonlight flying towards him.

"They deserve to die!" Chu Mo at last understood. His opponent had continuously monitored him.

Chu Mo jumped on the horse after muttering, and he galloped in the opposite direction.

Torches suddenly lit up behind him, and several arrows landed not far away.

Chu Mo was alarmed and angry at the same time. It seems this group isn't going to give up. Chu Mo thought while galloping on the horse: "Qi Xiaoyu, you were right. It is best to kill these people right away. Otherwise there is endless trouble!"

"I made the mistake of being soft-hearted!"

"It is my fault!"

Chu Mo looked behind. Several riders appeared in the far away shadow.

“Chase, don’t let him escape!”

“That child is carrying a large amount of Yuan beast meat, bones, and skin. A small fortune!”

“Pursue him, us brothers can divide up a large fortune, drink wine from bowls, and have a feast!”

Ao Ao Ao!

Wild howls and cheers sounded under the grassland’s night sky.

A group of forty to fifty riders formed a large shape and madly pursued Chu Mo.

Chapter 23: Kill Or Be Killed

Chu Mo was furious inside. He knew this certainly had to do with releasing those men earlier in the day.

Chu Mo wouldn't fear fifty plus riders in normal circumstances.

He is a yellow rank three.....using dragon-like power, extinguishing fifty cavalry men wouldn't be too difficult under normal circumstances.

But Chu Mo yet feared that there were people similarly as powerful as himself among the horsemen.....possibly even more powerful.

Even if their power is a little less than his own, this many people together is an enormous threat.

After all, that group of people already saw his power during they day. They couldn't possibly withhold that information when they passed the message. Because of this, these people in all likelihood are aware of his power.

Since they know, and they still dare approach, that is enough to explain the problem.

Chu Mo didn't panic. He guided his horse to the east and directly charged. If he kept going along this route, then he would ultimately enter into the ice-field.

Of course, Chu Mo couldn't really enter into the ice-field. The pursuers behind wouldn't allow him to enter.

Whoosh!

An extremely intense air-piercing noise.

Chu Mo felt an extremely ice-cold sense transfer from behind. He pushed down flat against the horse, and a sharp arrow grazed past his back.

Chu Mo was covered in cold sweat. That arrow would have hit him if he had reacted the slightest bit slower.

He would be killed or seriously injured as soon as he was hit.

The horse below already started to sweat from high speed running. Its gasps for air became rough.

Chu Mo knew the horse was already approaching its limit. It would collapse sooner or later if this continued on.

Chu Mo seized an opportunity. He suddenly jumped from the high speed horse as he passed by a stretch of grassland that was as tall as a person. After rolling several times, he burrowed into the grassland and concealed himself.

The horse he was originally on kept running far away before it stopped because of inertia.

These are well trained horses. They won't easily run off when their master leaves.

Chu Mo saw the sight from within the grass. His brows wrinkled somewhat losing hope.

He originally wanted the horse to run far away to attract the attention of some people. He never thought it would actually stop.

This certainly wasn't a good place to stay. Chu Mo started his footwork skill, and he used the underbrush as a screen to rapidly flee east.

The horsemen discovered the riderless horse at this time. They immediately spread in all directions to find Chu Mo's footprints.

It is a pity for them the grass is too high. Don't mention a teenager, even a full grown man would completely disappear.

"Search, search everywhere. Do not let this little animal flee!"

"The worth of the things he carries, it is worth several years military.....cough cough, worth several years of living lavishly!"

"Brothers, whoever finds this little animal will receive the chief

reward!”

A burly dark man on a black horse shouted.

The riders immediately rumbled cheers, then they went searching in all directions.

“Boss, found it. This kid is cunning. He unexpectedly jumped from the horse and used the underbrush as a screen to flee!” A rider discovered Chu Mo’s tracks and the direction he fled in.

The dark man walked over and took a look. He coldly smiled: “Idiot, you want to use your two legs to flee from this grassland? Even if you are a Yuan Closure warrior.....it is not enough!”

‘Chase! He can’t have run far!’

Under the guidance of two skilled trackers, they advanced in the direction Chu Mo fled.

But finding the traces of Chu Mo with torches in the night isn’t that easy. Because of this, the riders broke into five small units. Each unit was built of ten men.

They spread out about in intervals over a few miles, and mutually watched each other. They advanced in the direction of Chu Mo together.

Chu Mo indeed didn't flee far. He didn't think to flee!

He wants revenge!

The first thing that rider said wasn't wrong. If one wants to flee from horses on two legs from this grassland.....even if they have broken through the Yuan Closure, it is still not enough.

A person could maintain high speed for short distances. But as the time grows, Yuan power will be completely exhausted.

Therefore, in this place, one must not believe their two legs can outrun a horse.

Chu Mo also understood this, and he didn't think to rely on his two legs to surpass these horses. In other words, he didn't think to flee!

The things that occurred today had a great impact on him. His moment of goodness brought himself endless trouble. The people wanting to grab him right now.....he's afraid they brought the cavalry!

"If I ever run across you all.....I won't let you go!" Chu Mo's young clear pupils flashed a trace of cold severe color.

The purity of youth was slowly replaced by anger.

The seventh elder used a large amount of Yuan power in the past to rush to Yellow Flame City. It was all to kill his grandfather and cover up something that was a near impossibility of happening.

Far away in the Xia Family, the imperial family was fully aware the fault lied within their own younger generation. Did they not want to kill Chu Mo in the first moment?

“Those great men, mighty and powerful, and yet so careful and cautious. I am a youth, alone on this desolate grassland, but I send out this good hearted bullshit?” The eyes of Chu Mo coldly flashed as he lay hidden low in the bush.

Borrowing the darkness of night, he hid extremely well.

It was extremely difficult for the skilled scouts to discover him. Don't forget Chu Mo grew up in the military! He is extremely familiar with these matters.

Step step.....step step.

A burst of slight horse hoofs sounded.

It was very light. One wouldn't be able to hear it if it weren't for the stillness of night.

Chu Mo secretly thought: ‘This group of men.....they are not quite like ordinary robbers. This way of extreme caution is like real soldiers!’

“Don’t tell me.....” Chu Mo eyes slightly squinted, and he made a conjecture.

The opponent is extremely crafty. They are still extremely cautious even though they don’t know Chu Mo is hiding here, carefully walking in the high grass.

Chu Mo’s thought were extremely tense. He watched as the grass not far away from him slightly move with unmatched focus.

At last, a rider appeared in Chu Mo’s line of sight.

‘It is good if I can fully understand his state!’ Chu Mo quietly thought.

The jade on Chu Mo slightly heated up, and at the same time a piece of information appeared in his mind.

“Yellow rank two, rank two physique, no illness.”

“Ah?” Chu Mo was slightly startled. He thought: ‘What just happened? Don’t tell it is my jade?’

It was too late to think more. That rider already approached Chu Mo’s hiding location.

In the instant Chu Mo thought to reach out a hand, a voice

sounded from far away: “Discover anything?”

“No, that little thing is much more cunning than we thought!” The yellow rank two rider replied, then he prepared to leave.

‘Crafty fart! I’ll start with you!’ Chu Mo snarled inside. He burst out of the underbrush. The short knife glimmered in hand and slid towards the rider’s throat!

Pu!

Carnage erupted.

The rider stared at the boss, eyes filled with disbelief. His body limply fell down from the horse.

Chu Mo extended a hand, and softly set the rider on the grass.

The horse turned around, seeming to not realize what happened.

Chu Mo’s heart incessantly beat. The short knife in his hand somewhat quivered.

This is his first time murdering someone!

A life ended in his hands like this!

This feeling wasn't the slightest bit good. Chu Mo continuously reminded himself: 'If you didn't act, the dead person would certainly be you!'

Chu Mo's heart finally recovered a trace of calmness after a long time.

Chu Mo said to himself and he looked at the dead rider on the ground: 'Sorry, if you didn't wish to kill me, would I have acted against you?'

He stripped the armor off of the rider and placed it on himself. Thinking a moment, Chu Mo also took the rider's long knife. He placed the Yuan beast meat, bones, and skins inside of the jade space.

Then he got on the horse and slowly advanced towards the direction of that other voice just now.

"Damn, this little bastard should die. He's truly matchless in cunning. How long do you think he can hide? He's offended boss, let's burn down the whole field!" A short-tempered rider loudly mumbled to himself.

"Don't, if you set the place on fire, our fun will be over. This clear weather has made the whole grassland dry. A fire could burn for several days and nights!" Another rider said.

"Yes, don't worry, that child basically can't hide in the daylight

tomorrow! Apart from the son's of Wang Ting that should die, who is more familiar with this grassland than us?" The third rider spoke.

"Been here for many years, all quickly forgotten what hometown is like." The fourth rider chipped in.

"Right, reckon it won't be long before we can go home!" A low voice sounded out.

Chu Mo thought: 'These men.....as expected they aren't that simple!'

He raised a long saber at this time, and rode towards the group of men.

"The night isn't good for searching. I think we should search tomorrow in the daylight! That boy can't run far in the grassland!" A rider two hundred feet from Chu Mo said.

Chu Mo didn't speak. He lifted the long saber and kicked the horse. The horse neighed and rushed towards that person.

"Team leader Cao, what are you? You discover....." The words of the man two hundred feet away fell. Chu Mo's horse had already rushed before him. The raised saber advanced towards the rider's head, hacking down.

The heavy and sharp saber flashed a cold light in the sky.

Kacha!

The rider's head was hacked in two on the spot!

A mixture of blood and brains instantly flowed out.

The rider was killed on the spot!

“Ah! Not good! He isn't one of ours. It's that little animal!” A rider personally witnessed the sight from no so far away, and he screamed out

But these words became his last on the earth.

Chu Mo's saber horizontally slashed, directly dropping his head to the floor.

A cavity of blood spouted out.

“[Ou!](#)”

[TL: Vomiting sound.]

Chu Mo felt his organs churn inside, and he couldn't help but dry vomit. But this actions didn't cease in the slightest.

He rushed towards the third rider!

Chapter 24: Shocking Blade

“He should die.....kill him!”

“Kill, don’t let him live!”

The rider who spoke is the one with the deep voice. He is also the captain of the fifty plus horsemen.

His voice is full of anger and fear!

The information he received before said a thirteen or fourteen year old youth was carrying a fortune in Yuan beast meat, bones, and skin. But his skill is extremely high, and is suspected to be a large sect disciple.

This group of people originally didn’t wish to provoke a large sect disciple. Because there would be endless trouble as soon as they were discovered. They wished to sneakily murder him and destroy the evidence.

Otherwise, these men couldn’t withstand the retaliation of those protected by the major sects.

But the intelligence said this child is alone and carrying a large amount of Yuan beast meat, bones, and skin. The value is worth 12,000 gold at the very least!

12,000 gold. This is a substantial number for big business tycoons, let alone these people who spend bitter days on the grasslands.

People die for wealth. Beasts die for food.

Wealth is enough to drive people crazy when it reaches a certain amount.

The first rank two rider killed by Chu Mo is a middle level captain for this group of horsemen. He is a backbone for the group of riders and a close aid of the main captain.

His death made the main captain of the horsemen greatly distressed, and he abhorred this teenager to the extreme.

He finally understood the words in the message. This teenagers strength is extremely powerful. They were not empty words. But now it is too late. The matter has already happened like this. One can only bite the bullet and proceed.

Slash!

A knife flashed by. The third rider, not even a Yuan rank one, was cut down by Chu Mo.

Chu Mo charged at the fourth person!

The main captain of the cavalry men was already quickly becoming insane. He waved his blade, rushed towards Chu Mo, and roared: “What a ruthless little animal.....today I must kill you!”

Buzz!

That horse rider held a pole-arm. It had an extremely long handle. It was completely made of metal, and had a three foot long blade.

The long blade whirled through the air, chopping towards Chu Mo, and it made an enormous smothering noise.

Chu Mo thought: What is this person’s strength?

But the jade on his chest didn’t react this time. Chu Mo’s mouth twitched. The blade was already chopping towards him at this time.

Chu Mo gritted, horizontally moving the saber in hand.....

Clang!

An enormous sound like thunder.

The horse below Chu Mo couldn’t help but neigh and retreat several steps backwards.

Looking at the saber in hand, an enormous notch was unexpectedly chopped out!

“What enormous power!” Chu Mo shook inside. He had the most basic judgement towards this person’s strength: ‘At least.....the same as myself. A warrior that has broken the Yuan Closure! He has dragon-like power! Otherwise his blade absolutely couldn’t be this mighty.’

Unbeknownst to Chu Mo, the main captain was even more shocked. He couldn’t help but ask: “You.....how old are you? How can you possess this type of power?”

“Reduce the garbage talk, eat my blade!” Chu Mo’s inner ferociousness was aroused by his opponent, and his blood started to heat up.

He raised the long saber with the huge notch taken out and chopped towards the opponent.

This blade is one of the chants Chu Mo had learned, and it is a most profound method!

This blade technique has eight steps altogether. It has the most moves of the chants the Demon Lord gave him.

At the same, it is also the most profound!

Chu Mo up until now only barely comprehended the superficial knowledge of the first blade.

But this little bit of superficial knowledge is world shattering when put into practice!

The blade slashed, the space between heaven and earth, an incomparably blinding ray of light.

Like lightning!

All directions, everything filled with an extreme terrifying murderous aura!

The surrounding riders that had prepared to charge and their horses were enveloped by this murderous aura.

The riders hearts gave birth to intense terror in an instant. The legs of the horses beneath them couldn't help but become weak and kneel on the ground. The riders on top were all thrown off.

The main captain's ice-old face filled with disdain as he originally watched Chu Mo wield the blade.

He didn't believe this teenage brat's accomplishments in the blade could exceed a battle-soaked thirty year old warrior like himself.

But this thinking scattered to the winds in an instant.

The captain's eyes filled with a dismayed color as he watched this stunning otherworldly blade. His mouth slightly stretched open as if wanting to scream something.

But, there was no opportunity!

Poof!

The blade light, the saber with the enormous notch jeered. From top to bottom.....the main captain of the cavalrymen split into two halves.

This continued to his horse below.

This blade carried the force of a thunderbolt, unstoppable!

Even Chu Mo himself never thought his own blade would unexpectedly have this enormous might.

“Captain.....captain died!”

“Captain was killed!”

“Captain died!”

These several riders that fell from the horses, yet didn't maintain serious injuries, were all extremely terrified inside. They howled and stretched their legs, wildly fleeing as far away from Chu Mo as possible.

“Captain? They are military?” Chu Mo's pupils coldly flashed. In for a penny, in for a pound, Chu Mo prepared to thoroughly wipe out the cavalrymen!

At this time, a sharp arrow searched, breaking through the air, right towards Chu Mo like lightning. In practically the blink of an eye, it appeared before Chu Mo's face.

Chu Mo activated the footwork skill, slightly startled, and flashed to the side.

Whoosh!

The arrow brushed past Chu Mo's cheek carrying a sturdy wind. It gave Chu Mo's cheek a sharp pain.

“That archer.....really strong!”

Chu Mo shot towards that direction. There wasn't even a trace of a person over there.

Obviously the opponent didn't want to face him. He only prepared a surprise attack.

The far away riders heard the cries of their comrades. They gathered toward that side one by one.

Chu Mo thought: 'If it wasn't for that archer, killing these men would have been a piece of cake. It would be best to take out that archer, but it's a pity he is very crafty. I reckon he won't give me an opportunity. If I turn around and flee, he will inevitably surprise attack me again. I'm afraid those riders will also circle me if I stay here.

Comparing the two, Chu Mo would rather let those cavalrymen encircle him. Because the formation of the riders will make it so that archer won't have a way to sneak attack!

Furthermore he also has enough confidence to break out from their encirclement.

He made up his mind to not eagerly flee. Chu Mo would borrow the terrain to hide from the archer's grasp.

Those riders were all well trained. Although they encircled Chu Mo, they didn't hastily approach. They formed a large circle far away from him.

"Bastards!" Chu Mo cursed. Chu Mo already came to a conclusion. This group of men certainly aren't normal people. It is very possible they are what grandfather spoke of..... one of the 'tricks' Da Qi has set up in the grassland!

“That little animal already broke through the Yuan Closure. Otherwise Captain certainly wouldn’t have been taken out! Everyone be extra careful. Don’t let him approach close. Use arrows at him!” A rider yelled out.

Soon after, dozens of soldiers pulled bows out one by one and notched arrows. They advanced in the direction Chu Mo hid.

Woosh woosh woosh!

An intense sound broke through the sky. Dozens of arrows shot towards Chu Mo like meteors.

The group of calvary couldn’t determine Chu Mo’s precise location in the darkness of night. They wanted to use a chaos of fire to force Chu Mo out.

Chu Mo’s calmness and maturity didn’t belong to a young person. He hid there without moving!

One arrow shot by his side with less than a foot of distance from his body!

Chu Mo could clearly feel his own heartbeat accelerate, but his thoughts were incomparably sober.

Heaven’s Will My Will scripture automatically started. It made

Chu Mo thoroughly calm in a mere moment. His whole person entered into a mysterious state.

Everywhere became completely silent in this moment. Chu Mo slightly closed his eyes, and he could clearly feel everything within ten feet around!

Even a rat panicking and digging into a hole did not escape his senses!

Whoosh!

An arrow.

Thunderous!

Directly shooting at Chu Mo's heart!

It was that constantly hidden archer!

He certainly has a type of formidable skill. He could accurately determine Chu Mo's precise location.

This arrow is different than the others, completely faint. Not only is it dipped in poison, but it is made of an extremely special type of metal.

This ought to be the opponent's hidden ace, an attack that must kill Chu Mo!

This arrow.....afraid it also made him exhaust all his strength.

Chu Mo's mind decided this information in almost an instant. Even things he himself didn't know. How could his mind be so clear?

Avoidable?

Chu Mo asked himself.

Although he precisely seized the path of the arrow's trajectory, but his body.....was yet very difficult to keep up with the brain's speed.

Chu Mo started the footwork skill in that instant. A low howling noise, the body in a split second.....slightly shifted.

That arrow directly that was locked onto his heart hit into the left arm.

With a poof sound, it actually pierced through the flesh of Chu Mo's left arm, and it deeply struck into the underbrush behind.

Hiss!

Chu Mo's body momentarily trembled. The flesh on his arm was pierced through and mangled!

A large amount of fresh blood flowed out.

The fortunate thing is, this arrow didn't hit his bone. Otherwise, the arrow contained enough force to easily shatter his bone.

A severe pain followed like a flood.

But Chu Mo's brain.....is unprecedentedly clear!

"I bet you can only use this level of archery once!"

Chu Mo gritted teeth. Without turning, he madly fell back.

He snatched up the arrow when he passed by and yelled: "This arrow is mine. I will remember you!"

Chapter 25: Jade's Secret

Soon after, Chu Mo started the footwork skill. He disappeared from the underbrush in a blink of an eye.

Sure enough, another terrifying arrow did not fire.

Even those riders didn't have any action for a long time.

A person over a thousand feet from Chu Mo walked out after a long time.

This young person looked around twenty years old. He wore green robes and had a handsome appearance. His figure was tall and straight, and he had a pair of stern pupils that were filled with a startled and confused color.

“This teenager.....where was he spawned? Don't tell me, he is the same as me, a person from a big sect? Otherwise how could he avoid my 'knowing arrow'?”

“Little master.....we.....should we pursue?” A rider dismounted and went to the young man's side, then respectfully asked.

“Forget it, don't chase. You all aren't his match even if we overtake him. You'll be sent to death in vain.” The young man sighed: “He has a lot of guts. I can only gamble on this level of attack once. I can use two arrows if I cultivate 'knowing arrow' to the second level. He certainly would have died today like that.

“Young master don’t worry. You will certainly succeed quickly!”
The horseman spoke.

The young man slightly shook his head: “It isn’t that easy!”

As he spoke, let out a sigh and said: “Fine, today we had bad luck. We ran into some grit and several brothers died. Go back and bury the dead. Tell their families they died serving their country. I will take responsibility for their livelihood!”

“Young master is benevolent. It is our greatest fortune to be at young master’s side.” This horseman spoke his innermost feelings.

The young man waved his hand. The perplexed color in his eyes still didn’t scatter. He mumbled: “Such an interesting little thing, remember me? I will also remember you!”

“I shot you once. Although you killed several of my close subordinates, and walked away with my blue jade arrow, this account will be settled later!”

Finished speaking, the young man waved his hand, and mounted his horse: “Go!”

Chu Mo nearly exhausted all his strength from bolting through the grassland. When his two legs argued that four legs are faster, he only thought about making it difficult for those horsemen to chase. He would flee first then discuss it with his legs later.

He madly continued east until the gray dawn approached. Chu Mo felt he had run at least two hundred and fifty miles away.

This amount of distance was the first time for him.

His two legs were soft, and the Yuan power in the Dantian was nearly all exhausted.

He didn't want to stop, but he lacked the strength.

"Hmph, don't listen, and there are even more fierce opponents. Do you understand you are wrong now?"

Qi Xiaoyu appeared as before, as if dropped from the heavens in a blue dress that was forever clean. Her brow slightly wrinkled as she looked at the wound on his arm: "You got injured?"

"You are so great and powerful, don't tell me you didn't see it?" Chu Mo spoke with a somewhat hoarse voice. He looked her in the eye, crossed his legs and sat, then started to cultivate scripture. He silently began to recover.

"I don't always follow you. How could I see?" Qi Xiaoyu spoke. She walked over to Chu Mo and brought out some scissors. She cut the sleeve off of Chu Mo's wounded arm, then said: "This injury isn't light. Fortunately it didn't hit bone!"

Finished speaking, she withdrew some golden pain medicine and started to help bind up Chu Mo.

Chu Mo cultivated the scripture, and gritted his teeth saying: “Ow.....a little softer!”

Qi Xiaoyu looked down upon Chu Mo: “You still know pain, looks like you haven’t lost your foolishness!”

“You are an idiot!”

“Hmph, if you weren’t a fool, why didn’t you know to run? How could you be the least bit unprepared knowing that group of people dared cause you trouble?”

“How could I know they had an archer.” Chu Mo stopped cultivating. Chu Mo opened his eyelids and stared into the inky pitch black eyes of Qi Xiaoyu. He said somewhat embarrassed: “Furthermore, he was a very talented archer.”

He pulled out the arrow that pierced through him: “Well, it was this arrow. I feel the material it is made from is somewhat unusual. There aren’t many people who use it. I will certainly be able to find that guy later on!”

Chu Mo discovered the seamless composition of the arrow at this time. It was unexpectedly carved out in one whole piece.

Moreover, the carving was extremely detailed. At one glance, he

could see it wasn't made by an ordinary person's hand. The lower part of the shaft had a very small "Sun" character.

Chu Mo had an ice-cold feeling as he held the arrow. It is extremely sharp. The arrow shot through Chu Mo's arm, yet there wasn't a trace of blood on it.

"Such a good item!" Chu Mo carefully sized it up, and he couldn't help but praise.

Qi Xiaoyu glanced at the arrow and said somewhat disdainfully: "What good item. It is merely a blue jade arrow, that's it. It's nothing special!"

"What? This is the legendary blue jade arrow?" Chu Mo was immediately startled. He looked at Qi Xiaoyu: "You aren't cheating me?"

"Ah, don't mess with it!" Qi Xiaoyu scolded Chu Mo, then gave a supercilious look: "Cheat you for what? This thing isn't any kind of rare item. Huh? Where did the Yuan beast bones, skin, and meat go? Could it have been snatched away?"

"No, it has been hidden by me." Chu Mo casually replied. He didn't want to lie to others, but he also didn't want to reveal the jade secret. He could only reply like this.

He had a thought as he recalled the piece of jade. He focused and thought: 'What realm is Qi Xiaoyu in.'

The jade didn't have the slightest bit of reaction.

‘What realm is Qi Xiaoyu in?’

Chu Mo concentrated with great effort on that thought.

The jade still didn't have any reaction.

‘Qi Xiaoyu.....’

“Ah, what are you doing? What foolishness is this?”

A lily-white hand shook in front of Chu Mo. Qi Xiaoyu looked at Chu Mo with a bewildered expression: “Are you worried about those precious materials? How about I go with you to get them back?”

“Cough cough.....” Chu Mo somewhat awkwardly laughed. He shook his head: “Forget it. Let's talk about it later.”

Chu Mo grabbed the blue jade arrow, and his face was plastered with an odd expression. He muttered: “I truly never thought..... the royal children of Da Qi would unexpectedly come to these plains. It looks like you all are determined to capture these grasslands!”

Qi Xiaoyu seemed not the least bit concerned about this matter.

She told Chu Mo to be careful of pursuing soldiers and hurriedly left after helping him pack up.

She is still so mysterious, disappearing without a trace. But Chu Mo was already used to it. He conjectured that Qi Xiaoyu must be searching for something, otherwise she wouldn't leave so suddenly every time.

But since she didn't say, Chu Mo didn't think to ask. After all, everyone has their secrets, like his jade.

Chu Mo had an unspeakable feeling as soon as he thought of the piece of jade. Very strange, like a thing originally a part of him. Suddenly, it experienced an enormous change.

The thing belonged to himself, but yet it was like an uncontrollable feeling.

Chu Mo had this kind of feeling ever since it changed the first day.

It changed the Demon Lord's precious scripture Heaven's Will My Will. The jade pointed out that unremarkable shrub, then forcefully sucked it in. Even today it unexpectedly transferred information on his enemy.....but it doesn't have the slightest bit of action when he tried to initiate an inquiry on another person.

"What the devil!" Chu Mo muttered. He submerged his consciousness into the jade space. He really wanted to know why

everything is the way it is.

The space seemed to have not that great of a change, but Chu Mo still sensitively felt life force inside.....it seemed not as intense as before.

He squinted his eyes. The first time he looked at that unremarkable shrub.....sure enough those extremely small sprouts.....they wilted!

“Don’t tell me every change requires a large amount of energy to support?” Chu Mo wrinkled his brows in thought.

The first time this piece of jade acted strangely is when it sucked in Heaven’s Will My will inside. It changed the words of the first page of the Heaven’s Will scripture.

Chu Mo never studied Heaven’s Will My Will before the it changed. He didn’t know if it changed for the better, but at least he didn’t have any problems cultivating.

The second change is after he encountered the small shrub. The second page of Heaven’s Will My Will added another two lines.

The third change is when he fought enemies today. He had an intense thought to know the opponent’s strength. The piece of jade once again demonstrated signs, and it placed his opponents information into his mind.

Then.....the buds on the small shrub wilted.

Everything points to a source. The piece of jade must have the energy it needs to display its power.

The problem is, what does it want?

Chu Mo withdrew from the jade space. He felt he has guessed correctly, but it made him somewhat depressed. He didn't know what method to use to increase the power of this piece of jade.

“Looks like I can only wait until the next time it scalds me.....” Chu Mo muttered. He continued hurrying east soon after. It was peaceful along the way.

Chu Mo already entered the central region of the grassland after three days. The wound on his arm had already healed for the most part.

The first part is his physique is especially good. The second part is the medicine Qi Xiaoyu applied is miraculous.

Chu Mo rested by a lake on the evening of the third day. He heard the sound of rushing horses from far away, and an angry roar followed at the same time.

“Ge Erzha, you traitor! You have forsaken the Wang Court, forsaken your ancestors. You won't have a good ending!” A maiden's voice filled with rage transferred over from far away.

A middle age man's voice transferred: "Princess, surrender. Ge Erzha is eternally your most faithful servant. Don't keep resisting. It has no meaning! Ge Erzha hasn't betrayed the Wang court. He hasn't betrayed the ancestors! There are unavoidable reasons!"

"Princess, the first and second prince.....they both surrendered to Da Qi. Now there is only you and the small prince remaining. You and the small prince will die if you don't surrender!"

"Us people of the grassland have fought with Da Qi for hundreds of years. Don't tell me princess doesn't know the severity of Da Qi?"

The young girl's voice angrily sounded: "You fart! We've fought hundreds of years, yet when has Da Qi defeated us? Ge Erzha, you're afraid to die! Brother Jin and brother Yin are the same, afraid to die! I won't fall into your fears!"

"The Wang Clan of the grasslands only dies in battle. They are not surrendering cowards!"

Chapter 26: Wang Court Princess

Chu Mo stood up and looked away from lake. There was a figure far away bolting on horseback in his direction.

[The man spoke again](#) at this time: “Princess your highness. Ge Erzha is a grassland warrior. I’m not afraid of death. Ge Erzhe would rather die in battle against Da Qi if he could.”

[TL: These people like to speak in the third person.]

“But this time.....this isn’t like the past princess!”

“Da Qi has planted countless schemes. We are already in their net. The whole Wang court has already been split apart by them. One third of the grassland tribes have already surrendered to Da Qi.....princess, wake up! We already lost!”

“As long as you nod, you will still be the most honored princess of the grassland. Your status will still be high, above everyone else!”

“Princess, Ge Erzhe is begging you!”

The girl seemed to be speechless, simply unable to answer. She held onto a small boy in her arms, and she bolted towards Chu Mo with twenty to thirty horsemen chasing behind..

One of the riders coldly shouted: “Ge Erzha, you are a traitor! Stop spouting such sweet words. Nothing you say is useful. You

would release us today if you truly had a conscience. I, Ge Ermu will remember you well!”

Another horseman chasing bitterly laughed: “My good little brother, the problem isn’t whether or not we want to release you. These people at our side won’t let you go if you all don’t surrender!”

“Then we fight to the death! Ge Erzha, I won’t hold back! A young horseman pulled the reins and made his horse stop. He held a long spear and blocked the path.

The girl on the horse in the very front yelled: “Ge Ermu, you aren’t his match! Quickly return, we will be saved so long as we get to elder Hao Yue!”

“Princess!” That young horseman’s voice mournfully shouted: “Don’t forget Ge Ermu! Ge Ermu will die in battle defending princess!”

“Ge Ermu.....don’t die!” The young girl in the front shouted. She seemed to want to stop, but the horseman at her side ruthlessly forced slapped the backside of her horse.

The paid immediately caused the horses four hooves to flurry and run even faster.

“Don’t die!” The girl let out an eager cry. Tears drifted in the air.

“Ha ha ha ha, princess, don’t mourn for me. the Wang Court children are no cowards!” The young rider laughed wildly. Then he turned around and rushed towards the pursuers. The pike in his hand pierced into the front horseman.

Ge Erzha.

His close older brother.

“Little brother!”

“Step aside!” Ge Erzha shouted: “Do not die meaninglessly.....”

In the end how could a close brother bear send their own kin to death. Ge Erzha didn’t give the kill command. A horseman at his side suddenly jumped off his horse. He flew through the air holding a double edged sword. The sword light flashed, and Ge Ermu’s head toppled to the ground.

“No!” Ge Erzhe cried out. His eyes immediately turned red, and he was ready to fight with that person to the death.

The man who killed Ge Ermu leaped back onto his horse in a beautiful arc. He coldly looked at Ge Erzhe: “You also want to die?”

“Why must you kill my brother!” Ge Erzha howled.

“He fought to the death!” The man coldly said: “I don’t care if

you are young or old, a child or a woman. If you also want to die, I can grant your wish!”

“You.....” Ge Erzha was extremely angry. He gritted his teeth, jumped down from the horse, and ran over to his younger brother’s head while weeping.

The girl fleeing in the very front became aware of what happened at this time. Constant beads of tears streamed down from her face. She resisted letting out any sound even though the tears flowed like rain.

All of the hate was recorded inside.

Chu Mo caught a panoramic view of this scene. He didn’t hesitate in the slightest as his image flashed and disappeared into the underbrush.

The girl’s group circled the lake and continued madly fleeing.

But Chu Mo directly charged the group of people pursuing behind them!

The piece of jade on his body suddenly heated up for a moment. Although it wasn’t scalding, but it was the most clear sign to Chu Mo

There is something the jade wants among that group of pursuers!

Originally Chu Mo opposed this group of people to give Da Qi some trouble. It was equivalent to helping his own country.

Although he isn't in the military, but he is the child of a military general!

Although he wasn't comfortable killing a man with his bare hands even now, but at least.....Chu Mo already clearly understand the logic after going through that life and death situation.

“This is the same as a battlefield!”

“There is only life and death here, no mercy.”

Chu Mo's target is the man who had just beheaded Ge Ermu. His strength is obviously good.

Obviously he isn't an ordinary person because Da Qi sent him here to carry out a mission. Chu Mo was afraid they are all elite military troops at the least.

This person leaped from a high speed horse and killed a man while in mid-air. Then he easily returned on top of his horse..... not just anyone has this type of skill.

This type of man would at least be a vice-general in the military.

“Da Qi will experience great pain if this type of person dies.”

“Furthermore my actions today will at least give Da Qi much trouble towards capturing the grasslands, at the least..... it could be **!”

[TL: ** in raws.]

“It would be awesome if it is truly like that!”

Chu Mo’s pupils twinkled. Grandfather had made him grow up in the military ever since he was little and trained him. Grandfather didn’t let Chu Mo see too many bloody scenes only because he was too young, and there weren’t any battles.

Nowadays, Chu Mo is walking this road himself in the end.

“No matter who my parents were, I am now a hundred percent Da Xia!”

“Being able to exert power for my nation is my greatest pride and honor!”

Chu Mo swelled inside. At this time that man was already only thirty feet away from Chu Mo.

It could be because he had just killed a man, or he was too concentrated on the group in front, but this man actually forgot

about the possibility of any danger at his sides.

Right now!

“Kill!”

Chu Mo snarled inside. He soared out from the underbrush. Unequaled Yuan power surged in his dantian, momentarily flooding all the meridians in his body. A ruthless sword slashed towards the man on the horse.

“Ah!”

The man cried out. His eyes flashed with a startled color. He never thought a person would be hiding there!

And they dare attack him!

The man didn't have enough time to raise his sword in the moment. His body dashed to the side, thinking to dodge the attack.

But this was within Chu Mo's calculations. The gap in realms between his opponent wasn't too large, how could he let him flash away?

Furthermore this sword uses the strongest sword technique Chu Mo had studied up to this point.

Nothing can stop this sword when it moves!

Like rolling thunder!

Unavoidable!

The man tried to block without taking the time to extract his sword from the scabbard. He originally believed it enough to block Chu Mo's sword.

But he never thought, this rolling thunder sword would strangely bypass the sheathed sword in his hand. From this unimaginable angle.....it ruthlessly chopped into the man's shoulder

Kacha!

An extremely sharp edge cut open the man's shoulder blade like cutting tofu.....Chu Mo didn't even feel any resistance!

The man split into two halves. Blood sprayed out in an instant. The man's eyes were filled with startled disbelief as he flopped down from the horse.

Chu Mo already charged at the next person!

Everything happened too quickly. The strongest person in the group of people was already cut down by Chu Mo in the blink of an eye.

The other people were all still baffled. They weren't clear what happened. They were obviously chasing the princess, and everything was fine. How could such a terrifying teenager appear?

Pop!

Blood shot out of the second person's head after being chopped off by Chu Mo. This suddenly made the group of people come to their senses. They let out a terrified cry: "Enemy attack!"

"Enemy attack!"

"Da Qi's special envoy has been killed!"

"Quickly grab him!"

Because Ge Erzha wanted to gather his brother's corpse he lagged behind. He stood there and violently trembled from head to toe. He desperately roared: "Quick grab that boy, you must not let him run away! He killed Da Qi's envoy!"

Chu Mo had already cut down the third horse rider at this time, and he was rushing at the fourth person.

The tall thin teenager practically turned into a fearsome killing god in this moment. The people being killed were scared stiff, not daring to believe their own two eyes.

At what time did such a terrifying teenager appear on this grassland?

Could he be Nuo Yi's mysterious hidden trump card?

Nuo Yi's group of people had already fled very far away, and they also were suspicious.

"Where was this strong teenager spawned from?"

The group of people couldn't help but stop after hearing the death cries from behind. Although they were eager to escape, it is not the nature of the grassland people to ignore their benefactor.

Nuo Yi instructed to the man at her side: "Quick, quick go help him! I want to appoint him!"

"Princess.....go on ahead. We will go help the young man!" The close guard at Nuo Yi's side said.

"No, this young man is very strong. He will certainly be able to help us. I want to personally make a request!"

Nuo Yi steadily spoke on top of the horse. The small boy in her arms stared in the direction of Chu Mo. The pitch black eyes filled with curiosity.

“It’s too dangerous princess!” The guard at her side continued to persuade.

Nuo Yi revealed a wry smile on her sweet and beautiful face: “Are we in any danger now? The special envoy of Da Qi was already killed by the teenager. The remaining.....they are all grassland people. Are you all afraid of Ge Erzha?”

The faces of the guards immediately became angered. They unanimously said: “Could we be afraid of that traitor?”

“Then good.....” Nuo Yi looked at the small boy in her arms: “Little brother, are you afraid?”

The young boy’s voice was soft and tender, but he resolutely said: “I am a child of the Wang Court, we do not fear!”

“Good little brother!” Nuo Yi yelled: “Follow me and charge back!”

“Kill!” The strong men of the grasslands turned around and pursued their pursuers with unmatched anger. They would have fought to the death already if they didn’t have to defend the princess.

The princess took the lead in charging back. How could the guards have the least bit of hesitation? Feeding on the moment, they rushed towards the cavalrymen that Chu Mo was already killing on his own.

Chapter 27: I Am Lin Bai

Chu Mo's eyes became a somewhat killing red!

Inside the youth's clear pupils.....a trace of blood!

Although there wasn't any large conflict between Da Qi and Da Xia on the surface these past several years, in reality, Da Qi's military members would become small bandit groups. They would harass the common people along the border of Da Xia.

Chu Mo went to a village in the past with his grandfather that had been slaughtered by the Da Qi bandit soldiers.

Only three people survived in that whole village of five hundred people.

Those three children were hidden by their parents in a dried up well that was covered over with straw.

But Chu Mo was afraid those three children wouldn't have escaped death had his grandfather not entered the village and heard their faint cries.

They could not climb up themselves!

This matter had a large impact on the young Chu Mo.

The seeds of hatred towards Da Qi soldiers had been buried in his thoughts a long time ago.

Because the slaughter wasn't as simple as it seems.

Chu Mo isn't a homicidal maniac.

And his opponents aren't lambs waiting for the slaughter!

Chu Mo already considered the area to be a true battlefield!

In his mind there was only one remaining thought, only one word: Kill!

The horsemen in front of Chu Mo seemed to collapse at the first blow among the sword flashes.

Chu Mo's martial arts were all the more skillful in the battle. His agile figure was shocking.

Practically every slash beheaded a rider.

Ge Erzha had also gone through the Yuan closure, but he was still no match for Chu Mo.

Perhaps because of his younger brother's death, it influenced Ge Erzha's attacks. Or perhaps it was Chu Mo's refined skills. Chu Mo

was much stronger.....in merely five exchanges, Chu Mo's fist boomed into his chest. A wild bang and blood shot out of Ge Erzha's mouth, and he fell from the horse.

Chu Mo didn't hesitate in the slightest. The sword in his hand lifted up high.

The sharp edge of the sword flickered ice-cold rays of light in the twilight.

"Little hero, temporarily spare his life!" A rider at the side of princess Nuo Yi shouted: "He still has use!"

Chu Mo's mind momentarily sobered up. The blood color in his pupils gradually withdrew. The desperate face of Ge Erzha stared at him from the ground below. Chu Mo spat to the ground: "I hate little people like you that sell their honor the most!"

Finished speaking, he slashed the sharp sword down. It stopped only a slight distance away from Ge Erzha's face.

Ge Erzha screamed and actually fainted.

"Trash!"

Chu Mo scolded, then turned towards the small lake without looking back. There were many bloody traces on his body. The dense bloody smell gave him an extremely unpleasant feeling. He prepared to go wash the blood off his body.

Princess Nuo Yi and her guards were completely startled when they rushed over there. A dozen pursuers were completely massacred, furthermore practically each person.....were all killed in one slash!

These were all elite soldiers of the Wang Court!

No one could deny their strength although they betrayed the Wang Court and threw in with Da Qi.

Otherwise, how could Nuo Yi and the others be in such a difficult situation?

But they were unexpectedly killed with one slash before this young man. All killed like cutting melons!

Nuo Yi and the others extremely hated these traitors in their hearts, yet at this time their eyes filled with respect as they watched the back of the young figure walk towards the lake.

A forty plus year old middle aged man dressed up as a scholar appeared somewhat like a Da Xia person. There was a clear difference in appearance with the grassland people. The other riders showed him obvious respect.

He moved to Nuo Yi's side and whispered: "This person, we must recruit him!"

“He is related to the success of us recapturing the Wang Court!”

“Our success probability will increase three times if he agrees to help us!”

“Maybe elder Hao Yue would also send troops to help us!”

Princess Nuo Yi nodded, a vibrating color still remained in her pupils: “But, a skill like him.....what could we use to recruit him right now?”

The middle aged scholar looked at Nuo Yi, thought a moment, and then said: “I see this young man, he feels completely righteous, otherwise he would not have helped us.”

“I’ll go test the waters, then, take a look again.....see what he wants!” The middle aged man spoke, then looked at Nuo Yi and hesitated.

Nuo Yi looked at the young man that already walked to the lakeside, then she whispered: “Uncle Pang, speak directly. Right now mother and father are already dead. Brother Jin and Yin have thrown in with Da Qi. Although I am Wang Court’s princess, but now.....if it weren’t for people like you.....what would I be? I’m afraid I would have already been snatched away and offered to those evil Da Qi people.”

The middle aged scholar nodded and whispered: “Princess, if you wish for his temporary protection, I believe I can convince him.”

“But, if princess seeks shelter for a long time, then.....”

Nuo Yi's pale face flashed a trace of red. He somewhat bashfully said: “Could you marry him?”

The guard at Nuo Yi's side had an awkward color reveal on his face, somewhat offended. But at the end he sighed, and his face returned to normal as if he heard nothing.

They viewed the princess as a goddess. She was already no longer that bright pearl of the grasslands like before.

They didn't want to admit it in their hearts, but they had no choice. Their princess has already become a homeless tumbleweed. If they wanted to defect to Elder Hao Yue, would she not have to marry Elder Hao Yue's son to seek asylum?

Everyone understood, only they didn't wish to say.

The middle aged scholar laughed and lightly said: “I see this youngster is extremely unordinary. He carries a trace of nobility between his brows although his clothes are ragged. He is not like an ordinary child. In addition his skill could very likely come from a large sect.”

“If we can truly move him, and make him stay and help us on the grasslands, perhaps we can rise from the dead!”

Nuo Yi lightly sighed. The charming girl's face flashed with a trace of loneliness. She slightly closed her eyes, and her long eyelashes trembled. She softly spoke: "Uncle Pang calls the shots on everything. Nuo Yi will do anything so long as the grassland Wang Court can rise from the dead!"

The middle aged scholar looked at Nuo Yi somewhat pitifully. He had watched this bright pearl of the grasslands grow up ever since she was little. There was no genetic relation, but he already regarded her as his own daughter. Would he willingly choose this method if there were any other way?

Comparatively, this young man is certainly much more powerful than those unrefined sons of Elder Hao Yue!

Only if this happens then they will have to think of a new method for Elder Hao Yue. It is not easy to move that old fox.

The middle aged scholar thought and slowly advanced towards the lake.

Chu Mo directly jumped into the lake without undressing.

The ice-cold lake made his thoughts strangely sober.

He quickly washed off the blood, then secretly thought: 'That girl, it appears she is the princess of the grassland Wang Court. How could this dignified princess end up pursued like a dog?'

‘That Ge Erzha said the first and second prince already sought refuge with Da Qi. Shouldn’t that be Jin and Yin?’

‘It looks like the grassland Wang Court has had an enormous unforeseen accident.’

‘To the extent that their princess has no choice but to flee for her life.’

‘If it is like this, I want to stay here for a time. It shouldn’t be difficult to open a relationship with them!’

Chu Mo thought, then he heard a burst of footsteps. His head raised and looked out from the lake. He saw a middle aged man holding a set of new clothes. The man came to the lake and revealed at smile at Chu Mo.

“Little hero, many thanks for saving us. Otherwise, I’m afraid we would not see the sun of tomorrow.”

“Are you a person of Da Xia?” Chu Mo saw the middle aged scholar and curiously asked.

The middle aged man was slightly startled. A trace of alarm flashed in his pupils, but he smiled and asked: “How did you know?”

“You don’t need to worry about anything. I don’t recognize you.” Chu Mo spoke: “I determined from your accent.”

“Like that!” The middle aged man relaxed a breath, then he said: “How about it? Little brother are you also from Da Xia?”

Chu Mo smiled: “I lived in Da Xia!”

“So it is like this!” The middle aged man didn’t doubt Chu Mo’s words. How could a young person with such skill have grown up in the secular world?

Therefore he believed this young person was born in Da Xia and then brought into a large sect to cultivate. He is probably taking a walk out of the mountains or has already graduated.

It is very simple for him not to directly say he is a person of Da Xia.

The middle aged man had already come into contact with some disciples from sects. They regarded the people of the secular world as ordinary, and they didn’t wish to recognize that they came from the secular world.

“I see little brother didn’t bring a change of clothes. Here is a fresh set, but perhaps they don’t exactly fit you. Wait until we return and I will get a famous tailor to make you many sets! ” The middle aged man politely smiled and looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo had been thinking of a way to join this group of people. He naturally didn’t decline and took the clothes. They were indeed

a little big, but it was much better than the prior set of ragged clothes.

The middle aged man struck up a conversation while Chu Mo hid in the underbrush and changed his clothes.

“I, Pang Zhongyuan, am originally from Da Xia. I have already been in the grasslands for fifteen years. I always worked in the Wang Court, I do not know your name little brother?” The middle aged scholar very politely inquired. He didn’t treat Chu Mo as an unworldly teenage child in the slightest.

What teenager would dare take a sword and face a dozen horseriders?

Chu Mo thought a moment and said: “I am Lin Bai. I studied in a sect. I’m just taking a walk from the mountains.”

He answered very simply, but it completely eliminated Pang Zhongyuan’s original suspicions.

Because this teenager named Lin Bai rescued them!

It would be a breeze for him to kill their group.

Furthermore, their group were already lost dogs. What could others plot against them?

“So it is brother Lin Bai. I didn’t know brother was taking a walk from the mountains. Are you on a mission?” Pang Zhongyuan carefully asked. The large majority of disciples that went out from the sects were carrying out a mission.

Chu Mo had finished changing his clothes and came out from the underbrush. He said: “No mission, only for experience!”

The middle aged man delighted, then he looked at the newly dressed Chu Mo. He immediately praised inside: ‘What a handsome young man!’

Chapter 28: Establish Oneself

Pang Zhongyuan didn't see Chu Mo's appearance clearly before because of his ragged clothes, murderous aura, and the darkening sky.

After seeing Chu Mo's appearance clearly, Pang Zhongyuan thought Chu Mo and Nuo Yi would make a great match!

But these types of affairs need a long term perspective. It cannot be impatiently suggested. It would be a loss to scare off the youngster.

Pang Zhongyuan thought and revealed a moderate smile. He said: “[Son Lin](#), I'm afraid we would have had misfortune today if it wasn't for you. Our princess has a mind to recruit you, yet she feels earthly things like money would be a type of shame for a person like son Lin. Son Lin.....is there anything we can do? Only speak, if we can do it, then we won't refuse!”

[TL: Pang Zhongyuan is not actually calling Lin (Chu Mo) his son, it is just a respectful term for the sons of nobility or high officials.]

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “I am taking a trip from the mountains, mainly for my own life experience. I acted to help you today because I don't like those bullies that sell their honor! I dislike those kind of people the most!”

“Haha, son Lin has a chivalrous heart!” Pang Zhongyuan raised his thumb, then sighed: “It is a pity the present isn't like the past. Otherwise, we certainly could greatly repay you.”

Chu Mo waved his hand and looked at Pang Zhongyuan: “No harm, but Mr. Pang, what exactly has happened on the grasslands? Can you tell me the details?”

The two mutually tested each other out. Their goals were the same so naturally the conversation was agreeable.

Pang Zhongyuan became overjoyed as soon as he heard Chu Mo’s words. He felt a large opportunity resided in the teenager!

“A long story ah!” Pang Zhongyuan sighed. He told Chu Mo the unfortunate events that occurred over the past two years on the grasslands.

“I fell into trouble that year. The King and Queen, the parents of the princess, took me in, and they gave me place to go.”

“Although this place isn’t my homeland, but over the past several years it has become the same to me.”

“My greatest desire is for the grasslands to truly belong to the people here. I wish everyone to live and work in peace.”

“Only Da Qi covetously gazes, and they still haven’t given up their desire for the grasslands over hundreds of years.”

“In the past several decades they have been continuously setting

up schemes.....”

The former king was fooled. He believed Da Qi had changed, all the way until death.....he believed in the dream of peace.”

Pang Zhongyuan’s face revealed a resentful color: “I always knew Da Qi was up to something, and I was always on guard. I constantly called it to the attention of the king, but I never thought the people they purchased were the two princes!”

“Those two are beasts not born of men! Approximately half a year ago at some feast they secretly poisoned the king and queen’s wine.”

“The poison was flavorless and odorless, and it had slow effects. One would have no awareness after being poisoned.”

“They didn’t dare openly poison the King and Queen. Because if that happened, the Wang Court imperial guards would certainly cut them to pieces!”

“Even if they are the princes it isn’t okay! The Wang Court’s imperial guards only listen to the commands of the King.”

The hidden schemes of the Wang Court slowly came to the surface following Pang Zhongyuan’s active searching.

Da Qi’s schemes were truly brilliant. They promised the two princes: As soon as the matter is completed, they will both become

kings. The entire grassland will be split in two parts, and two palaces will be built for them.

Only in name will they belong to Da Qi!

They also promised to give the two princes a large amount of benefits. For instance, the specialty produced jewels of Da Qi as well as beautiful women. They thoroughly impressed the two idiot princes.

They used the slow acting poison to kill their own parents.

The situation exploded a few days ago!

“First the Queen went into a coma. The doctors deduced the slow acting poison had been in her system for at least half a year. An even bigger misfortune occurred, the king.....also became unconscious.”

‘The well prepared Jin brother took on the eldest son role. He exploited the grassland rules to become king in his father’s stead.”

“He forcefully issued several commands, and he exchanged the Wang Court imperial guards with his own men. Thereby completely controlling the Wang Court.

“Brother Yin.....that animal. He brought in that special envoy of Da Qi, and personally cut off the heads of his parents.....expressing his complete loyalty to Da Qi.”

“In addition, he claimed the king and queen died of a sudden illness!”

“Then he slandered the princess and used the chaos to seize power, and acted against her.”

Pang Zhongyuan spoke to this point, and he couldn't stop the tears from flowing out: “It is a pity the former king and queen, such good hearts, murdered by their own two animal sons.”

“Those schemes arranged by Da Qi in the grasslands completely erupted in a few short moments.”

“One third of the whole grasslands tribe chiefs had been bought by Da Qi and promised enormous rewards. When this matter came out, they betrayed the Wang Court!”

“That group of shameless little men!”

Pang Zhongyuan gnashed his teeth, a look of hate.

“In addition to brother Jin and Yin in the wang Court, there were several other people belonging to Da Qi unbeknownst to me.”

“The princess luckily fled thanks to those Wang Court guards that had been thrown away. They fought to the death, and protected our escape. Then the remained behind to block the

rear.”

“Now.....I’m afraid.....they all died.”

Pang Zhongyuan’s tone filled with sadness.

Chu Mo sighed and said: “Two princes, one certainly would have inherited the throne. What is in their brains.....feces? They actually did such an outrageous thing?”

“The former king pampered the youngest prince the most. The two older princes felt a crises. But the little prince is young, of course the former king doted on him. It didn’t mean the throne would be passed onto the little prince.” Pang Zhongyuan sighed: “Those two became blinded with the obsession for power. Did they actually think Da Qi is that good? The first thing Da Qi will do after seizing the Wang Court is act against them.”

Chu Mo nodded. He had been together with grandfather in the military ever since he was young. He was influenced, and read many books on war strategy. He was not at all unfamiliar with national hidden schemes and methods.

Having heard what was said, Chu Mo spoke: “Really two morons, worse than beasts, murdering their own parents!”

Chu Mo looked at Pang Zhongyuan: “Now you are fleeing, but who are you seeking shelter under?”

Pang Zhongyuan nodded: “Although a King is honored in the grasslands, but in reality, it is composed of many tribes. Da Qi has revealed their cards at last. One third of the grassland tribes have announced their submission to Da Qi, but two thirds have still not been forsaken!”

“Among the strongest clans is the clan of Elder Hao Yue.”

“It has always been that Elder Hao Yue’s clan is second in power only to the Wang Court. Furthermore, they have always been close friends to the Wang Court, always connected by marriage. They are considered our own people.”

Chu Mo sensed an insincere taste from Pan Zhongyuan’s words. He lifted his head and asked: “Are you truly that close?”

Pang Zhongyuan couldn’t help but reveal a smile. This teenager is young, but he is not easy to fool.

Only the more it was like this, the more Pang Zhongyuan felt there was a chance to recapture the entire Wang Court, so long as they recruited Chu Mo!

Perhaps other people would scoff at his dream, but Pang Zhongyuan believed in his vision.

“If you were truly that close, wouldn’t they have dispatched people earlier?” Chu Mo continued.

Pang Zhongyuan didn't hide it, sighing. Then he said to Chu Mo: "The most important thing to Elder Hao Yue is to protect his own power. He is the uncle of the princess, but he.....is also the uncle of brother Jin and Yin!"

"And you still seek shelter with him? What is the meaning?" Chu Mo's brow slightly wrinkled.

He already felt the current plight of this group of people. They were not only in an unforsakeable circumstance, but they were desperate!

Chu Mo looked at Pang Zhongyuan and slowly said: "Perhaps there are several still loyal to the Wang Court on the grasslands, people loyal to the princess. If their power can be rallied together, it would truly be formidable. It could extinguish brother Jin and Yin before Da Qi can trample over the grasslands."

"But the problem is, without the Wang Court King.....who would these people be willing to unite together under?"

"Princess Nuo Yi?"

"She is the most brilliant pearl of the grasslands. She is the goddess in the hearts of the people!"

"But she is not a queen!"

"It is clear Brother Jin and Yin are superior at present. They

proclaimed their parents died of a sudden illness, and the princess is starting an armed rebellion. May I ask, how many people would dare stand up at this time, and support princess Nuo Yi?”

“Following this trend, the best outcome at this time when going to Elder Hao Yue: Have Elder Hao Yue provide temporary support based on his close feelings.”

“But to me it looks like the greatest possibility is that Elder Hao Yue will let you go, put you in jail, or under house arrest. You’ll be a bargaining chip!”

Chu Mo coldly smiled: “Then, find a good opportunity and make a choice.”

“But no matter what the choice, I’m afraid the outcome won’t be good for you all.”

Pang Zhongyuan’s face filled with a shocked color. He confoundedly looked at Chu Mo. He thought he had already sized up the teenager, but Pang never thought he underestimated!

This youngster is not only terrifyingly powerful, furthermore.....this intelligence, it’s actually like an evildoer!

Then he bitterly smiled: “The things son Lin says, why didn’t I not think of it? But right now.....this is the only path!”

“Throw in with Elder Hao Yue, request his troops. It is

completely better than throwing in with other tribes!”

“Those other clans eat people without spitting out the bones.”

“Although elder Hao Yue is sly, but he has a shortcoming.....” Pang Zhongyuan lightly spoke: “His ears are a little soft. The aunt of the princess will indeed influence him.”

“Furthermore, he has always been very loving to princess Nuo Yi.”

“In the past.....” Pang Zhongyuan hesitated a moment, then directly spoke: “In the past I planned.....make princess wed a son of Elder Hao Yue. Then according to the agreement, he would send troops to recapture the Wang Court.”

Pang Zhongyuan had to come clean with his plan at this time because the teenager made such a startling analysis as soon as he heard the situation. This person is not one he can deceive!

“Marriage alliance?” Chu Mo scoffed: “The alliance most torn in the world is the marriage alliance. It is merely a piece of paper. One poke and it rips. When there is a falling out, ally by marriage? What a fart!”

At this time, from not far away, came a quiet girl’s voice: “That son spoke, what am I? Please teach me son!”

Nuo Yi’s enchanting figure slowly emerged from the underbrush

in the sunset.

Chu Mo knew earlier that she was eavesdropping. The majority of what he said was for her to hear.

Seeing her come out wasn't the slightest bit startling. He plainly said: "It's simple. Set out on our own, pulling the Wang Court banner against those patricidal Jin and Yin brothers."

Chapter 29: Bloody Spirit Aura

“Establish our own group?”

Princess Nuo Yi's pair of star pupils flickered brilliant rays of light in the sunset, but she immediately bitterly laughed: “Can we stand up on our own like this right now?”

“Given that I truly start up my own group, but with only a dozen men.....what use is it?”

“And those clans, would they listen to a down and out princess's words?”

“When my uncle gets the news, I'm afraid he would be the first to send troops and destroy us!”

Chu Mo's head shook: “Your highness, you are wrong!”

“Ah? that son says I am wrong?” Nuo Yi's pupils landed on Chu Mo.

“We won't give your uncle that opportunity!”

“I said establish our own group. We will absorb Elder Hao Yue.....after your uncle, it will be officially announced!”

“You continuously think no one will react to you and help

you.....it is not true.”

Chu Mo’s voice carried a hint of tenderness of a juvenile, but the words he spoke made Nuo Yi and Pang Zhongyuan completely shocked.

“Because, right now you are a down and out refugee princess! Who could respond to you at this time? Who dares respond to you?”

“But.....if it is a righteous vengeful princess, with the support of Elder Hao Yue, think, would those clans who haven’t joined Da Qi choose to support you?”

“They haven’t turned their backs, don’t tell me they are afraid to die?”

“They are actually waiting!”

“Waiting for the Wang Court’s action!”

“Admittedly there are traitors, but I believe the majority of the strong men on the grasslands are blood natured!”

“Including among those betraying clans. There are certainly some who don’t wish to be lackeys of Da Qi!”

“But everything, only you.....your royal highness, only you can

do it!”

Nuo Yi looked at Chu Mo: “Elder Hao Yue.....”

Chu Mo looked at Nuo Yi and plainly said: “You don’t need to worry about the problem of elder Hao Yue supporting you.....he naturally won’t support you.”

“Yes!” Nuo Yi’s feminine face revealed a trace of bitterness. She lowered her head and said: “Had Father and mother still lived, right now under these circumstances, uncle he.....he wouldn’t support us.”

Chu Mo smiled at this time: “Then attack until he supports!”

Nuo Yi was slightly startled.

Pang Zhongyuan’s eyes ferociously lit up to the side, looking at Chu Mo: “Don’t tell me son Lin.....wishes to help us?”

Nuo Yi also responded, and looked upon Chu Mo expectantly.

Chu Mo smiled: “Mr. Pang, wise men don’t speak ignorant words. Is this not what you wanted?”

Pang Zhongyuan’s face revealed a trace of awkwardness, but it was quickly cast away. He eagerly looked at Chu Mo: “Son Lin, elder Hao Yue’s strength isn’t weak. Using military force to scare

him isn't an easy thing!"

Nuo Yi spoke: "Uncle has two guards at his side that have broken through the Yuan Closure. A single one's strength is extremely powerful, moreover, those two are practically inseparable from uncle."

"Those two even keep guard outside when uncle sleeps!"

Chu Mo laughed and said: "I never said forcefully attack. I'm afraid we don't have enough people here. We would be shot up into hedgehogs!"

"Then....." Pang Zhongyuan and Nuo Yi looked at Chu Mo confused.

Chu Mo called the two closer, then spoke in a low voice.

Pang Zhongyuan's eyes revealed a clear excited color.

Nuo Yi was yet a little hesitant. She looked at Chu Mo with a fluid glance: "Wouldn't that be too dangerous for you?"

Her clear black and white beautiful eyes flickered a complicated sparkle: "This matter, doesn't have anything to do with you after all, I....."

Chu Mo looked at her, then plainly said: "Why would I come

down the mountain to get experience if there wasn't any danger?"

Nuo Yi and Pang Zhongyuan finally recalled this youngster comes is a disciple that cultivated in a large sect. They couldn't help but shake their heads and bitterly smile.

Right now Chu Mo's expression, too stunning.

Although they had heard of the legend in ancient time of the [eight year old](#) master, but seeing with their own eyes is a completely different matter.

[TL: It doesn't actually say eight year old young master. This is just what I believe it means. I believe they are saying that Chu Mo reminds them of a young master of legends, and and they wouldn't believe had they not seen with their own eyes. Any help on the translation would be appreciated '有八岁拜相的传说']

"Only like that.....we would owe you too much. How would we repay the noble son?" Nuo Yi gazed at Chu Mo and lightly asked.

Chu Mo laughed, then said: "I am a person of Da Xia!"

"Ah?" Nuo Yi was slightly startled at first, then immediately reacted, smiling and saying: "You are disturbing Qi to rescue Xia!"

"Disturbing Qi to rescue Xia?" Chu Mo repeated, then nodded calmly: "Like that, the enemy of my enemy is my friend."

“Then, let us happily work together!” Nuo Yi revealed a glittering smile. Only deep in her pupils was a faint loss of touch that no one else noticed: Originally, the things he did was for his country!

Pang Zhongyuan never thought of that aspect in the past. Because according to him, joining a large sect is basically the same as being cut off from the world.

Pang didn't wish to admit he is an ordinary person. There are few.....like Chu Mo would they openly admit they are doing it for their motherland? That is why Pang Zhongyuan looked even higher upon Chu Mo.

Sensing this teenager's high IQ, extraordinary strength, passionate sense of justice, complete sincerity, and future prospects, he is absolutely limitless. Pang sighed as he looked to Nuo Yi at his side: I don't know if our princess is that blessed.....

The group of people made camp by the lake that evening. The people were on the edge of crumbling apart after several continuous days of fleeing. They relied only on will for support. Today's danger has been temporarily relieved. Each and every one was too tired to move. No one ate after making camp, they all went straight into their tents and fell asleep.

There were only two guards on watch when Chu Mo and the others returned to the camp.

“You all go rest. You have suffered bitterness these days.” Nuo Yi commanded to the two guards on watch.

“It is more important for the princess to rest than us. It is no problem. We can hold our own!” The two guards refused, shaking their heads.

Pang Zhongyuan also spoke: “Princess, go rest. This is no problem. Tomorrow we will continue hurrying on the road.”

Nuo Yi looked at Chu Mo, and Chu Mo spoke: “Don’t worry about me. I am not as weary as you all. You all go rest. I will stay here and be on alert!”

“That’s no good.” Nuo Yi refused. In her viewpoint, this teenager had already become a crucial point in the life or death of the Wang Court. He couldn’t be neglected.

Chu Mo waved his hand: “I need to cultivate.”

“So it is like this!” Nuo Yi understood, then immediately made those two guards go rest.

Chu Mo was already like a god character in the eyes of the guards. Adding on their extreme exhaustion, it even further surged their veneration of Chu Mo as they returned to go rest.

In the end Chu Mo was the only one remaining in the whole camp. There was also the silent Ge Erzha tied to a pillar.

All of the other people who died in battle, including the special envoy of Da Qi cut down by Chu Mo in one slash, were all dragged back. This is the custom here. Hate abolishes after a person dies.

Only if there is a deep seeded hatred, otherwise, they wouldn't leave the corpses exposed to the elements.

But none of these people had any strength left. They temporarily piled them over there, and they waited until tomorrow to bury them.

Each of the corpses appeared somewhat terrified.

Chu Mo didn't admire the view of the corpses. He only remembered the past encounter when he met the group of people, and the jade gave him an indication.

But he never had an opportunity to search afterwards. What did the jade fancy.

Sounds of snoring rose in the camp. All the people were extremely exhausted and dead asleep. Otherwise, Chu Mo would be embarrassed to search.

He looked over at Ge Erzha, and Chu Mo slowly moved over to the group of corpses. Ge Erzha, tied up to the pillar, suddenly lifted his head at this time. His voice was very light as he hissed: "There is a ring on the special envoy of Da Qi. He showed it off to me. He said it is a ring of the gods that can store objects!"

Chu Mo turned and looked at Ge Erzha in his difficult situation.

“I’m not claiming any credit, or asking to be spared. I only want to tell you [the grassland children](#) of the Wang Court aren’t trash. They aren’t little people that sold their honor.” Ge Erzha spoke, and suddenly let the tears flow down: “They seized my parents, wife, and children. If I didn’t listen to their words, they would have killed my family.....I know I should die, but I would never betray the Wang Court!”

[TL: Ge Erzha is referring to himself/grassland people in general when he says grassland children of the Wang Court.]

Chu Mo didn’t answer him, and he walked to the side of Da Qi’s special envoy. He saw there was indeed a pitch black ring on his hand. It was lusterless and unremarkable. He took off the ring, then used his spirit power to open it.

The ring had hardly any resistance to open it. The space inside was very small, only three square feet and four feet tall. It completely couldn’t compare to the jade space.

But this was already an unobtainable sacred object to the secular world.

Especially given that the amount of storage rings in the large sects is even uncommon.

There were several weapons and sets of clothes inside the ring.

There was also a secret letter, as well as fist-sized.....completely white stone.

“Yuan stone?” Chu Mo felt a burst of Yuan power fluctuating from the stone. At once he understood this is a Yuan stone.

But this object was unexpected. It is several times larger than the stones he has seen in the past!

Chu Mo took out the Yuan stone, and as expected, the jade around his neck slightly heated up. The fist-sized Yuan stone was directly sucked into the jade space.

Chu Mo’s consciousness followed into the jade space, because he was very curious what kind of changes would take place.

That piece of jade was hung above the gray colored shrub. Millions of strands of Yuan power flowed down like a waterfall, extremely beautiful!

It all flowed into the little tree.

“It is watering the little sapling.....” Chu Mo mumbled. He looked at the Heaven’s Will My Will book on the stone, thought a moment, and withdrew it out.

After opening it up, he discovered there were actually a couple more words on the second page.

“Don’t tell me this is that piece of Yuan Stone’s power? It made Heaven’s Will My Will have even more words?” Chu Mo slightly wrinkled his brow, and felt somewhat not right, because followed the Yuan stone into the jade space.

He saw the power of the Yuan stone flow into the small tree’s body. It shouldn’t spread to the Heaven’s Will My Will.

Chu Mo thought, and put Heaven’s Will My Will back inside. There were only a couple more words, not enough for cultivation.

When he used his conscious to prepare and leave the jade space, Chu Mo suddenly discovered a blood colored mark on the stone where Heaven’s Will My Will was placed.

I would have never noticed that blood trace if I didn’t carefully look.

Chu Mo was certain it wasn’t there before!

Carefully looking, he discovered the fingernail long blood colored mark. The lowest part of the mark had the deepest color, practically the same color as blood.

Practically only a hair width wide. The top color is extremely light, practically impossible to see.

“What is this thing?”

Chu Mo muttered. All of the sudden, an intense blood aura erupted from that blood colored mark. Chu Mo jumped back in fright. The scene of Chu Mo killing all of the horse riders today appeared in front of him.

Then he saw a bloody light suck into the piece of jade, and it imprinted onto the stone.

The scene disappeared as quickly as it came.

But Chu Mo was shocked into not speaking for a long time. He was in a daze until he retreated from the jade space.

“This blood spirit aura.....what is it?”

Chapter 30: Legendary Immortal Palace

This piece of jade is indeed too mysterious, and no one can give him an explanation. How could the horsemen he killed channel bloody light, and imprint on the large green stone in the piece of jade? What effect does this bloody spirit aura have?

This made Chu Mo's heart filled with bewilderment.

He didn't even know if this change is good or bad.

Chu Mo shook his head, and his face revealed several traces of annoyance. His brow slightly wrinkled, and he took out the secret envelope inside of the Da Qi special envoy's storage ring.

The beginning of the secret letter contained something unexpected to Chu Mo. It was the arrangements Da Qi had with grassland, including their methods, and which people belong to Da Qi.....it was all extremely detailed.

Chu Mo looked at the decapitated special envoy of Da Qi. He secretly thought: 'This person's status doesn't look low! Not only does he have a storage ring that is rare even in large sects, but he also carries this type of secret letter. It looks like he isn't a nobody.'

The positions of all of Da Qi in the grasslands seemed to be on the secret letter. This made Chu Mo think of all kinds of actions, and gave him enormous confidence.

When anticipating the enemy, the most important isn't a person's judgement, but rather (spy) intelligence!

Chu Mo silently memorized the contents of the letter, then he casually turned to the second page.

At one glance, his face revealed a shocked color.

Because the second page were almost completely unrelated to the things on the first page, but it made Chu Mo's heart beat like crazy!

There was a map on the second page of the letter. It was a map of the grassland. On the bottom there were some words that gave an explanation. The position on the map is the hidden location of an Immortal's palace!

The fist-sized Yuan stone sucked in by the piece of jade came from outside the legendary abode of the immortal.

The letter said that location exists in an extremely mysterious place. Although it is there in this world, but yet it seems self-contained.

A door opens every full moon, but the location the door opens is different every time. And not just any person can enter.

This location has already been discovered for two years. Da Qi

has sent over a hundred men to enter the door, but they were all defeated.

A couple people actually entered, but they have never come out. Odds are they died inside.

The secret letter said Da Qi's three princes entered the grasslands. They were personally in charge of destroying the Wang Court and searching for the immortal palace.

Immortal palace!

These two words are enough to make someone's blood surge.

Legends say the founder of the Immortal Sky was an almighty person near immortality. Two hundred years after establishing the sect, he broke through the sky and levitated heavenwards!

This matter was completely recorded and widely circulated.

Members of large sects like the Immortal Sky and a couple others all call themselves cultivators. In their eyes, the secular people of the world are all common people. They are ignorant and lacking a spiritual aura.

Only cultivators are entitled to seek the faintly visible immortality path.

But speaking of, for the past several hundred years, there hasn't been a single immortal person appear and break through the heavens.

Because of this, if an immortal palace was truly discovered on the grasslands, then don't mention the people of the secular world, the large sects would even be jealous.

"This is startling news!" There was flickering light in Chu Mo's pupils.

Then he suddenly thought, the elusive Qi Xiaoyu. Chu Mo couldn't help but guess: This girl disappears every day without a trace, don't tell me she.....is also seeking this immortal palace?

He believed this is a real possibility. Like this, it could explain how she is such a remarkable young girl, able to appear in such a desolate location.

Chu Mo calculated how far away the next full moon is. There are still eight or nine days. The secret letter only showed one location, but this is already enough for Chu Mo.

Because he has a superiority over other people that cannot be compared!

That piece of jade!

Chu Mo believed if that place really has an immortal palace,

there must certainly be good things inside. The jade would certainly give him a sign. After all, both the Yuan stone and a withering shrub didn't get past the jade.

Gathering up the secret letter, Chu Mo walked over the Ge Erzha. He looked at him without saying anything, then he walked to the side. Chu Mo sat cross-legged on a piece of felt and started silently cultivating.

Including attaining experience in battle, everything needs time to digest.

Chu Mo isn't like those disciples in the large sects with masters giving point by point instructions and direction. He had a lazy master, and everything could only be grasped himself bit by bit.

It is very bitter, and somewhat arduous, but every acquisition made Chu Mo extremely happy.

He could clearly feel himself quickly increase and grow every day.

Early the next morning, the east revealed a gray dawn. Nuo Yi's guard woke up and saw Chu Mo sitting there guarding the whole night. His face immediately revealed a color of shame.

"Son Lin, quick go rest a moment. I'm truly sorry. We made you stay here doing night watch for us." A bodyguard looked at Chu Mo and spoke.

Chu Mo opened his eyes, waved his hand, and said: “No harm, I needed to cultivate.”

Several more people woke up soon after, and they buried all of the corpses.

Nuo Yi woke up after everything completed. She lead along that little six or seven year old boy before Chu Mo. Her whole manner was several times better than last night.

Nui Yi’s pair of water pupils fell on Chu Mo, and she softly spoke: “Noble son, did you not rest all night?”

Chu Mo laughed and said: “As for me, cultivating is rest.”

A trace of worship appeared in Nuo Yi’s pupils: “People cultivating are really different from the masses!”

At this time, the little boy lead by Nuo Yi suddenly looked at Chu Mo and loudly said: “How about being my sister’s husband?”

“.....” Chu Mo was immediately speechless. The corners of his mouth twitched, and he didn’t know what to say.

“What did you utter!” Nuo Yi’s face turned bright red, and she softly patted her little brother’s head.

The little boy looked at Chu Mo and said: “You’re so fierce, the thing us grassland people worship the most are heroes! I don’t want an older brother from Elder Hao Yue’s household to be my sister’s husband. I hate them!”

“Don’t speak carelessly!” Nuo Yi chided her little brother, and turned to Chu Mo with a red face: “I’m sorry, little children don’t understand things.....”

“I’m no longer little.....” The little boy protested: “You aren’t much older than me!”

The boy looked again at Chu Mo: “We are both men, you give the happy words, yes or no.....”

“You little fart child, what man?” Nuo Yi angered a little, and she kicked the little boy’s behind. Then she pulled his ear, and dragged him back into the tent to teach him a lesson.

It is often said children’s words carry no harm, but Chu Mo isn’t a grown up himself. He could only dumbfoundedly maintain silence when facing this kind of matter.

Weddings and what not are currently far away from him!

But if this were a different time and place, I’m afraid he would have already excitedly replied.

Thinking of that brother of his own in yellow flame city, Chu

Mo's eyes revealed a trace of sadness, but it was quickly replaced by a resoluteness.

“The things I do here will be beneficial to all of Da Xia!”

“Wait until I finish the things here, I will return home!”

The group of people once again got on the road soon after. The whole unit's atmosphere was several more times relaxed than before.

The people going through life and death revealed a dull smile, burying the injuries of the past in their hearts.

Nuo Yi seemed to be somewhat brooding over the earlier matter, and she didn't really dare look into Chu Mo's eyes. The little prince of the Wang Court furtively glanced in Chu Mo's direction, but he didn't dare be too wanton. His sister probably didn't let him off easy earlier in the morning.

After a night's rest, Pang Zhongyuan's vigor recovered for the most part. He enjoyably talked with Chu Mo along the road.

Pang Zhongyuan gave Chu Mo an introduction about several affairs on the grassland, including the distribution of each power, even the local customs of the grasslands.

Chu Mo discovered Pang Zhongyuan's knowledge to be very profound. He carried an air of authority when speaking. Chu Mo

reckoned Pang didn't have a nameless history in Da Xia. He was sure there was a story behind coming to the grasslands.

But Pang Zhongyuan seemed unwilling to mention Da Xia, and Chu Mo didn't pester.

Chu Mo was pleasantly surprised to discover that the road to Elder Hao Yue's clan was actually the same direction as the location of the immortal palace!

This made him very happy. At least Chu Mo now didn't have to find a reason to go off on his own and find the immortal palace.

Only having to go a little distance, he would have several opportunities to search.

There is no need to worry about this matter, because there is an opportunity every month. The immortal palace would have already been snatched up a long time ago by others if it was that easy to enter.

Nuo Yi and the others didn't kill or interrogate Ge Erzha along the road. They only tied him up, and carried him on a horse. Chu Mo curiously found out from Pang Zhongyuan, Ge Erzha is actually a close nephew of Elder Hao Yue!

Strictly speaking he could be considered a younger generation of the grasslands Wang Court!

Pang Zhongyuan quietly told Chu Mo: “In fact the large majority of the Wang Court imperial guards are all related to the Wang Court, otherwise it is very difficult to become one of them.”

“This time, the Wang Court suddenly changed, and such a large unexpected event occurred, but there weren’t many actual traitors in the imperial guard. Those few real traitors were all the close subordinates of prince Jin and Yin. Furthermore the families of others were seized by prince Jin and Yin, and they didn’t dare disobey.”

Chu Mo said: “Is Ge Erzha also in that type of situation?” Chu Mo’s impression towards Ge Erzha became a little bit stronger after last night.

Chu Mo didn’t care if others knew he took something from the body of the special envoy, but he would be a little embarrassed if Ge Erzha told this secret.

But Ge Erzha didn’t say anything. The same as if he forgot the matter. Throwing away his prior deeds, this person.....he could be considered a man.

“Elder Hao Yue is relatively mindful of kin. This is the reason we begged you to hold back the blade at that time.” Pang Zhongyuan spoke, then he looked far away and lightly said: “We will soon arrive, continuing on I must temporarily take my leave from noble son Lin!”

Chu Mo laughed: “No matter, the situation is serious.”

Chapter 31: Precious Lotus Princess

Going ahead another three miles, over a hundred horsemen suddenly appeared, steaming with murderous intent, and they blocked the path of Chu Mo and the others.

The horseman in front shouted from far away: “Newcomers stop! Approach another step and we won’t be polite!”

After speaking, the hundred plus horsemen notched their bows and aimed at Nuo Yi’s group.

The atmosphere immediately tensed!

Chu Mo was at Nuo Yi’s side, and he clearly saw her face change. Her pupils flashed a smear of intense anger.

The horseman beside Nuo Yi shouted: “Brother Ba Duo, I am Han Feng. I invited you to drink wine last year at the Wang Court. Do you know recognize me?”

The leading horseman waved his hand, commanding the hundred plus horsemen to cease. They put their bows down, but they did not put them away.

This made Chu Mo’s brow slightly wrinkle. He couldn’t believe the opposing group of people didn’t know their status, but yet they still displayed this type of attitude. Clearly telling their group of [people](#) —

[TL: — in raws]

This isn't too welcoming!

This result is almost the same as Chu Mo deduced earlier.

Looking at Nuo Yi on the horseback beside breathing heavily, Chu Mo said: "Don't get mad. Don't forget, this is something we anticipated."

"Yes, I listened to you. " No Yi quietly replied, then mumbled: "Where is my aunt?"

"So it is brother Hang Feng. Sorry, I didn't see clearly. I didn't know you would suddenly bring people to elder Hao Yue's clan. What affair is it?"

The horseman named Han Feng scolded inside: 'Still pretending? The Wang Court is a huge incident. You all certainly knew at the first moment. What is the motive behind putting on this act?'

But this thought could only be kept inside. After all, the present isn't the past. Compared to before, Ba Duo would absolutely welcome him at first sight with an extremely respectful manner, carefully.....in fear of provoking a Wang Court horseman.

"Ah!"

Han Feng sighed, then slowly drove his horse forward before Ba Duo, bitterly smiling: “Don’t tell me Ba Duo and his brothers don’t know what happened at the Wang Court?”

The horseman Ba Duo is a thirty year old strong man. His skin is dark, and he has a pair of small eyes that twinkle shrewd rays of light. He didn’t deny and nodded: “I heard, the king and queen suddenly died. Brothers Jin and Yin control the Wang Court. They say the princess is rebelling. There is currently an arrest warrant issued to Hao Yue’s clan.....it request that every clan arrest the princess upon sight.”

Han Feng’s pupils flashed with the color of rage. He said in a suppressed voice: “Brother Ba Duo, don’t tell me you believe these slanderous words?”

Ba Duo somewhat embarrassingly laughed: “This.....I am of such little importance, it doesn’t matter. Elder says princess is of noble character, and naturally couldn’t do this type of thing.”

Han Feng’s inside rage slightly subsided, and he said: “Princess is currently in the ranks behind me. Please send people back and report to Elder. Say the princess has come to pay a visit.”

Ba Duo’s pair of clever pupils flashed a trace of disdain. He coldly laughed inside: ‘Pay a visit? Already an exiled princess, yet still carrying on airs? Still believe you are the pearl of the grasslands?’

But of course he naturally didn’t speak these words aloud. He looked over at the troops far away, cupped his fist in respect, and

yelled: “I didn’t know the princess came. Ba Duo has committed an offense, princess see forgiveness!”

Ba Duo then casually said to the men at his side: “Quick, return and report to Elder. Say the princess has arrived!”

A cold light flashed in Han Feng’s pupils. The horsemen of the wang court weren’t just warriors. They received the finest education of the whole grasslands since childhood.

Their education wouldn’t necessarily be much worse than the top ranked schools in Da Qi and Da Xia.

Therefore, each of the Wang Court horsemen were practically all capable scholars and warriors. Their IQ naturally couldn’t be low.

Seeing this big smug appearance from Ba Duo, Han Feng wanted to cut him.

Opposing the Wang Court princess, actually this rude, it’s truly hateful!

Ba Duo’s face carried a somewhat indifferent smile. Of course he can see Han Feng’s discontent appear, but he is deliberate!

Ba Duo was just short of confronting Han Feng and saying: My people don’t have much manners, if anything offended you, come and attack!

All of this is naturally incited by Ba Duo, otherwise, with what grounds could such a small clan team leader be so arrogant to the Wang Court princess?

At this time Ba Duo began to be somewhat disappointed. In his thoughts, he could be rude to the princess, given that she could endure it, but these horsemen.....they certainly would not tolerate it!

He anxiously awaited for the horsemen to enrage and hit him.

Like this, he would have enough excuse to kill all of the close bodyguards of Nuo Yi!

Just one hothead!

At that time, only Nuo Yi and her little brother need to live.....are these men going to let it go?

It's a pity, Han Feng's eyes carry intense anger, but he unexpectedly doesn't flare-up.

'He's damn patient!' Ba Duo couldn't help but curse inside.

Far away.

[Brother Lee](#), the third prince sitting on the same horse with Nuo

Yi, couldn't help but scold in a low voice: "A dog threatening based on his master's power. He actually dares look down on us. The former King and Queen were vainly good to them. Looks like they raised a pack of thankless wolves!"

[TL: The prince's name is actually Lie '烈', which means fierce. I've changed it to Lee because Lie is most likely too confusing a name in English.]

"Don't carelessly speak. Remember, it is good to think these thoughts inside. You must not speak aloud! You must give respect to uncle when we meet. Is that clear?" Nuo Yi's eyes were slightly red, and she educated her little brother in a low voice. But in her own heart, was it not filled with grievances?

"Sister, don't worry. I am small, but I understand everything. Uncle isn't here. I am nothing without my prince birthright. Furthermore, the head of this prince could be taken at any time by the sword." Brother Lee softly spoke. That tender little face filled with rage: "One day, I will grow up big. I won't let any of those that betray the Wang Court go!"

Chu Mo profoundly looked at brother Lee. He darkly thought: 'The children that grow up in the royal family really aren't the same. So small, yet actually speaks words like this.

Nuo Yi lightly patted her little brother's head and sighed without saying anything.

Pang Zhongyuan consoled from the side: "Princess be relieved, everything.....all according to noble son Lin's plans. If they are too

cordial, it actually won't be good for us."

Nuo Yi nodded and deeply sucked in a breath.

At this time, from an extremely far away place, a unit of horses and men advanced in this direction at high speed.

A female's crying voice could be heard from far away: "Where are my poor little niece and nephew? You bastards! Are you all idiots? You dare block my niece and nephew! I will certainly take care of you when you return!"

Ba Duo's face revealed an embarrassed smile. He rushed to Han Feng and cupped his fist: "Brother Han Feng, apologies, I am fulfilling my duty.....you must not be offended."

Han Feng nodded tight-lipped: "Okay!"

Hu!

A woman atop a high black horse searched, and broke out from the group of people towards Nuo Yi.

A large group of horsemen, at least three hundred swept over.

Then they stopped in front of Ba Duo's group, immediately spreading into a fan, actually concealing.....they took up a posture that completely surrounded Ba Dou and his men.

Ba Duo's face immediately became unsightly. His brows slightly raised, yet he didn't speak a word. On the contrary, he made his men put away their bows not wanting to act rashly.

This group of cavalry were all Wang Court riders!

This grassland is truly elite!

They were all those that followed after princess Bao Lian married into Elder Hao Yue's clan.

The king loved his little sister. Despite the opposition of others, he dispatched three hundred of the Wang Court horsemen to his own little sister.

As a result, princess Bao Lian always had unmatched devotion to her older brother. It is unknown how many times she has cried after hearing of her brother and the queen's sudden death. She cursed brother Jin and Yin countless times.

If it wasn't for Elder Hao Yue holding her back, this princess well skilled in war and culture would have already brought men to the Wang Court and settled accounts with Jin and Yin.

Upon hearing her own niece and nephew weren't permitted entry at the first moment, the hotheaded princess fumed on the spot. She slapped the horseman across the face, then brought men charging over.

Princess Bao Lian is well aware of the situation inside Hao Yue's clan. Her not speaking doesn't represent a lack of knowledge, only just too lazy. That's it.

Now she felt her own niece and nephew could have danger. She immediately enraged, and gathered up the way of a princess before she was married. No matter the situation, she brought people over.

On the other side, Nuo Yi and the little boy in her arms saw their aunt rushing over and yelling. Then they jumped down from their horses and ran over to her.

The aunt rushed within a hundred feet, then actually jumped from the horse, and stepped through the air in their direction.

This type of skill, one must have at least stepped into the yellow rank to possess!

Chu Mo's pupils slightly flashed as he sat on the horse. He thought: 'This former Wang Court princess.....she's not so simple!'

Princess Bao Lian already rushed before Nuo Yi, and she grabbed Nuo Yi and brother Lee into her embrace. Tears flowed down like rain. She said while weeping: "My two unfortunate children. It's truly been hard on you. Auntie is sorry. Auntie should have gotten you all earlier!"

Princess Nuo Yi and brother Lee could no longer bear it in the end. They broke into tears in auntie's embrace. All of their grief couldn't be put into words.

The eyes of Pang Zhongyuan and the crowd of horsemen began to swell up. They dropped their heads and maintained silence.

If it were not for the fact that men don't easily cry, these people couldn't stop the tears.

This journey was honestly extremely bitter. The amount of people that came with them before wasn't this few. The thousand plus Wang Court Horsemen is now reduced to only a dozen.

If it were not for encountering Chu Mo, afraid it would be very difficult for the rest to live until arriving at Elder Hao Yue's clan.

The three cried on each other's shoulders until gradually settling down.

Princess Bao Lian's eyes were swollen red. She hugged Nuo Yi and brother Lee, then softly said: "Good, now you both don't need to be afraid of anything. So long as auntie is here, she won't allow anyone to harm you all in the slightest! Not anyone!"

The voice was soft, but these words were absolutely resolute, without any doubt!

Chapter 32: Grassland Palace

“Let’s go. Come with auntie to see your uncle, ask him to send troops, and grab those two animals Jin and Yin!”

“If your uncle doesn’t send troops, auntie will take you all far away!” Princess Bao Lian resolutely spoke.

Chu Mo didn’t understand this former Wang Court princess, and he was somewhat confounded upon seeing her.

Because this princess Bao Lian appeared twenty-eight or twenty-nine, not close to thirty.

Her skin snow white, and facial expressions youthful. She resembled Nuo Yi about eighty percent, only her body brimmed with that type of liveliness of a grown woman.

‘She isn’t old.....didn’t they say before, Nuo Yi will marry one of Elder Hao Yue’s several sons? Don’t tell me she gave birth to a child at ten years old?’ Chu Mo thought to himself.

Pang Zhongyuan drew to Chu Mo’s side and softly spoke: “Elder Hao Yue had a previous wife before marrying princess Bao Lian. They gave birth to three sons.”

“His wife later died of an illness. He asked the former king for a marriage, and was married to princess Bao Lian. She still hasn’t given birth to any children.”

Chu Mo sensitively took note. Pang Zhongyuan was a little bit unnatural when speaking these words. His forehead.....seemed to carry a trace of dull sadness.

“Originally like this.”

Princess Bao Lian personally helped princess Nuo Yi and prince Lee onto the horse at this time, then she faced Chu Mo and Pang Zhongyuan. Her eyes somewhat dodged when they saw Pang Zhongyuan. She somewhat unnaturally said: “Mister Pang, this journey has been hard on you all!”

“Princess, this is our duty!” Pang Zhongyuan bowed and softly spoke.

Princess Baolian nodded, then said: “Let us go!”

“First go to my place!”

Chu Mo somewhat strangely looked at Pang Zhongyuan. Pang immediately explained: “Princess has her own residence here. Her and Elder Hao Yue.....do not live together.”

Chu Mo was startled. He thought to himself: ‘There’s a story!’

Soon after, the large group of people passed by Ba Duo’s group, then Majestically advanced into the grassland’s depths.

From beginning to end, princess Bao Lian didn't say a single word to Ba Duo, the team captain of Elder Hao Yue's clan. She didn't even look at Ba Duo.

Ba Duo's expression was also extremely unsightly. When the group of people had moved far away, he called out the horseman with the red swollen cheek and roared in a low voice: "Why did you provoke her?"

That horseman felt wrong and said: "She never goes to elder. How could your subordinate think she would be there today. I don't know who leaked the news....."

"They should die!" Ba Duo gnashed: "Did you see Elder?"

The horseman that carried the message shook his head: "From beginning to end, Elder didn't appear. The three sons also weren't present....."

Ba Duo enraged: "Should die, this woman has never given us face ever since she got married. Damn, princess bitch!"

"Boss.....speak cautiously!" The messenger horseman softly said.

Ba Duo spoke: "What? Everyone here is one of ours. Don't tell me the three noble sons don't think the same way?"

“Forget it, boss is angry. Let us go back and debrief this matter. I want the three noble sons to know.” The messenger horseman rubbed his cheek, and somewhat bitterly spoke.

He originally believed it to be a good job. He could show face to the three sons. Who could have thought he would encounter the angry princess Bao Lian, then get slapped in vain. He didn't even get to report to the sons.

Ba Duo looked at the messenger horseman and said in a deep voice: “You suffered the wrongs. Return, I will speak with the eldest son, and contain their fury for a couple days. Wait until it's time, Elder will truly think it passed, humph.....”

Ba Duo's face revealed a cold smile as he spoke: “Go!”

The group of men faced another direction and left at high speed.

Princess lead her niece and nephew along the road. After hurrying a couple of miles, a gorgeous mansion appeared ahead. It spanned thousands of acres.

Richly ornamented, magnificent.

Twenty foot walls were erected outside of the palace. Outside of the walls was a hundred foot wide moat!

This is simply an elegant little city!

Chu Mo stared somewhat foolishly, because these buildings were completely different from the style of other buildings on the grasslands. They were almost the exact same construction as the buildings in Da Xia.

The construction and style on the grasslands is mainly yurts and tents. Even if it is the Wang Court yurt.....it is only bigger.....and a little bit more elegant.

Pang Zhongyuan explained at Chu Mo's side: "Princess Bao Lian has loved Da Xia culture ever since she was little. She likes to read Da Xia's ancient writings and poetry, even carries..... she also likes Da Xia's construction."

Pang Zhongyuan lightly sighed: "I never thought, Elder Hao Yue towards her.....he's truly not bad. He actually built a Da Xia palace here for her."

Chu Mo nodded: "Right, it couldn't be easy to build a palace like this here. The materials are an enormous trouble."

Pang Zhongyuan's face revealed a bitter smile. Somewhat dropping the whisper he said: "The financial resources of Elder Hao Yue.....is called the strongest in the prairie. During the Wang Court's most flourishing time period, the amount of wealth accumulated didn't even amount to one third of Elder Hao Yue's fortune."

"That powerful!" Chu Mo was startled, then he looked at Pang

Zhongyuan and said: “Between mister and princess Bao Lian.....”

Chu Mo still hadn't finished speaking when Pang Zhongyuan's face slightly changed, and Pang cut off his words: “Noble son Lin, refrain from mentioning this matter!” Pang felt his own manner wasn't good after speaking, and he bitterly explained: “This.....but Elder Hao Yue's territory, some words are not convenient to speak. Noble son if you want to know, later on.....there will be opportunity.”

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “No matter, I was only a little curious. That's it.”

It was already clearly obvious. There was a close relationship between Pang Zhongyuan and princess Bao Lian before she married Elder Hao Yue. It is clearly obvious looking at the way the two treated each other.

Soon after, a person put down the drawbridge on the moat. They entered the city gate, and went into the city.

A large amount of servants came out and welcomed, then a person took care of each rider, sending them to clean up and rest.

Chu Mo also received very good treatment. He enjoyed an exclusive courtyard.

And Pang Zhongyuan was lead around by people as soon as he entered the city.

This only strengthened the innermost conjectures in the depths of Chu Mo's heart: 'This romantic and energetic uncle that is knowledgeable and refined in his middle age. He certainly has a hidden story with the former princess of the Wang Court.

Chu Mo was extremely curious about this matter. His plots are very large. Chu Mo wants to change the whole structure of the grasslands!

Because of this, every fine detail cannot be passed by.

Grandfather said in the past: A thousand mile river dike can collapse from an ant cave!

If careless, sooner or later there could be a problem!

Chu Mo also acquired a bold but cautious nature since childhood. He was careful with any matter in order to make fewer mistakes when making a decision.

Chu Mo drove away the several servant girls that came to help him bathe, and he soaked in a bathtub, feeling especially comfortable. He almost couldn't remember the last time he had bathed in hot water.

Chu Mo finally came out after soaking for an hour, and he changed into the new clothes sent over earlier. This time the clothes were very fitting, but they weren't elegant. They were the

same as the horsemen wore.

This is something Chu Mo had repeatedly urged Nuo Yi in the past.

His whole consciousness felt much better after changing clothes.

Soon after, Chu Mo quietly cultivated in the room. The daily cultivation could not be disturbed no matter what. Remarkable talent also needs to diligently cultivate, otherwise good talent will be completely squandered.

Chu Mo understood this logic since he was little.

The sky darkened after cultivating the rest of the day. A servant girl came at this time and invited Chu Mo to the feast.

The welcoming feast is certainly essential.

Chu Mo followed the girl to the banquet hall, and he once again saw Nuo Yi and brother Lee. The two accompanied by princess Bao Lian's side, and they had completely changed clothes.

Nuo Yi changed appeared even more vivid and colorful after changing into a bright yellow dress. Her eyes revealed a gentle and soft laughter upon seeing Chu Mo.

Princess Bao Lian followed her niece's vision and saw Chu Mo.

She slightly nodded, but didn't call him over.

Chu Mo estimated Nuo Yi had told her aunt something.

Chu Mo relaxed a bit inside. Princess Bao Lian seems to favor her own niece and nephew.

Nuo Yi said in the past that her aunt is the most worthy of trust.

“If it is like this, that plan.....it will be even easier to succeed.” Chu Mo thought inside.

He looked all around, yet Chu Mo didn't see Pang Zhongyuan's figure. The somewhat strange thing is that when elder Pang Zhongyuan entered from outside, he was wearing a completely white set of scholarly robes. He had neatly combed hair, and his whole appearance seemed to spiritually glow.

Seeing Chu Mo, Pang Zhongyuan slightly smiled, then he unhurriedly walked to princess Bao Lian's table.

Chu Mo stared, and he couldn't understand. Pang Zhongyuan cautiously avoided in the past. Why now.....did he change into a different person?

Princess Bao Lian was also cheerful and talkative. She faced Pang Zhongyuan and slightly bowed: “Mister Pang has come!”

Chu Mo couldn't help but give a supercilious look and think: 'The world between adults is very complicated!'

The banquet started soon after. Fine mixed dishes gathered. The people sitting at the table with Chu Mo were all the horsemen of princess Nuo Yi. They were all extremely respectful to Chu Mo, and they wanted Chu Mo to taste all of the dishes first. Chu Mo grew up in the military since he was little, so he naturally knew how to deal with these kind of men.

Quickly, the atmosphere of wine became even warmer. Everyone lifted their cups and toasted. They loudly chatted, and they temporarily forgot the pains and unhappiness of the past.

The departed are already dead, but the living.....still want to be alive.

Chu Mo didn't indulge, and no one forced him.

Men suddenly shouted from outside as the feast was coming to the tail end: "Elder Hao Yue arrived! First son arrived! Second son arrived! Third son arrived!"

The boisterous dining hall became quiet all of the sudden. Chu Mo looked along with everyone else at the door.

He only saw a fifty year old man wearing a splendid robe. He wore a gold crown, and walked over with an imposing demeanor

.Three young men followed behind. The one in the very front appeared twenty-two or twenty-three. He was very handsome and wore white robes. He carried a moderate smile.

The person in the middle looked very much like the young man in the front, only with an ice-cold solemn expression. He wore black robes and conscientiously smiled. His posture when walking was extremely stiff. Each step was as if measured by a ruler.

The very last young man looked seventeen or eighteen. He appeared extremely handsome. He wore green colored robes and carried a folded fan. Picturesque and colorful, he was like those noble sons of Yellow Flame City.

Chapter 33: Elder Hao Yue

At the same time, two ordinary appearing middle aged men followed behind the four people. They wore extremely common looking clothes, and they appeared to be regular bodyguards.

But Chu Mo was reminded of what Nuo Yi had said before. Elder Hao Yue has two Yuan Closure guards always at his side. He thought.....it must be these two.

Chu Mo had an eye-opening experience looking at Elder Hao Yue and his sons' appearances.

He had only encountered rough men on the grassland. Although Nuo Yi is extremely beautiful, but she wears [grassland style clothing](#) with lots of ornaments hanging down.

She jingled as she walked.

[TL: This grassland arc seems largely themed after Mongolia. The grassland style clothing [probably looks something like this](#).]

Chu Mo imagined all the grassland people to be like this.

But Chu Mo felt mistaken after looking at Elder Hao Yue and the three sons. It was a feeling like returning to Da Xia.

Chu Mo looked over at Pang Zhongyuan. Sure enough, an unnatural look flashed across Pang Zhongyuan's face after Elder Hao Yue walked in. But soon after it returned to normal. Pang

Zhongyuan laughed and stood up, and he very respectfully looked at Elder Hao Yue.

Nuo Yi and Lee booth stood up, smiled, and greeted Elder Hao Yue.

Princess Bao Lian was the last to stand up. Furthermore, her tone was very plain, completely unlike addressing one's own husband. She plainly said as she saw Elder Hao Yue walk over: "Why did you come?"

Elder Hao Yue slightly smiled, then nodded to Pang Zhongyuan at the side: "Mister Pang, we meet again!"

Pang Zhongyuan faced Elder Hao Yue and saluted: "Pang humbly meets Elder Hao Yue!"

"Haha, don't be so polite. We are all old friends!" Elder Hao Yue frankly laughed. This time he looked at Princess Bao Lian with a doting face: "Our niece and nephew have arrived. I cannot come and have a look?"

Continuing on, Hao Yue turned to the three young men behind him: "Are you going to greet princess and the third prince?"

Although Wang Court doesn't have as many rules as Da Qi and Da Xia, but the seniority rules are the same.

The three young men's faces didn't appear unwilling. They all

wore a smile and gave respects to Nuo Yi and brother Lee. Nuo Yi and brother Lee also smiled courteously. The atmosphere was very harmonious.

Chu Mo's sense of danger towards Elder Hao Yue increased several times. By only looking at the scene, it was completely different than the ice-cold manner described earlier to him by Ba Duo.

“Don't tell me Ba Duo acted on his own, using that attitude towards Nuo Yi?”

It is obviously impossible!

Then it can only be said, Elder Hao Yue.....his shrewdness is too deep. He can disguise himself extremely well.

His three sons weren't the slightest bit different!

But Nuo Yi and brother Lee.....are not being outdone.

This made Chu Mo somewhat sorrowed inside. Sure enough, children born in this kind of family have the ability to put on a performance. They can feign their true feelings in the blink of an eye.

Elder Hao Yue's appearance made the atmosphere of the banquet hall much more depressing. But Elder Hao Yue was totally unaware. He called people to prepare a new table, and he

cheerfully drank wine with Pang Zhongyuan.

Elder Hao raised a cup up and toasted the horsemen that protected Nuo Yi along the road.

“Thank you all for protecting the princess and prince along the road. You all suffered!” Elder Hao Yue stood up while holding a bowl: “This bowl of wine, I drink first!”

The group of horsemen were all cultured men. Seeing Elder Hao Yue like this, they all stood up one by one, and they finished their bowls of wine.

“You are all good men of the grasslands, hot-blooded strong men! Don’t be tense because I am here. Treat it like your own home! Make yourselves at ease!” Elder Hao Yue showed the empty bowl to everyone, then sat down smiling.

The banquet hall’s atmosphere gradually returned to the previous warmth.

Chu Mo yet felt a burst of cold inside. He squinted and observed the expressions of Nuo Yi, Pang Zhongyuan, and Princess Bao Lian.

Obviously those several people are all extremely clever. The depths of their pupils were all extremely ice-cold and angry.

‘This Elder Hao Yue, although he is the lord here and receiving everyone, and he isn’t doing anything wrong. But, His words and

his manner is clearly to give a sign to everyone.....’ Chu Mo secretly thought: ‘He right now.....thinks himself this grassland’s king!’

‘Furthermore, he hasn’t once mentioned the former king and queen after entering.....’

‘The former king and queen were always good to Elder Hao Yue. This person.....truly ice-cold.’

Before, he was truly underestimated by some!

Chu Mo thought of the things recorded in the secret letter on the body of the Da Qi special envoy. Chu Mu had a startling thought all of the sudden: ‘In that secret letter, there were three or four people. They were all of Elder Hao Yue’s clan.....’

Chu Mo originally believe Elder wouldn’t know about it. But today’s performance showed such a shrewd person. There’s no way Elder Hao Yue didn’t know about this affair.

‘Don’t tell me.....Elder Hao Yue is the most secret and ferocious chess piece of Da Qi in the grasslands?’

Although it is only a guess, but Chu Mo was still startled by this possibility. Grandfather once said in the past: ‘High level [Go](#) matches and competitions are full of intelligence and hidden schemes. Common people even until death.....they are all completely unaware of what happened.’

Only when all the cards are revealed will you finally know the complete truth. Even sometimes, all the cards are revealed, but you still won't see the truth!

'Looks like I have to look again at the contents of that letter after I return.' Chu Mo thought to himself.

The banquet continued on until very late before finally finishing. Elder Hao Yue's group of men didn't stay there for the night, but rather they directly took their people and left.

Not long after a person guided Chu Mo to his room, Pang Zhongyuan dropped in for a visit.

Pang Zhongyuan drank a lot of alcohol tonight, and he looked somewhat intoxicated. He first gave an apology upon seeing Chu Mo: "I'm sorry. Tonight noble son Lin suffered an offense. Ordinarily.....noble son Lin should sit at the head table!"

Chu Mo waved his hand: "Didn't we speak about it before. My status cannot be revealed. Otherwise, the plan will be unable to unfold later on."

Pang Zhongyuan waved his hand, and somewhat bitterly said: "The plan.....i'm afraid there is a change!"

"How?" Chu Mo looked at Pang Zhongyuan, slightly wrinkling his brow.

Pang Zhongyuan drank some water, then he said in a low voice: “Elder Hao Yue.....is an enormous problem!”

“Ah?” Chu Mo looked at Pang Zhongyuan, this conjecture he already knew from tonight, but what method did Pang Zhongyuan use to infer.

“Just now when drinking wine, I intentionally tested out Elder Hao Yue’s three sons. The three men.....the oldest is a smiling tiger. His schemes are very deep! The second was almost completely silent the whole night. Only the third, the self proclaimed romantic and somewhat careless is the least scheming.”

“Because of this, the third is the easiest to deal with among those three sons.”

Pang Zhongyuan spoke somewhat long-winded because he drank a lot of wine. Chu Mo didn’t rush him, and patiently listened.

“I became aware from the third son’s words. The obstruction from Ba Duo today wasn’t inspired by Elder Hao Yue. It came from the eldest son, Hao Yue GeMu!”

“This matter made Elder Hao Yue furious. He ruthlessly scolded Hao Yue Gemu.”

Pang Zhongyuan’s intoxicated face revealed a cold smile: “That

boy Hao Yue Geshui only spoke half a sentence, but how could it escape my sight?”

“This matter isn’t inspired by Elder Hao Yue, then, Elder Hao Yue became extremely angry because of Hao Yue Gemu’s actions. Inside of this.....there is certainly a problem!”

“Because he isn’t Bao Lian! He doesn’t like Nuo Yi and brother Lee!”

“His anger, he is only afraid Hao Yue Gemu’s actions would give rise to our suspicions!”

“Therefore, he brought the three sons to the banquet and made an appearance. And everyone appeared like close relatives. They didn’t once mention the matter about the Wang Court.....this, is clearly to put us in paralysis!”

“Only his sons are still somewhat soft. How could their happy performance escape my sight?”

Pang Zhongyuan coldly smiled: “First he scolds Hao Yue Gemu, then he personally joins the banquet. This is fundamentally not Elder Hao Yue’s original nature! I understand him. There is only one reason for this! This guy, he schemes to expand. He wants to become the king of this grassland!”

“Are you saying.....he defected to Da Qi?” Chu Mo asked.

“Defected to Da Qi?” Pang Zhongyuan shook his head: “This possibility, perhaps there’s a chance, but very little. Given that he had a relationship with Da Qi, it would only be for mutual benefit. This person is arrogant to the bone. He wouldn’t likely throw in with Da Qi.”

Chu Mo thought a moment, then he asked a probing question: “Then.....could Elder Hao Yue’s subordinates have chess pieces of Da Qi?”

Pang Zhongyuan’s brow wrinkled, and he used his hands to massage his temples: “This probability.....it is possible.”

“Then.....our prior plan?” Chu Mo looked at Pang Zhonyuan: “Should it be temporarily postponed?”

“You also saw the circumstances. It is much more complex than we thought. We need to see clearly.....therefore, that plan should be temporarily postponed. This wrongs noble son Lin, to say here for some time.” Pang Zhongyuan spoke very apologetically.

“It doesn’t matter. Anyhow, I don’t have any urgent matters.” Chu Mo softly spoke: “Ought to be cautious!”

Princess Bao Lian and Nuo Yi also discussed this matter in their own room.

“Auntie, why do I feel uncle isn’t right?” Nuo Yi leaned on the bedside, also a little bit tipsy. She didn’t drink a lot, but it was over

a short time period. Those three brothers didn't pour for her, but they all drank a lot with her.

“He obviously isn't right!” Princess Bao Lian coldly smiled: “He has become strange after your father fell. First he asked me, Brothers Jin and Yin did such a heinous act, should they be killed?”

“What did you say auntie?” Nuo Yi asked.

“I obviously said they should die!” Princess Bao Lian said, then sighed: “Those two children, I saw them grow up. They weren't bad when they were little. I never thought they would actually do something so despicable after growing up.”

“Your uncle also asked me, If I kill brother Jin and Yin, who would the Wang Court's throne go to?”

Princess Bao Lian coldly smiled: “I clearly understood his meaning as soon as I heard him. I told him, the Wang Court has always continued on through the King's line. Brothers Jin and Yin died, is there not still brother Lee?”

“He said brother Lee is young, and he cannot lead the masses. I told him, brother Lee is young, but there is still Nuo Yi! It's not like the grasslands have never had a queen!”

Nuo Yi shook her head: “I certainly wouldn't be good.....”

“Why wouldn’t you be good?” Princess Bao Lian pulled Nuo Yi’s hand: “Your nature is the most like mine. Both energetic, daring to think and act, and you are smarter than me. Why would you not be good?”

“It is too early for this situation.....” Nuo Yi somewhat hopelessly said: “If uncle truly has that idea, who could stop him in the whole grassland?”

Princess Bao Lian sighed, hesitated, then softly said: “You know, the death of your father in mother, in fact.....there is a direct relationship with him!”

Chapter 34: Mystical Jade

“What?” Nuo Yi suddenly screamed.

Princess Bao Lian dully looked at her, then said: “Otherwise, where do you think the poison brothers Jin and Yin used came from?”

“This.....it’s not possible? The poison of brother Jin and Yin..... didn’t Da Qi give it to them?” Nuo Yi’s face filled with shock. The really never thought this situation would have anything to do with Elder Hao Yue. Then isn’t her coming here now the same as the lamb entering the tiger’s mouth?

“Da Qi? You thought wrong!”

“But you don’t need to be afraid of anything. I am here, no one would dare harm you!” Princess Bao Lian saw Nuo Yi’s distress. She comforted her then said: “This situation, I also just discovered it not long ago.”

“Because, right now I.....also took this type of poison. I’m afraid I won’t live long.”

“This.....this is impossible! Auntie you are certainly joking with me?” tears streamed down Nuo Yi’s eyes. Her whole person collapsed in an instant.

Her parents were killed by her two brothers had already made

her suffer a serious wound. She fled along the road with great difficulty to meet her closest aunt, who is the sole person she can rely on in this world.

Yet anyone who switched places would collapse upon obtaining this kind of information again.

“Don’t worry, auntie is okay for the moment. That son of a bitch still doesn’t dare kill me at this time! He still needs my reputation to gather together the grassland clans!” Princess Bao Lian coldly spoke.

“How do you know these things?” Nuo Yi burst into tears. Her whole person became weak. She thought she had calmed down, but she discovered it is basically impossible to be calm.

Princess Bao Lian sighed: “Because I once heard Hao Yue Geshui mention that poison by accident, but he was immediately interrupted by Hao Yue Gemu.”

“I didn’t think much of it at that time. There are all kinds of mysterious herbs with magical effects on the grasslands. But I felt immediately not good after hearing the news of your father dying. Thus, I secretly found some trusted doctors to check my own body.....”

Princess Bao Lian spoke of these things, and a trace of dejection flashed across her face: “They discovered in the end that my body carried a type of slow acting poison. The doctor said I have a life expectancy of three to four months.”

“I thought of your mother and father at that time.”

Bao Lian sadly spoke: “As a result, I started to secretly investigate. You must not admit defeat, we are not alone. Although there are those bastards, but there are also several loyal to me!”

“I the end the clues were found by me.”

“How could this happen.....uncle he, isn't he good to you? He built you a palace.....” Nuo Yi whispered between tears.

“Because.....from marriage until now, I haven't let him touch me once!” Princess Bao Lian plainly spoke: “He is good to me. One reason he built me this palace is to give your father face! The second reason is to make me feel moved, but my heart.....has already been given to another. How could I give it to him?”

“His schemes are deeper than one could imagine. I was poisoned half a month before your parents died!”

“He already prepared to kill me at that time.”

“Because he knew, as soon as your parents died, it would be very difficult for you and your brother Lee without any support. The only person who could help you all is me!”

A trace of sadness spread across princess Bao Lian's eyes: “My

relationship with all of the tribes was extremely good at that time. The reason that bastard proposed to marry me is for that one point!”

“But.....but given that he truly wants to be king of the grasslands, he didn’t need to kill you.....you are his wife!” Nuo Yi spoke.

“What is a wife? If he doesn’t kill me, how could I permit the royal power of the grasslands to fall?” Bao Lian coldly laughed: “As long as I give the rally cry, several people will certainly believe me.....instead of him.”

“Then, does he know auntie is aware?” Nuo Yi asked.

“Of course he doesn’t know. I already discovered who poisoned me, but I still appear unaware. I take the poison every day!” Bao Lian spoke.

“That, how is that okay. You can’t let them know you are aware, but you can’t keep taking that poison!” Nuo Yi was immediately anxious.

Bao Lian patted Nuo Yi’s hand, then said: “Silly child, auntie isn’t stupid! That poison, as soon as I stop taking it, it will immediately flare up.”

“That, how is that good?” Nuo Yi tears once again burst out. She couldn’t withstand another blow.

“In this short period of time, I’ll find an opportunity to kill him and his three animal sons.” Princess Bao Lian plainly spoke as if it were an everyday matter: “He planned to kill your parents through your two idiot brothers. He used the intent of Da Qi to take over the grasslands to frame Da Qi.”

“Do you know what the even more terrifying part is? His former wife.....the mother of his three sons was poisoned by him!”

“The symptoms of her death were exactly the same as your father and mother!”

“Scoundrels like him, if one doesn’t have any feud with him, be sure to hide far away. He is too terrifying! His schemes are too deep. His heart is vicious and merciless. He appears reliable, but is actually cold-blooded and merciless. He is a genuine ambitious and ruthless character!”

“But right now, we have such a deep hatred with him, how can we let him go?”

Nuo Yi was dumbstruck and mumbled: “I don’t know the symptoms before father and mother died.....”

Princess Bao Lian sighed: “You are still too young.....auntie already had her own intelligence networks.”

Speaking on, she gently pulled Nuo Yi’s hand: “Relax, auntie will

put you on the grassland throne as queen before she dies!”

.....

A couple days after, everything was peaceful the whole time. Chu Mo also continued to silently cultivate.

Apart from the several times Pang Zhonyuan came to find him, Chu Mo didn't see a trace of Nuo Yi.

Until very late at night on the fourth day, Chu Mo heard a slight noise in his own living room. He immediately got up and quietly moved to the living room. He grabbed a knife from the table, sat there, and quietly watched the bookshelf against the wall.

The slight ringing was coming from there.

The bookshelf slowly split open in the middle after a short period of time. Two figures walked out from there.

One of the people couldn't help but let out a low scream upon seeing Chu Mo sitting there.

Chu Mo was also startled. Because the people who came, it was shockingly princess Nuo Yi and her aunt.....princess Bao Lian!

The two were wearing maid outfits, and they appeared extremely low-key.

“You all, this is?” Chu Mo was a little stupefied. These two people came in the dark of night, obviously it wasn’t to harm him. Only the method they used made Chu Mo unusually speechless.

Because this Palace is princess Bao Lian’s domain!

To be this careful in her own territory, could it be.....Elder Hao Yue has people assigned here?

Nuo Yi’s face became a little red. It was probably because using this method to come to a man’s room is a little embarrassing.

“Making a visit late at night, we disturbed noble son Lin’s rest!”

Princess Bao Lian was extremely calm, and she deeply looked at Chu Mo: “Noble son Lin is truly incredible. Fortunately you didn’t act against us, otherwise we would have carelessly died here.”

Chu Mo laughed and pointed at the chairs to the side: “We should keep it short since the two of you came so secretly.”

Princess Bao Lian nodded and stopped the formalities. She told the whole present situation to Chu Mo, including the deeds of Elder Hao Yue.

Chu Mo was matchlessly startled inside. If it weren't for princess Bao Lian being so close to her niece and nephew, Chu Mo was afraid they would be completely wiped out by Elder Hao Yue's schemes!

This person actually schemes to this level!

“Old [ginger](#) is hotter than young ginger!” Chu Mo couldn't help but lament.

[TL: Ginger idiom means experience counts.]

“Noble son Lin is a young hero. I heard Nuo Yi say that luckily you saved her. Only in the present situation, I have no way to thank noble son Lin, but it is inscribed in our hearts!” Princes Bao Lian said heartfelt.

Chu Mo smiled: “This is nothing, only, princess is also poisoned?”

Princess Bao Lian nodded, but her face showed no change.

Nuo Yi's eyes suddenly shined from the side, and she looked at Chu Mo: “Noble son Lin, you are a disciple from a large sect. You must certainly have medicine that can cure poisons? You.....could you help my aunt? If only you save my aunt, I will do anything..... I.....”

Bao Lian laughed and shook her head: “Don't waste your thoughts. The ancestor of Elder Hao Yue's clan cultivated in a large

sect. This poison is passed down from him. It is said to be incurable!”

“We shouldn’t waste our efforts. We should use our time not in research, but in how to kill that bastard!”

Chu Mo inner assessment towards princes Bao Lian couldn’t help but rise several levels. She is a woman, but she is not the slightest bit lacking in ability when compared to a man.

Adaptable to circumstances, forthright atmosphere, emphasizing familial ties, and wisdom of a leader.....it far exceeds ordinary people!

If this was a man, he would be greater than Nuo Yi’s father.....even more fitting for the throne of the Wang Court.

Chu Mo never had the chance to meet the former king, but Chu Mo felt that a person who couldn’t see the schemes of his own sons and the several decades of plans arranged by Da Qi.....his ability must have been limited.

Chu Mo’s mind suddenly began to act. He focused his consciousness while looking at princess Bao Lian, then he thought to himself: ‘What is her realm!’

Soon after, the piece of jade slightly heated up. A section of information transferred into Chu Mo’s brain.

“Yellow rank one, her body is weak because of the toxic components.....”

“For the medicinal ingredients to cure.....”

“For the refining method: After attaining the ingredients, enter the space, then place on the green stone.”

“Energy required is slight.”

Chu Mo was just short of gasping. His face held an expression of disbelief. He never thought the jade he carried would actually be able to give such detailed information on princess Bao Lian.

Not only this, but it also analyzed the poison inside of princess Bao Lian.

The most important part of the information is the jade gave the necessary ingredients to cure the poison.....and sorted it out!

Among the many ingredients, Chu Mo had heard of them all!

There weren't any rare ingredients among the several mentioned. They could be found practically anywhere as long as one was careful

In the end it actually gave a method to refine the medicine.

His own piece of jade can actually refine medicine?

Chu Mo felt his own brains were somewhat useless.

Because he thought of a possibility at this time. It made Chu Mo want to face the sky and shout.

“Master can be saved!”

This piece of jade can come up with a remedy so long as I can use it to read master’s Seven Demon Poison.

Then, I only need to gather up all the ingredients for master, then could it be.....master’s poison.....it could be cured?

Godly jade!

Chu Mo never felt the piece of jade he carried was actually this valuable.

Chu Mo hadn’t been this excited since the day it changed the scripture of Heaven’s Will My Will.

“Noble son Lin? Noble son Lin? What are you doing? You don’t need to brood over it. The poison in Bao Lian is clear. Noble son Lin mustn’t think too much.....”

Princess Bao Lian's voice brought Chu Mo back.

Chu Mo looked at princess Bao Lian and said one hundred percent confident: "Don't worry so long as I am here. You wish to die.....but you won't!"

Chapter 35: Meeting Xiaoyu Again

“Really? That.....that’s too good! Noble son Lin, thank you, thank you!” Nuo Yi suddenly burst with excitement as soon as she heard the words, regardless of the actual situation.

Bao Lian was also slightly startled, even forgetting to make sure Nuo Yi wasn’t too excited as to avoid alarming anyone else. She blankly looked at Chu Mo for a long time before asking several thrilling questions: “What noble son Lin said.....is it true?”

Chu Mo asked: “Does princess know all of the ingredients of the poison inside her?”

Princess Bao Lian nodded and said: “I am only aware of a couple, the remaining few my doctor.....he couldn’t distinguish.”

Chu Mo spoke: “Does it not have white scorpion tail, thirty year centipede foot, gold colored beetle antennas.....” Chu Mo rattled off all kinds of ingredients while Bao Lian and Nuo Yi sat there listening dumbstruck.

In the end, princess Bao Lian looked at Chu Mo while startled: “If you hadn’t come here together with Nuo Yi, if you had looked like someone from the grasslands.....I would suspect you were one of Elder Hao Yue’s clansmen!”

“I’m afraid they themselves couldn’t speak all of the poison ingredients so clearly!”

“Because although they carry the poisons, but they don’t have the ability to make it!”

“I already investigated these poisons. They were all passed down from the ancestor of Elder Hao Yue.”

Chu Mo looked at princess Bao Lian and thought: ‘This woman is indeed incredible. She is able to obtain such important information while under the eyes of the wily old fox Elder Hao Yue.

“There is no need to be anxious princess. I will write down the prescription ingredients for you. Then send out your trusted subordinates to gather these medicinal ingredients. Return here after you find them, and I will finish it!”

“That, Bao Lian thanks the noble son!” Princess Bao Lian stood up, faced Chu Mo, and gave a deep bow.

Then, she stared for a long time, unable to keep from choking back tears: “It’s a pity my older brother and sister in law.....if they could have run across noble son earlier.....”

Nuo Yi also thought of this, and the tears flowed out.

Chu Mo thought: ‘If you all had met me earlier, I’m afraid I wouldn’t have had this ability at that time!’

“This bastard wants to prepare a grand feast for Nuo Yi seven days from now. In fact, he wants to marry Nuo Yi to his youngest son, Hao Yue Geshui.”

“If she doesn’t comply, he will use the arrest warrant issued by those two animal brothers Jin and Yin to grab all of you.....”

“We will take advantage of this opportunity. I have enough confidence to take over the whole situation so long as we can take control of that bastard.”

Knowing she has a chance to live on, princess Bao Lian’s whole body shined an intense life force.

Chu Mo already prostrated himself in admiration towards princess Nuo Yi’s intelligence gathering ability.

“Princess, this place.....it is Elder Hao Yue’s territory after all. How can you have such large confidence. You will be able to control the whole situation after controlling Elder Hao Yue?

Princess Bao Lian said: “I hold too much evidence against him. He is a little aware. This is one of the reasons he wants to kill me. He will be ruined once this evidence is made public!”

Princess Bao Lian looked Chu Mo in the eye: “I was once the Wang Court princess. It is actually very simple if I want to put some resources into action.”

“But right now, I only have one goal.....”

She looked at Nuo Yi to her side: “I only desire for my niece to become the queen of the grasslands!”

“Aunt.....” Nuo Yi looked at princess Bao Lian and hesitated.

Princess Bao Lian softly said: “Silly child, your aunt, my reputation will be ruined after I kill that bastard. No matter how many evil things he has done, no matter if we have ever truly been husband and wife, I am his wife in the end!”

“Furthermore in auntie’s heart, I have never had the slightest ideas towards that throne!”

“You are more suited than anyone else to sit in that seat.”

“Believe auntie’s vision!”

“Therefore that bastard must die in my hands!”

Princess Bao Lian spoke and looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo understood. Princess Bao Lian’s words appeared to be for Nuo Yi, but they were really for herself. It made herself relax. Although she has the ability, she doesn’t have that wild ambition!

Actually Chu Mo didn't care which of them ruled the Wang Court throne. He wouldn't mind even making brother Lee become the new king of the grasslands.

It would be no problem so long as it didn't fall into the hands of Da Qi or a person close to Da Qi.

Of course compared to the latter, Chu Mo certainly wished to see Nuo Yi sit on the throne.

Soon after, princess Bao Lian gave Chu Mo the specific details of the banquet, then she took Nuo Yi and snuck away.

Chu Mo couldn't help but mumble while looking at the restored bookshelf: "Grandfather was right. No one in the world can be looked down upon, especially women!"

It was currently seven days away from Elder Hao Yue's banquet, but it was only one day away from the full moon!

Tomorrow night will be a full moon.

Chu Mo determined according to all the indicators on the map that the location over thirty-one miles away. It wasn't that far of a distance for Chu Mo.

Therefore, Chu Mo planned to use this full moon to search for that location, and see if anything could be harvested.

Chu Mo strutted out on horseback the following day around noon. He carried a bow and galloped in the direction indicated on the map.

He said he was hunting. Naturally no one stopped him.

Princess Bao Lian personally selected this horse for Chu Mo.

It was just like the horse princess Bao Lian rode. This horse was also completely black from head to foot without a trace of mixed color. It looked like a godly spirit horse. The horse dragged in the beginning, and it looked at Chu Mo with disdain to work for the youngster.

But the black horse became immediately excited after Chu Mo revealed a little Yuan Closure Qi. It also very flatteringly came over to Chu Mo so that he could pet it.

Chu Mo actually didn't want to come out on horseback. Thirty miles would actually be slower for him on horse than on foot.

But that is too eye catching, and now is a tricky time. Chu Mo didn't want to draw the attention of Elder Hao Yue.

So like this Chu Mo mounted the black horse and galloped on the grasslands.

The big black horse was very well behaved after being frightened by Chu Mo. The horse seemed to feel his master wanted to go even faster and bolted.

It must be said, the full power charging speed of the top rank grassland warhorses is astonishing.

Wind whistled past the ears. It felt slightly tingly as it blew across the face.

The horse dashed twenty-two or so miles before finally slowing down a little. There was surprisingly no sweat on the horse, and it's breath was steady. It is indeed a precious colt.

They had already entered the boundary of the map at this time. Chu Mo dismounted, patted the horse's head, and said: "Go find some grass to eat. I'll call for you when I return!"

It is unknown if the horse actually understood Chu Mo's words. The big black horse rubbed it's head against Chu Mo's hand, then it happily departed.

The remaining Chu Mo casually walked out. There was still a short amount of time until the full moon rose. Chu Mo decided to become a little familiar with the area first.

There was a little forest up ahead. They all required several people to circle around. They rose from the ground. The canopy enclosed the region, hiding the sky and covering the earth.

At last there is some scenery in the depths of this grassland.

Just as he was thinking, Chu Mo felt some people approach all of the sudden. He saw a blue colored dress appear as soon as he turned around, and it directly rushed in front of him.

Chu Mo was slightly startled. He never thought he would encounter Qi Xiaoyu here.

Only Qi Xiaoyu appeared to be in an extremely difficult situation at this time. That blue dress that appeared to be eternally clean was splotted with traces of blood. Her facial color was also extremely pale.

“Are you hurt?” Chu Mo didn’t have enough time to ask how she found him. He immediately asked after seeing her situation.

“Ha.....are you worried about me?” Qi Xiaoyu footsteps staggered a little. Her body was just short of falling down in an instant as she walked to Chu Mo.

Chu Mo hurriedly supported her and asked: “What happened?”

“It’s nothing.....it had a fight with a few disgusting people.” Qi Xiaoyu’s two willow brows slightly raised, and she said: “Truly disgusting, they are actually still pursuing! Quick, help me into the forest.....”

“What use is that! I will take up the rear for you here. Quickly run!” Chu Mo looked at the forest. Although the area wasn’t small, but it wasn’t anything for a person in a high realm.

He looked at Qi Xiaoyu: “You appear and disappear without a trace, every time you find me. Quickly run!”

“Don’t.....don’t talk nonsense.....I will really die if you don’t help me into the forest. You will never see me again!”

Qi Xiaoyu weakly looked at Chu Mo and softly said: “Would I have any use to come find you if I could still appear and disappear without a trace. Idiot!”

“Quickly quickly, I feel it. That disgusting group of people is coming!” Qi Xiaoyu’s color paled, and she pitifully looked at Chu Mo: “That disgusting group not only wants to steal this girl’s wealth, they also want to rape.....you, are you willing to watch this lovable little girl be snatched away by them? Quick!”

Chu Mo gritted his teeth, carried Qi Xiaoyu by the waist, and madly dashed into the forest.

Chu Mo’s foot power naturally isn’t weak. He exerted all his strength on his footwork, and he burrowed into the forest like a trail of smoke.

“Good good, right here. Set me down below this tree, then quickly return back there. They will ask you where I went. Say I

went into the forest!” Qi Xiaoyu pointed at a tree that would require five or six grown men to wrap around.

“Set you down here? Are you sure? What is the point of me selling you out?” Chu Mo wrinkled his brow and looked at Qi Xiaoyu in his arms.

“Oh my God, what selling out.....”

“What can idiots like you understand about this girl’s supernatural powers? Quickly quickly, set me down. It won’t be a problem!”

Qi Xiaoyu looked at Chu Mo and said: “If you speak with them, they won’t make it difficult for you. They will naturally scam once they can’t find me!”

“Okay, I’ll set you down, but I cannot say that!” Chu Mo somewhat angrily set Qi Xiaoyu under the tree, then he turned and left.

“Selling off friends, I cannot do!”

Qi Xiaoyu’s pupils flashed a trace of feeling, and she mumbled: “Idiot, I said it won’t be a problem!”

While speaking, Qi Xiaoyu’s figure actually bit by bit..... completely melded into the towering tree.

In the end, she completely disappeared!

Chapter 36: Large Sect Disciple

Chu Mo at last relaxed a little, but he couldn't help but turn around and look. But, the space beneath the tree was already devoid of a person.

Chu Mo stared with large eyes for a long time, but he couldn't see anything. He rubbed his eyes somewhat inconceivably, and secretly thought: 'Is there truly a way?'

He quickly stepped out of the area. The present him only thought to get far away from the forest.

A short period of time later, far away on the horizon, four figures quickly crossed. They weren't flying through the sky, but they yet stepped across the grass at high speed!

Chu Mo could do this, but acting like that would consume up a large amount of Yuan power. Only in a crises, otherwise Chu Mo wouldn't be willing to squander Yuan power like this.

But these people all looked extremely relaxed. Either they are in a high realm, or.....they are carrying a large amount of Yuan stones, and they don't care about wasting Yuan power.

Chu Mo slightly squinted, and he thought: 'They should be in a little bit higher realm than me.....'

The opposite party discovered him at the same time Chu Mo

discovered them.

One person came out from the four, coming before Chu Mo in the blink of an eye. No words, only cold clear pupils looked at him. His body emitted a powerful aura like a fierce Yuan beast. The bloody aura was incomparably abundant.

This was an approximately twenty year old young man. He wore brilliant green colored clothing, and his hair was covered in a gold cap. His eyebrows flew up towards the temples, appearing extremely handsome. His expression towards Chu Mo was full of disregard. This expression is how one would normally look at an ant.

Chu Mo looked at those clear pupils, and innocently stared at the young man, like a child scared stupid.

“Boy, have you seen a girl wearing a blue dress?” The young man spoke somewhat coldly, but it could be seen he used a large amount effort to make his voice gentle.

People can lie, but the eyes.....it is yet very difficult for them to lie! At the same time, he also rigidly stared into the eyes of Chu Mo.

Chu Mo shook his head, his face ignorant: “Didn’t see, who are you all?”

The tips of the young man’s brow slightly raised: “Ah? Didn’t

see? What are you doing here?”

Chu Mo raised up the bow in his hand: “Hunting!”

“You don’t look like a person of the grasslands. What are you hunting here?” The young man’s pupils flashed ice-cold. His voice became more severe: “Little man.....you had best not lie to me. Otherwise.....it will be very serious!”

The young man spoke, and casually struck at the grass next to Chu Mo!

Crash!

An air wave hit with a crash.

A three foot deep and ten foot circumference pit was made at a spot twenty feet away from Chu Mo by this formidable power.

Chu Mo was completely splashed and covered by the flying soil and grass.

Chu Mo appeared intimidated, and his whole body quivered. He immediately ran far away and angrily bellowed: “What are you doing? Frightening people? I am a person of the Wang Court! Provoke me, and you all won’t be able to escape the grasslands!”

“Ah? Wang Court? Ha ha ha.....” The young man revealed a

disdainful smile. As the young man was thinking of something to say, one of the people urged from far away: “Fine, what are you going to do about one little guy? Quick catch that beautiful girl! We must not let her run away. She should die. I don’t know where that beautiful girl spawned from. She is just like a loach!”

Another person laughed: “Loach? Where in this world are such beautiful loaches? I think she resembles a dragon lady. Ha ha ha, anyway I saw her. When we grab her, you all can have the things she is carrying, but the girl.....I, Leng Qiuming call dibs!”

Chu Mo faced the direction of Leng Qiuming as he continued sneering: “Who wouldn’t want that kind of top quality girl? After instructing her, she can be a most suiting maid!”

“According to our Immortal Sky rules.....after every grabs her, we can have a contest. Whoever wins can takes her!”

The person named Leng Qiuming said: “Fight then fight, Zhao Fan.....other people fear you because you are from the Immortal Sky, but I, Leng Qiuming, am not afraid. Stop showing off your Immortal Sky status in front of us, do you want to stink up the place?”

Immortal Sky?

Immortal Sky!

The first response of Chu Mo after hearing these two words

would ordinarily be to take a knife to the young man's throat.

Hearing them talk about Qi Xiaoyu like an object, Chu Mo's heart began to burn with a blazing fury.

And now he heard the young man is an Immortal Sky disciple. His inner fury soared, able to erupt at any time.

Chu Mo secretly measured up the gap in strength between the two parties, and he forcibly repressed his fury.

He knew without looking that these four men could start a fierce quarrel with each other. But if he moves to act, the four would certainly team up and kill him in the first moment.

The deepest evil in men's hearts could limitlessly expand in a desolate place like this.

As a result, Chu Mo raised his head, and looked at the Immortal Sky disciple named Zhao Fan with a shocked face: "Big brother, are you an Immortal from the Immortal Sky?"

"Is it true? I.....I know the Immortal sky is a place Immortals cultivate!"

"The people there are all grand heroes. They are all knights that rescue the world's sick and poor!"

“Big brother, can you take me to the Immortal Sky to train under a master?”

“I, I also want to be an Immortal!”

Chu Mo wanted to vomit as he spoke.

But his successive flattering and clear pupils immediately made Zhao Fan become smug.

His faced managed to maintain modesty, but the space between his brows was happy. Yet Zhao fan still wasn't moved: “Ah? You little grassland brat, you know of the Immortal Sky?”

“Of course! In this world.....who doesn't know of the Immortal Sky?”

“Who doesn't know the Immortal sky is full of immortals!” Chu Mo's innocent face filled with worship.

Zhao Fan at last gave in and smiled. His facial expression also became extremely soft as he looked at Chu Mo: “Little brother, the Immortal Sky has a standard for accepting disciples, but it is very strict. Otherwise anyone could enter. But, if you have extraordinary talent, and my recommendation, perhaps you have a chance to enter!”

Zhao Fan was very happy, but the other three young men were all angry to death.

Leng Qiuming sneered: “Yo, the grand Immortal Sky pro-disciple is swindling a child. Isn’t it interesting?”

Another mocked in an ice-cold manner: “The Immortal Sky is full of grand heroes. They are all knights that rescue the world’s sick and poor.....Ha ha ha, this is the greatest joke that I, Dong Fangbai, have ever heard!”

The three men nodded, then they faced Chu Mo and yelled: “Little friend, don’t be swindled by the rumors. What dog fart immortals? Don’t mention his Immortal Sky.....the whole four continents, how many people dare call themselves immortals?”

Leng Qiuming nodded and said: “Not wrong, but it is a good place to cultivate. They cheat the ordinary people of the world. Their skill is sufficiently superior, and they have a little bit of methods, but are they immortals? Then this world’s immortals are of little value!”

The person named Dong Fangbai continued taunting: “Immortal Sky has enduring secrets there. Later on, we should all go study a little. Rescue the sick and poor of the world.....Ha ha, that’s interesting!”

Zhao Fan trembled in anger from head to toe. If he theoretically fought one on one, he wouldn’t be afraid of any of the three men. But he would absolutely be no match against the three combined.

He had a type of feeling at this time. He seemed to be defrauded

by this little ant! Driving a wedge in his plans!

But he felt somewhat ridiculous. It's just a secular world little brat, that's it.....how could it be possible?

He looked at the opposing three people and coldly said: "Do you all feel these kinds of words are fitting for a little child of the secular world?"

"Fitting! How is it not fitting? I feel it is simply too fitting!" The third man faced Chu Mo and smiled: "Little brother, I, Yu Zonghou, look favorably on you. It would be better for you to join my Golden Knife sect. I can directly make you an outer sect disciple! If you try hard, you could be the same as me. You can enter the inner sect if your fortune is good. You could also study directly under any elder's school, and become his most favored disciple!"

"But, I must speak clearly with you. Our Golden Knife sect is an immortal cultivation place, but we also don't have immortals. Even still, our Golden Knife sect is the same as the Immortal Sky. We are both top class sects of the four continents. But I don't know about the Immortal Sky, how they are so amazing, inside they are all immortals.....ha ha ha, I'm laughing to death!"

Leng Qiuming also spoke: "Our Heavenly Sword sect is no inferior to the Immortal Sky, but has never seen an Immortal! It is truly strange, Immortal Sky is truly amazing!"

"Our Raging Inferno sect also doesn't have immortals, how

curios!” Dong Fangbai said at last.

“Fine, fine, fine!” Zhao Fan angrily laughed. He said fine three times, but his pupils revealed enmity. He suddenly turned to Chu Mo with a ferocious face: “Boy you are truly severe. In a few short words you have unexpectedly stirred up controversy among us. I truly didn’t see, you unexpectedly have this kind of ability?”

“You.....what are you getting at? I didn’t provoke you!” Chu Mo looked appalled and continuously withdrew.

Zhao Fan coldly said: “You are so talented. I feel wronged leaving you in this world. I will take you to see the immortals!”

Leng Qiuming shouted: “Zhao Fan, do you have face? You are going to put hands on a child of the secular world? And finding an illogical reason towards this brat!”

Dong Fangbai said: “Isn’t this the consistent method of the Immortal Sky? In order to not leave a dirty name in the world, they must thoroughly wipe away anything unfavorable towards them!”

Yu Zonghou said: “Then we must make this child live on today!”

The three looked at each other, and directly advanced towards Zhao Fan.

The battlefield as now on the verge!

Zhao Fan was confident he could easily kill this youngster with his top yellow rank four Yuan Closure realm. But he will certainly suffer the attack of these three people if this happens. Those three wouldn't dare kill him under normal circumstances.

No matter what people say, the Immortal Sky is this world's number one sect. It is an undisputable fact!

Only here.....Zhao Fan didn't grasp whether or not the three men would really act against him.

After all, it is very normal for mishaps to appear when going out to gain experience!

Furthermore, an Immortal Sky disciple of his rank still didn't have enough qualifications to ignite the Soul Lamp. It would be incredibly difficult if he wanted to investigate the truth.

Zhao Fan coldly looked at Chu Mo: "Boy, I already know you are a person of the grassland's Wang Court. Remember, I will kill your entire house if you dare speak a word of this!"

Chu Mo truly enraged at this time.

Given that he isn't a person of the Wang Court, Zhao Fan could turn the grassland bottom up and not find a trace of Chu Mo.

But he still was thoroughly infuriated by this despicable and shameless Zhao Fan.

It made him recall Seventh Elder, because he wanted to kill his grandfather over something that was almost impossible.

It really is the same idea!

“Extinguish my entire house?” Chu Mo’s pupils flickered with insane murderous intent

He could no longer act innocent at this time or disguise himself as weak.

His only thought, seriously.....cut Zhao Fan with the knife!

One slash is enough!

Chu Mo thought with eighty percent probability that he could cut open Zhao Fan in one slice right here!

Because he already secretly used the Jade to “look” at Zhao Fan’s strength.

“Already twenty years old.....finally at the peak of the yellow rank four, simply scum!”

“Who gave him such large confidence?”

“The Immortal Sky?”

“Sooner or later I will turn over your ragged and rotten sect!”

At the moment Chu Mo could no longer bear it, in the moment he prepared to recklessly act.

The three people had already advanced there, furthermore their eyes were all filled with ice-cold murderous intent.

Zhao Fan gnashed his teeth, and he suddenly pulled out a seal from his body and ripped it. It instantly activated, and then his whole figure faded away.

His angry roar remained in the air: “Leng Qiuming, Yu Zonghou, and Dong Fangbai.....you three aren’t bad!”

“Really not bad! I, Zhao Fan, will remember you!”

“And that crafty little animal. I will remember you.....I won’t let you go!”

Chapter 37: Slashing Zhao Fan

Zhao Fan's voice gradually grew further away.

Chu Mo enraged inside. It became even more intense. He coldly smiled to himself: 'Won't let me go? Zhao Fan, you had better pray to your Immortal Sky ancestors. Request that you never meet me again! Otherwise, I will certainly cut you!

Even though the opponent was a whole realm higher, Chu Mo was absolutely confident he could extinguish Zhao Fan.

The past Chu Mo didn't know the strength of other people. He had grown up in the military, but he had no battle experience.

Therefore he didn't know the power of each warrior's rank.

He killed various kinds of rank two and three Yuan beasts along the road. He even killed rank four Yuan beasts.....the Red Eye Ice Python for example. Chu Mo risked his life fighting, furthermore, he successfully beheaded it in the end!

The process is thrilling, but there is no doubt about the results.

Chu Mo thought it should be like this!

His own realm should be powerful.

Chu Mo encountered other warriors. Those bandits saw him carrying Yuan beast materials, and looked upon him with greedy eyes.

It made Chu Mo suddenly comprehend a few things.

Why is the value of Yuan Beast materials so high? Because hunting Yuan beasts is difficult!

Yuan beasts are not soft little sheep. Each Yuan beast is fierce beyond compare, stronger than all the beasts of this world.

How could they be that easy to hunt?

“Then.....don’t tell me I am very strong?”

“Could it be said.....my own cultivation practice is too formidable?”

After that, he faced the grassland warriors that had broken through the rank three Yuan Closures. Chu Mo clearly understood at last. It wasn’t that other people were too weak, but he.....is indeed too strong!

Precisely speaking. The cultivating methods he used were too strong!

This really isn’t being arrogant, but it is an indisputable fact!

Any situation needs perspective, talent separates.

Chu Mo never felt that the nameless and powerless methods his master taught him in the past were impressive at all.

But he already knew now.

Despite the fact Zhao Fan is an Immortal Sky disciple a realm higher than him. Chu Me felt not the least bit timid inside!

Given that Zhao Fan knows his power, Chu Mo is completely unafraid. Don't even mention.....Zhao Fan still doesn't know!

Zhao Fan fled unlike a large sect disciple. This made the faces of Leng Qiuming, Yu Zonghou, and Dong Fangbai all become unsightly.

Anyone can say pretty words, but for them to truly face a huge monster like the Immortal Sky, their hearts were all somewhat uncertain.

Leng Qiuming smiled after being silent a moment: "It's actually nothing. We didn't do anything to him. If he has the face to bring a lawsuit against us, I'm afraid he won't even be able to lift his head in the Immortal Sky."

Yu Zonghou nodded, then said: "He shouldn't be that foolish.

The opportunity here.....he wouldn't easily let others know!"

"Brother Leng is right. Anyways, we didn't do anything to him. If he lodges a complaint..... then he needs evidence!" Dong Fangbai coldly sneered: "Even more so, I don't believe he will abandon the opportunity here!"

"Right, he must bow his head to the three of us if he returns!" Leng Qiuming looked at the other two: "But us three must be united from the beginning to the end!"

"That is only natural!" Dong Fangbai nodded.

Yu Zonghou also nodded: "Don't worry, his Immortal Sky isn't that overbearing. They wouldn't offend our three sects for an inner sect disciple."

Chu Mo calmly listened from the side, and secretly thought: 'It looks like the Immortal Sky is really the world's largest sect. The realms of those three aren't much different than Zhao Fan's, but they are still this afraid of him. Obviously they aren't afraid of Zhao Fan, but rather the sect behind him!

"Looks like there is formidable power he relies on. It is truly superior."

The three men looked at Chu Mo at this time.

Chu Mo retreated two steps back, and his face revealed a dreadful

expression: “You all.....you also want to kill me?”

“Ha ha, don’t be afraid, what would we kill you for?” Leng Qiuming’s pupils flashed playful color. Actually in his mind, he really didn’t want to leave this boy alive.

Because the words between them don’t burden the boy. Their reputation would be damaged on the chance their words spread.

But he estimated the two partners might not agree. Leng Qiuming decided not to make known his innermost evil thoughts.

“Little guy, If you come to my Golden Knife sect with my recommendation, I can’t dare guarantee you will directly enter the inner sect, but there is more than enough to be an outer sect disciple.” Yu Zonghou said.

Dong Fangbai looked at Chu Mo: “I must mention the Raging Inferno sect!”

Chu Mo didn’t like these three because they all had those expressions towards Qi Xiaoyu. Especially Leng Qiuming, he actually wants Qi Xiaoyu? In contrast however, together they are much stronger than Zhao Fan.

Because of this, Chu Mo wanted to inquire, what grudge do they hold with Qi Xiaoyu.

But the three didn’t give him this opportunity. They all turned

and left after speaking.

Dong Fangbai thought a moment before turning to go, and he pulled out a Yuan stone. He threw it to Chu Mo, but he didn't say a word, just directly left.

Chu Mo looked over the Yuan stone in his hand. It wasn't as big as the stone on the special envoy of Da Qi, but it was much better than the Yuan stones that outer sect disciples of the Immortal Sky obtained.

"This is a Yuan stone? Thank you!" Chu Mo rushed after Dong Fangbai's figure and shouted.

Dong Fangbai didn't give any response, moving far away in a moment.

Those men probably all thought Chu Mo was an ordinary child of the secular world, and they basically didn't put him in their hearts.

But Chu Mo yet remembered the action of Dong Fangbai.

The tide changes. The rivers and lakes aren't old.

Only have to see that day!

The three should be going to seek Qi Xiaoyu. Chu Mo didn't dare act rashly now, and go into the forest.

Chu Mo suddenly thought of a problem at this time. None of the opposing four men, including the Immortal Sky disciple Zhao Fan, saw his realm. This is a little strange.

Given that they couldn't accurately determine his realm, but his body is always has a fluctuating Yuan power aura.

But these four actually considered him as an ordinary youth from the secular world.

“Could it be? It is also attributed to the jade?”

Chu Mo muttered to himself. His spirit entered into the jade space. The small gray tree was already sprouting seven or eight tender emerald-green buds. There appears to be life in this barren space.

Chu Mo pulled out Heaven's Will My Will and took a look, but there wasn't any change. He didn't lose hope. Chu Mo guessed it is because no new energy has entered recently.

Chu Mo scratched his head thinking about this. He still didn't completely understand what this jade actually wants.

‘Looks like I need to get out and take a walk.’ Chu Mo thought to himself, then placed Heaven's Will My Will back before leaving.

He suddenly felt an ice-cold piercing chill enshroud himself.

Like a powerful Yuan Beast is staring at him!

Chu Mo reacted without thinking. He transferred his internal Yuan power in an instant, and desperately threw himself to the side.

Boom!

A violent surging wave power exploded close to Chu Mo.

This time was much fiercer than Zhao Fan's first attack!

A ten foot deep pit actually appeared in the grassland!

If Chu Mo didn't react quickly, this attack.....he would have suffered serious injury, even perished!

Obviously his opponent rushed at Chu Mo for his life.

Chu Mo couldn't think of another person who would do this besides Zhao Fan. Chu Mo's inner angry flame already began to blaze.

"I didn't seek you, but on the contrary you came for me?"

Chu Mo face carried shock as he looked at the gradually appearing Zhao Fan. His voice quivered as he said: “You, you didn’t leave?”

“Idiot, that was an invisibility seal!” Zhao Fan sneered: “That seal is the most precious thing I obtained after entering master’s school. But now it is wasted because of you little animal! It will be hard to appease my heart’s hate if I don’t kill you!”

“Isn’t the Immortal Sky the embodiment of justice? You, how could you be like this? I didn’t provoke you?” Chu Mo angrily spoke.

“Ha ha, truly innocent!” Zhao Fan coldly smiled at Chu Mo: “But unexpected to me, you are actually a Yuan power cultivator? I truly somewhat looked down on you. But, it’s no problem. Given that you are a Yuan power cultivator, today, you must die!”

Chu Mo looked at Zhao Fan, then he suddenly said: “If you don’t kill me, I will tell you where that blue dress girl is hidden!”

“Humph, you actually saw her!” Zhao Fan’s pupils slightly lit up. He looked at Chu Mo, then said in a low voice: “You had better not be playing tricks with me. Boy, you just avoided my attack. I already see, your realm is at least at the peak of rank two. But if I want to kill you it is a piece of cake!”

“Like a steamroller crushing an ant!”

“I know, I cannot match with you, but I will tell you if you promise not to kill me!” Chu Mo stood up and patted the dirt on his body. His pair of clear pupils looked at Zhao Fan extremely intense.

“Fine, I promise you. So long as you take me and I find that beautiful woman, then I won’t kill you!” Zhao Fan earnestly said, yet he coldly laughed inside: ‘Naive! Today I was troubled by you so much. Don’t kill you? How could I live on in the sect if word of these events got out?’

“Good, I’ll take you!” Chu Mo spoke extremely straightforward. He turned and walked towards the forest, giving his whole back to Zhao Fan.

Zhao Fan’s pupils flashed with light, and became skeptical. Naturally he couldn’t completely believe this young man’s words, but he really wanted to grab that girl.

He couldn’t look upon his opponent so simply. And that girl, she carries a treasure he has never seen before.

The injury that girl carries wasn’t caused by them. They don’t have that kind of ability.

Furthermore that girl discovered a portal door!

The door that appears on the full moon!

The girl wanted to break into the door, and the result is she received an attack from the door, resulting in serious injury.

This scene was all witnessed by Zhao Fan and the others. Zhao Fan and Leng Qiuming's minds gave birth to greed, and they started pursuing the girl. They fought over the division of wealth. As a result, the girl slipped away right beneath their eyes.

They pursued endlessly. The first reason is for the treasure the maiden carries; the second reason.....is because they feared the power behind the maiden!

A maiden that has trained for ten years and possesses such a realm, is that not a terrifying force?

Don't mention Len Qiuming, even Zhao Fan.....completely lacked confidence!

These are the circumstances that occurred just before meeting Chu Mo.

Zhao Fan firmly believed this maiden carried unattainable treasure. It would be an unimaginable benefit if he could grab the maiden!

Then, kill her.....he could once and for all remove the danger.

As far as taking her in as a maid, that was just talk.

Chu Mo spoke as he walked in the front: “I saw her enter into this forest, but I am not exactly sure where she hid. I reckon she isn’t far away. Her wounds were very serious at that time.....”

“Really?” Zhao Fan measured up the area, and his voice became somewhat ice-cold.

At this time, Chu Mo ferociously turned around from the front. His originally empty hand carried a shining long knife. He advanced toward Zhao Fan and directly slashed.

“Of course!”

Chu Mo’s voice exploded.

An incomparably dazzling knife flash appeared between the heavens and earth.

Chapter 38: Full Moon

The piercing yet flashing cold knife light fell like lightning from the heavens!

A cold smile spread across the face of the continually cautious Zhao Fan in the moment that Chu Mo turned around–

Because, he also thought to move against Chu Mo!

“Don’t overrate yourself.....”

But the face spreading a cold smile and the eyes containing murderous intent, they directly froze in the moment the knife flash arose.

The original ferocious and self-pleased expression were replaced by the utmost fright.

Impossible!

A youngster in a realm far below himself, how could he.....slash such a terrifying knife?

Soul snatching!

Rolling Thunder!

Is this truly a knife skill able to be displayed by a teenage youngster?

Zhao fan had never seen this, even from the most amazing talents in the Immortal Sky.....an attack so severe that it cuts off all lines of thought!

All of Zhao Fan's thoughts and ideas.....in this instant, they were all frozen in the gleam of Chu Mo's Knife.

He didn't even have an opportunity to speak.

Knife flash disillusion.

Everything becomes empty!

Everything appears as an illusion!

Zhao Fan foolishly stood there. The ferocious face, also a remnant. The vivid look in the eyes completely disappeared.

But his eyes yet tightly locked onto Chu Mo's face.

It seemed until now he still couldn't believe. He is a grand Immortal Sky inner disciple, to actually die in this place. Die like an ant in the hands of this grassland youth.

His cheeks slightly trembled, and his lips slightly opened, as if wanting to say something.

One bloody cut followed down from his brow, and started to slowly seep out blood. Quickly, a bright bloody line spread downward.

Continuing onto his nose, mouth, neck.....

Zhao Fan's finger lightly acted, wanting to lift up, and point at Chu Mo. This motion, made his body.....like a piece of cleaved bamboo.

It “popped”, into two halves, falling down into two sides.

One slash!

Only used one slash!

Chu Mo merely used this one slash!

But this one slash directly split an Immortal Sky inner sect disciple in two halves!

Chu Mo suddenly felt his two legs were a little weak. He propped himself with the long knife in the ground, and he knelt down while heavily panting.

Although it was only one slash, but he practically consumed all of the Yuan power and energy in his body.

Zhao Fan had nearly the same combat power as the rank four Red Eye Ice Python Yuan beast, but his degree of difficulty was far more than the Red Eye Ice Python!

Because he is human!

He is an intelligent and cunning human!

Was Zhao Fan not scheming against Chu Mo at the same time Chu Mo was scheming against him?

Zhao Fan was skeptical, and he carefully worked. He would slip away faster than anyone else if things turned bad.

The best example is that he didn't hesitate to use his most valuable hidden seal in a moment of crises.

Chu Mo's sole advantage is that Zhao Fan didn't know his true strength.

Otherwise, thinking to kill Chu Mo wasn't as easy as imagined!

Combat had taught the youngster a lesson.

Chu Mo understood a principle: Self confidence isn't wrong, but one must never forget the opponent also has schemes!

“In the moment you are scheming against others, others could be scheming against you!”

“To not be schemed against, one must always scheme ahead of others!”

“Or, have several more times the strength of other people!”

“Like that, even if someone wants to plot against me, in the face of absolute power their schemes are like an insect crawling on my body. With one flick of the finger.....they can be sent flying!”

Chu Mo's breath finally evened out a little. He slowly stood up and walked over to Zhao Fan.

He prepared to bury Zhao Fan.

But as he was moving the body, a pouch jingled out of Zhao Fan's pocket.

Chu Mo scooped it up, and he discovered there were more than a dozen Yuan stones inside. Each stone was about the same as the one Dong Fangbai gave him. There were also several pretty good medicinal ingredients. They were the kind that were very valuable

in the secular world.

The jade on his body yet didn't have any reaction. Chu Mo couldn't help but curl his lip and mutter: "It is really fussy! You don't want these? Good, give them to me!"

These Yuan Stones were good items for the current Chu Mo. Each piece could completely restore the Yuan power in his body over ten times!

Soon after, Chu Mo dug out a large pit and buried Zhao Fan's corpse deep down, then he covered up the top with some dried up branches from the forest. It practically couldn't be seen if one wasn't looking especially careful.

"You yourself said the scenery isn't bad here. How about you rest a while. You don't need to worry, later on there will be more of your comrades to accompany you!" Chu Mo spoke, turned around, and walked out of the forest without hesitating.

Even now, Chu Mo still wasn't completely suited to this lifestyle of living and dying by the sword, but there was no choice. No matter how unaccustomed, he must learn to adapt.

Because this is that world!

As soon as one steps inside, thinking to depart is practically an impossibility.

Qi Xiaoyu never appeared. Chu Mo worried about her, but he knew she should already be hidden.

The sky gradually darkened at this time.

A slight silhouette of the full moon appeared on the east horizon. It strove to climb into the sky.

Quickly, the full moon rose into the sky.

The bright moonlight pierced through the dense forest canopy, the light and shadow yet remote.

Chu Mo slightly squinted. He held a piece of Yuan stone in his hand, and he practiced the Heaven's Will My Will scripture. He began to quickly restore the Yuan power in his body.

Yuan stones are truly good items. They contain the Yuan Qi essence of the heavens and earth. Chu Mo's normal cultivation speed increased five times when absorbing the Yuan stone power!

"No wonder those large sects are this serious about the Yuan stone resources. Using Yuan stones to cultivate.....it's truly not the same!"

"If I have enough Yuan stones to coordinate with cultivating Heaven's Will My will, then the speed my strength increases..... wouldn't it certainly be astonishing?"

Chu Mo fantasized while he restored the Yuan power in his body.

Quickly, the Yuan power in his body restored to it's best status. Some footsteps sounded out from nearby at this time. At the same time, Qi Xiaoyu's voice came: "Why are you still here?"

The maiden came out from nearby. She looked worried as she looked at Chu Mo: "You killed the most disgusting one?"

"How did you know?" Chu Mo surprisingly looked at Qi Xiaoyu: "This time.....you weren't at my side watching?"

Qi Xiaoyu's beautiful and touching face revealed a slight mysterious smile: "I know, tehee, but I won't tell you!"

Chu Mo returned a haughty look and muttered: "Don't say, then don't say. What is so amazing?"

As he spoke, he yet secretly thought, and sent his spirit to the jade: "Qi Xiaoyu.....what realm is she?"

A portion of information instantly transferred into Chu Mo's head, but it made his mouth twitch, completely lost.

"Peak yellow rank five realm, physique unknown, other.....unknown! Serious injuries healed."

Her realm finally could be seen, but it was much higher than his own. Her and grandfather are actually in the same realm.

This already made Chu Mo extremely shocked, because Qi Xiaoyu looked to be about the same age as himself. So much that.....she could even be younger!

“How did she cultivate that fast?”

“Then.....what does physique unknown mean?”

“Other unknown.....what is that?”

Serious injuries healed should point to the injuries he saw her with earlier.

But that serious an injury.....has actually this quickly recovered?

Isn't this unimaginable?

“Hey, what are you thinking? Mad?” Qi Xiaoyu extended out a little hand and waved in front of Chu Mo's eyes: “To be absent minded in front of such a beautiful girl is very rude! Hey!”

“What are you seeking for here? Is it that rumored Legendary Immortal Palace?” Chu Mo seriously looked at Qi Xiaoyu and asked.

“Immortal? Immortal Palace?” Qi Xiaoyu’s willow brows raised, and she somewhat disdainfully said: “How could this world have Immortals? And Immortal Palaces? How could it be possible?”

Chu Mo slightly persisted: “Then how did your previous injuries recover?”

Qi Xiaoyu thought, then said: “This place, it’s a little not the same, it seems.....there is some kind of object. It’s left here, then..... that thing formed a sort of self-protective defense system. Could it be the Immortal Palace you spoke of?”

“There is certainly no Immortal Palace! But there is indeed something abnormal here.”

“My injuries are because I thought to force open the defense system, but I didn’t succeed. It is much stronger than I imagined!”

“Therefore I suffered backlash, and received a serious injury. I was seen by several disgusting bastards with greedy eyes. Did you not send this girl away? Yes, you just now killed the most disgusting one!”

Qi Xiaoyu happily smiled as she chattered.

“Not an Immortal Palace?” Chu Mo somewhat lost hope, then asked: “What is the defense system?”

“Idiot! The defense system is a guard that blocks any powerful

thing to a certain extent. It is self-defending. If it doesn't approve you, you couldn't bear it. As a result, you have no way to open the defense system, and naturally no way to obtain it." Qi Xiaoyu casually explained.

"How do you know so much?" Chu Mo couldn't help but say.

"Really.....how do I know this?" That beautiful face revealed ignorance, then she savagely looked at Chu Mo: "Humph, this girl knows everything in the heavens above and the earth below. I am an intelligent, clever, beautiful, cute, tender, good at understanding others, number one in the world.....Beautiful! Little! Woman!"

"....." Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu dumbstruck: "Are you not tired yet?"

"Humph!" Qi Xiaoyu huffed and looked at Chu Mo: "Later on don't ask me how I know things. I just know! Every time you ask my head feels like it will explode in pain!"

"....." Chu Mo's lips twitched: "I'm sorry. I didn't know."

Qi Xiaoyu looked at the guilty faced Chu Mo, and she spread a smile. She became somewhat tender: "Fine fine, it isn't your fault. I am seeking the reason myself. How can such an outstanding beautiful little woman like myself be like a homeless orphan?"

Chu Mo borrowed the sparse moonlight in the forest to look at

her absolutely gorgeous face. He silently cursed: ‘How amazing I won’t say, but this narcissism.....is certainly number one under heaven!’

At this time, Chu Mo suddenly felt the jade hung around his neck suddenly erupt with an astonishing heat.

This is the first time Chu Mo had felt such an intense heat from the jade!

“Full moon, the door opened!”

Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu: “Go, we search for treasure!”

Chapter 39: Hold Your Hand

The intense heat coming from the jade seemed to urge!

“Faster, or else it’s too late!”

Chu Mo pulled Qi Xiaoyu’s hand, faced outside, and ran away at lightning speed.

Qi Xiaoyu’s hand was cold, soft, and smooth as if boneless.

Chu Mo didn’t know why, In the instant he pulled her hand, his heart slightly moved.

“This is a girl’s hand?”

An unusual feeling spread to Chu Mo’s heart.

Qi Xiaoyu seemed to stare blankly in the moment Chu Mo pulled her hand. The pair of extremely beautiful eyes widened in that moment, subconsciously wanting to evade.

She didn’t know why, but she didn’t do that action in the end.

Qi Xiaoyu’s entire body became incomparably stiff at the instant in time when the two touched hands.

Her reaction.....was far greater than Chu Mo's!

She strove with great difficulty to not show any expression, but in her heart, it was like a little deer rattling around.

That feeling was incomparably intense until she had been pulled out of the forest by Chu Mo.

She was entirely confused. As if the south, east, north, and west were indistinguishable.

She discovered that Chu Mo had already pulled her far away from the forest when she came back to her senses. They arrived at a cold and dismal wild grassland area.

The place also wasn't the same as where she tried to break open the defense system.

It was clearly very far away!

She looked all around at the grass as tall as a man. There was no sound between the heaven and earth. Her cheeks became red as she looked at Chu Mo: "You.....what are you wanting to do?"

"Shhh!"

Chu Mo raised a finger to his mouth, and softly said: "Don't speak, the door is here!"

“You.....” Qi Xiaoyu suddenly became angry. A tiny reckless boot ruthlessly stomped on Chu Mo’s foot.

Hiss!

Chu Mo gnashed his teeth and glared at Qi Xiaoyu: “What are you doing?”

Poor Chu Mo grew up on the military, and he basically never played with girls before. His grandfather was also an standard military person. When would he have thought to teach Chu Mo about the things between men and women?

How could Chu Mo have known not to pull on a girls hand like that.....and after pulling, he held an unromantic appearance. It’s no wonder the other person got angry.

Only stepping on his foot could already be considered giving face.

“Not doing anything!” Qi Xiaoyu’s eyes looked to the heaven, completely innocent. Continuing on she smiled at Chu Mo: “Right, you were just saying something about a door?”

Chu Mo suspiciously looked at Qi Xiaoyu, and secretly thought: ‘No wonder other people say don’t try to guess what girls are thinking.....obviously very complicated!

‘Guess or don’t guess, I cannot allow that kind of starry eyed infatuation.’ Chu Mo returned a haughty look: “You said that defense system, if it has an opening, then it is here!”

“Here?” Qi Xiaoyu seemed to forget the recent matter and uncertainty said: “How is that possible? There isn’t the slightest bit of power fluctuating here!”

“Don’t speak, first confirm if anyone has discovered this place then speak.” Chu Mo looked mysterious as he spoke, but in reality the jade already gave him a most direct indication. But he needed to confirm if Leng Qiuming and the others would come here.

Qi Xiaoyu looked at Chu Mo somewhat speechless. She somewhat didn’t believe Chu Mo’s words, because this was just wild grassland!

‘Could it be this boy has ideas towards me?’

‘If it is true, what do I do?’

‘Should I refuse?’

‘We are still young.....’

‘I am not a casual girl!’

Qi Xiaoyu let her imagination run wild. The hearts of girls are

somewhat in disorder at the first time their hands are held by a boy.

Chu Mo softly said at this time: “Should be no problem, go!”

As he spoke, he directly went into even thicker grass.

Qi Xiaoyu nibbled her white teeth while staring at Chu Mo. She stood there, yet didn’t move.

“Let’s go?” Chu Mo had walked a couple steps and discovered Qi Xiaoyu still hadn’t moved. He immediately turned around and strangely looked at Qi Xiaoyu: “What are you doing?”

“I.....I’m scared!” Qi Xiaoyu weakly said all of a sudden.

“Don’t be ridiculous.....you’ve tread across ten thousand mountains. Every day you appear and disappear without a trace. You say you are afraid.....do you believe I can trust you?”

Chu Mo had an expression that pierced through you.

Qi Xiaoyu somewhat resentfully looked at him: “Is this the same as that?”

“What isn’t the same? You had been looking for me for several days? Now you’ve found me, and you cower?” Chu Mo spoke.

“You, you are wanting to help me?” Qi Xiaoyu’s pupils flashed mysterious rays of light: “Why?”

“What why? How are you so troublesome! Didn’t you often help me? Did I ask ‘why’ when you helped me? Then why do you ask ‘why’ when I help?”

Chu Mo strangely looked at Qi Xiaoyu: “Quick, don’t delay. I don’t know how long the door will be opened!”

“He he, good, let’s go!” Qi Xiaoyu looked at Chu Mo a moment, then suddenly spread a smile. She resumed her prior vivaciousness and bounced towards Chu Mo’s side.

In her heart she yet continuously slandered Chu Mo: ‘Fool! Idiot! As dumb as a pig! Truly stupid!’

Chu Mo naturally had no idea Qi Xiaoyu had been rattling off curses inside. He was still rather happy. Qi Xiaoyu had always helped him in the past, nowadays he could help her for once.

Chu Mo already decided in his heart. If they can actually get into the door, and if Qi Xiaoyu wants anything the jade doesn’t want, then he will give it to her.

The two hadn’t walked far before Chu Mo stopped walking. He softly said: “It is here!”

“Here?” Qi Xiaoyu wrinkled her willy brows. She tried her

hardest to feel the slightest bit of power fluctuations here.....but in the end.....completely defeated.

But this time she didn't open her mouth to reprimand Chu Mo, because she saw Chu Mo's foot.....it already disappeared!

"This....." Qi Xiaoyu stared at the scene completely dumbstruck. She simply didn't dare believe her eyes.

"Come!" Chu Mo extended a hand: "Hold on to me.....careful!"

Qi Xiaoyu looked at Chu Mo, lightly nibbled her teeth, and hesitated.

Soon after, she took the initiative and moved her little hand over. She was pulled by Chu Mo, and the present immediately changed. The two people arrived in a mysterious location!

.....

"Brother Leng, we still can't find that beautiful girl. She certainly ran away earlier. Her actual strength must be a large amount higher than ours, and she wholeheartedly fled. We must not keep pursuing. Not to mention she has a very high chance of carrying a life protection object." Xu Zonghou looked at the unsightly color of Leng Qiuming's face, and gave advice.

Dong Fangbai also said from the side: "The timing is critical. There is a chance every full moon, but who knows who will be able

to enter first?”

Leng Qiuming depressingly said: “You all believe I actually can’t catch that pretty girl? You are wrong! I want to find that beautiful girl. I want to kill her! Otherwise there will be endless regret!”

“You all carefully think, her age and her realm. If she was in our sects, she would absolutely be the finest.....even the world’s best couldn’t compare to her.”

“We are completely unable to determine her background from the methods she used. Heaven knows what kind of terrifying power supports her.....the most awful would be a terrifying master.”

“The things we did today, at the least could be said.....it was greedy, but yet unsuccessful; but at the most.....it is evil, thinking to rob and kill!”

“You two think. Can you swallow those words?”

Yu Zonghou and Dong Fangbai both sighed. They naturally understood this logic, otherwise they couldn’t follow Leng Qiuming this long to find the girl.

But the full moon had already risen into the sky. Dong Fangbai and Yu Zonghou wanted to compete for that opportunity!

Although the two wanted the treasures the blue dress girl carries,

they didn't show it that directly!

In other words, the two felt they didn't offend the blue dress girl that deeply!

Leng Qiuming and Zhao Fan were the true masterminds!

“Brother Leng, your words have logic, but the problem now is that we can't find her!” Yu Zonghou slowly said: “The full moon only happens once a month. If we miss tonight.....we will have to wait a whole month!”

Dong Fangbai also said: “Yes, another month. There could be even more variables. I have a premonition, the current opportunity here won't remain hidden for long!”

Leng Qiuming's expression was indeterminable for a long time. He finally sighed: “Fine, I'll listen to you. We must first seek the opportunity! But.....no matter whether or not we can seize the opportunity, after this month, we must find the blue dress girl and kill her!

“Otherwise, I cannot be at ease!”

“I dare be certain. She can't have gone too far!”

“None of us would dare approach that defense barrier, but she rushed forward and suffered heavy injuries. We all saw her on the verge of death. I cannot believe she recovered so quick!”

Yu Zonghou and Dong Fangbai looked at each other and then nodded: “Good!”

But they already held some regret towards the things they did.

But it was clear that refusing Leng Qiuming wasn't a good decision at this time.

Dong Fangbai pulled out a treasure soon after and started to make calculations.

Large sect disciples all have one or two close objects at the very least.

Dong Fangbai was in the Raging Inferno sect. The sect wasn't famous for calculating, but his teacher is a calculating master.

“East and slightly north.....”

After a long time, Dong Fangbai's face was somewhat pale as he pointed in a direction. Then he coughed, and sprayed out a mouthful of blood.

Yu Zonghou looked somewhat concerned at Dong Fangbai: “Is there a problem?”

Yet the depths of Leng Qiuming's pupils flashed a trace of

happiness, then reassembled. He looked at Dong Fangbai: “How is it?”

Dong Fangbai waved his hand, and sucked in a deep breath: “No problem, just normal backlash. This time.....it can’t be wrong!”

Soon after, under the guidance of Dong Fangbai, the three people advanced in a direction opposite of Chu Mo and quickly left.

In the night of the grassland, there were still several others searching in this region.

.....

Qi Xiaoyu stared somewhat stunned at the scene before her eyes. She looked over at Chu Mo: “How did you find this place?”

“Intuition!” Chu Mo said as a matter of fact.

“.....” Qi Xiaoyu couldn’t help but return a haughty look. She didn’t believe Chu Mo’s pack of lies.

But the sight before them was truly astonishing.

Because they unexpectedly appeared in the boundless starry sky!

Endless empty space was below their feet.

But the strangest part is they didn't have a feeling of falling down. They were suspended in the void, but it seemed like they were stepping on the ground.

Endless starry sky and starlight was in all directions.

But there was no moonlight.

Obviously this wasn't the same space they were in before.

Qi Xiaoyu felt somewhat nervous for some unknown reason. She anxiously leaned towards Chu Mo, and she couldn't help but extend out and grab his hand.

Chu Mo somewhat oddly looked at pale face of Qi Xiaoyu, then and returned the grip on her hand. A strange feeling spread in his heart: "Don't be afraid. I am here!"

Chapter 40: The So-Called Murdering Heaven

Qi Xiaoyu somewhat weakly nodded, and relaxed inside. Not even she knew why this place gave birth to such an intense scary feeling.

“If you are afraid, should I send you back?”

Chu Mo had the jade’s guidance, and he know how to leave this place.

Qi Xiaoyu’s hand was very cold. Chu Mo could very clearly feel her nervousness and fear.

“No!” Qi Xiaoyu refused without even considering: “I want to stay here! It’s no problem. With you here, I’m not afraid.....”

She said not afraid, but her facial color was still not too well.

Chu Mo looked in her eyes, saw her persevere, and didn’t say anything again. He continuously walked forward in this strange starry sky according to the jade’s guidance.

The two quickly walked a couple of miles in the starry sky. Compared to the starry sky, this amount of distance was practically nothing.

But the strange thing is, the surrounding starry sky had a little bit of change every time the two walked a couple of miles.

They both didn't notice when they first started, but in the end, the two were shocked when ten moons appeared above their heads in the sky.

"This, what is this?" Chu Mo's mouth twitch, he looked in disbelief at the sky above his head. Arranged in a line.....there were ten moons.

"Beautiful!" Qi Xiaoyu couldn't help but sigh in praise.

"You don't feel this is very strange?" Chu Mo looked at her, and he felt the things inside a girl's head are simply too strange.

"Strange, but.....still very beautiful!" Qi Xiaoyu looked at Chu Mo, seemingly not that afraid. But her hand.....never relaxed, and she grabbed even more onto Chu Mo's hand in the end. Furthermore, as soon as she thought to let go, her heart became endlessly anxious.

"Fine.....it is very beautiful!" Chu Mo looked at the ten moons in the sky, somewhat insincerely.

At this time, the world suddenly blew a gust of wind!

Chu Mo was startled. How could this place have wind?

Furthermore, this wind engulfed the entire empty void in the blink of an eye.

The wind quickly passed.

Then, the two discovered that the ten moons in the sky actually changed color!

They were no longer the gold light color, but rather they changed.....into blood red!

Ten blood moons!

Carefully looking, there was actually some bloody light flowing up above. The color was exactly the same as blood, and it gave a person an incomparably strange feeling!

Qi Xiaoyu's body leaded towards Chu Mo, and even somewhat slightly shuddered. She asked in a trembling voice: "How did this happen?"

Chu Mo shook his head, then raised it to look at the blood moons. He mumbled: "I also want to know!"

The ten blood moons in the sky started to gradually move. It was like ten blood moons faced together and flew. Quickly, the ten blood moons actually merged into one, and they formed a bloody

moon that was enormous beyond compare!

This gigantic moon emitted bewitching bloody colored rays of light. It suddenly emitted a sound!

“Weng!”

The empty sky immediately began to quiver.

“This is alive?” Chu Mo was shocked, yet the jade around his neck at this time.....recklessly sent out an indicator. The target.....pointed to this bloody moon!

“You’re insane!” Chu Mo couldn’t help but scold: “Are you thinking to die!”

“Who? Who is insane?” Qi Xiaoyu didn’t understand Chu Mo’s words because this place only contained the two of them. But Chu Mo’s words obviously weren’t directed at her. This made Qi Xiaoyu’s heart become even more anxious.

“It’s nothing, just casually speaking.” Chu Mo’s eyes were fixed upon the bloody moon in the sky. Chu Mo tightly grabbed onto the jade at his chest. This time it didn’t emit an intense heat, but rather it gave Chu Mo a restless feeling.

The feeling was just short of directly telling Chu Mo—I want to eat it!

Chu Mo yet didn't dare act. Compared to the bloody moon, his body is a speck of dust, that's it!

Qiang!

[TL: The sound of small bells tinkling.]

The clang of metal cried out from inside the jade on Chu Mo's chest like the sound of dragons groaning!

Brilliant rays of light unexpectedly shot out of Chu Mo's chest towards the enormous bloody moon!

Weng!

The gigantic bloody moon in the sky seemed to be terrified. It sounded out an intense cry, and the whole sky shivered. It seemed like it could collapse at any time.

Qi Xiaoyu completely froze when she the brilliant rays of light. Her pupils revealed a bright shine, but that shine quickly collected, and her eyes revealed a much more complicated light.

The light that shot towards the bloody moon began to sink inside.

The bloody moon momentarily pulled back, but continuing on.....it started to madly expand. It seemed to fill the entire empty

space in the blink of an eye.

The bloody moon in the sky slightly trembled, and the stars in all directions started to intensely quiver.

This vibration seemed like the entire empty void would collapse!

Boom!

The bloody moon shook again!

The bloody colored light finally started to collapse the boundless empty space!

The blood colored light was before Chu Mo's eyes. Chu Mo even had a feeling that if he extended his hand, he could touch the blood moon!

Bang!

The already incomparably large blood moon exploded open with a loud sound.

Then there was no more.

Because Chu Mo lost consciousness.....

When Chu Mo opened his eyes, he discovered he was at the place where they entered to door. Qi Xiaoyu had disappeared.

“What happened?” Chu Mo muttered somewhat in pain.

Chu Mo recollected what just happened, and he felt his brain still buzzing. Everything that happened today was too inconceivable. It completely overstepped Chu Mo’s acknowledgeable range.

That unreal yet real starry sky, the bewitching blood moon, and the brilliant rays of light shooting out of his jade.

As well as.....the last moment. The blood moon covered the entire empty sky, and that sudden explosion.

Chu Mo wasn’t entirely clear what happened after all.

Don’t tell me, this jade.....it brought me to see an incomprehensible marvel?

“Right.....and Qi Xiaoyu?”

Chu Mo sat up, and a piece of paper lightly fell from his body.

Chu Mo picked it up, and read the simple words written down: “I have some business and must leave first. I will return and find you —Qi Xiaoyu.”

“So she left, good. She wasn’t lost by me in that mysterious space.” Chu Mo muttered, yet inside.....there was a feeling of loss.

He originally thought he could help Qi Xiaoyu this time, but he never thought they would go through that kind of event.

But he knows Qi Xiaoyu disappearing is expected. Chu Mo relaxed a little, and he raised his head towards the sky. A gold colored bright moon hung there, emitting a cold radiance.

Chu Mo sucked in a deep breath: “This moon is still beautiful!”

He entered the jade space as he spoke. Such a large event happened, and Chu Mo felt there should be a change inside the jade space.

He guessed right in the beginning, but he didn’t guess the conclusion.

Chu Mo was completely stupefied after entering the jade space.

There wasn’t a slight change inside the space.....but rather an enormous change!

The original jade space was very large, but somewhat chaotic. There was nothing apart from the large green stone and the small gray tree.

But now, the inside space grew several times, at least over a thousand feet in circumference!

A large building could be completely accommodated in this large of a space, let alone living supplies.

The green stone was still there, and Heaven's Will My Will was still placed on top. But there was something else also next to Heaven's Will My Will!

That is.....a blade!

A blood colored blade!

There was no scabbard. The blade was narrow. At first glance he believed it to be a double edged sword, but he discovered it was a [blood colored single edge sword](#).

[TL: The sword is called a Heng Dao. You can [see one here](#)]

That pretty and flirtatious red seemed to be dripping with fresh blood.

The pattern on top was also extremely complicated. As if it contained endless mystery.

The blood colored sword edge was ice-cold, and emitting a strange radiance. It made Chu Mo think of the blood moon he had just seen.

Only he felt very silly. How could this blood colored sword in the jade space have anything to do with the blood moon?

The sword seemed to carry a kind of magic power that made a person want to pick it up.

Chu Mo coldly stared at the sword, and he somewhat resisted!

This resistance was instinct. It seemed like a spiritual voice was telling him, don't grab it!

Men hold a fatal attraction towards a good sword.....even if they are boys. Chu Mo is naturally no exception.

Therefore he didn't understand. Where is this instinctive resistance was coming from?

But it is a sword, that's it. What could grabbing it do?

Chu Mo slightly acted thinking like this, and he grabbed the sword in his hand.

No problem!

There's no unwell feeling.

But Chu Mo yet felt a sigh come from the deepest depths of his soul.

In the end.....there isn't anything.

That resistant feeling completely disappeared.

Chu Mo thought and retreated from the jade space.

The blood colored sword was already in his hand.

The thing that made Chu Mo startled is the blood colored sword changed into a bright silver color after leaving the jade space.

“Truly strange!” Chu Mo muttered, then he took the sword back into the jade space.

The single-edge sword's true color revealed once back in the jade space. There was an attracting bloody light, and the top seemed to be dripping with blood.

Chu Mo tested several times before finally confirming that the sword changes into an ordinary single edged blade after leaving the jade space. If the sword returns to the jade space then it will show blood.

“Interesting!” Chu Mo was overjoyed. He had seen many weapons growing up. Chu Mo knew that his knife was an

exceptional weapon!

The decorative design on top seemed to be completely naturally formed. The complicated mystery had gone through an unknown number of refinement to be able to reach this degree.

At least, Chu Mo had never seen a blade forged to this degree.

“This sword.....what is its name?” Chu Mo wanted to find the name forged onto the blade.

The creator of this blade certainly must have left his seal.

But this blade.....Chu Mo turned it over for a long time, yet he couldn't find any seal of the forger.

But on the hand guard, Chu Mo discovered a small small..... blood moon seal!

The seal wasn't large, and was hidden in the lines of the sword. It would be difficult to discover if one didn't pay attention.

“Don't tell me it really has something to do with that blood moon” Chu Mo was a little shocked.

He carefully looked at the blood colored imprint, and Chu Mo began to feel dizzy. His body suddenly felt ice-cold, like falling into an ice cave!

Chu Mo trembled and sobered up. The corners of his mouth pulled, and Chu Mo didn't dare look at the seal again.

He once again searched for the seal of the maker, but he couldn't discover it in the end.

“This is abnormal! Such a good sword.....how could it not have a name?” Although the origins were very strange, Chu Mo dared come to a conclusion. This is certainly a named sword.

Any person who forges a sword treats the weapons they forge like their own child, some even better than their own children!

How could they not give it a name?

Chu Mo squinted his eyes, and secretly thought: “Jade.....let me see this sword!”

Boom!

Chu Mo suddenly felt the scenery change, as if he was in an endless blood ocean. Between the heaven and earth.....there was not another color.

Only blood!

“What place is this?” Chu Mo's eyes widened, and he felt his

breath become difficult.

Because not only was this place blood colored, but it was full of blood!

It was like an endless blood ocean. Everything was the accumulated blood of men!

The aura was just short of making Chu Mo collapse.

An enormous blood wave sounded and struck towards Chu Mo. He was submerged in an instant.

Two bloody dripping words entered into his mind.

“Murdering Heaven!”

Chapter 41: Multitasking

Chu Mo finally recovered his senses after a long time. He struggled up onto shore with great difficulty while gasping for breath.

He was soaked from head to foot like a fish pulled out of water.

Chu Mo rubbed his wet hair, looked at the blood sword in his hand, and muttered: “Go so far.....I only wanted to know your name? Did you have to come up with such a bloody scene to scare me?”

“Murdering Heaven.....such a fierce name!”

A cold wind blew past, and Chu Mo slightly trembled. He grabbed the blade and said: “It looks like you are a blade that has gone through bloody slaughter. To tell me your name in this way.....it is so unique. I would have been scared to death by you had my courage been slightly less.”

Chu Mo prepared to put Murdering Heaven away. After all, this exceptional weapon made him a little uncomfortable.

A snarl came forth from a far away place at this time, and several people advanced towards Chu Mo’s direction.

Chu Mo unconsciously raised his head while somewhat startled. He suddenly looked back behind his head, and there were actually

countless streams of light blooming in mid-air!

Every color under the sun could be seen for a hundred miles on the moonlit grassland.

“Damn!” Chu Mo couldn’t help but scold, then he turned and ran!

He couldn’t possibly stay here and be surrounded by a group of people. Chu Mo couldn’t talk his way out of this one even if he had a hundred mouths, and he would be ripped to shreds.

But what made Chu Mo speechless, is this glowing light.....it seemed to emit from his own body.

Because as he ran the brilliant rays of light in the sky actually moved with him.

“Moved.....those rays of light moved!”

“Not good, the treasure wants to flee! Quickly chase!”

“That treasure is intelligent! We must not let it escape!”

“This is the territory of Da Qi. Any treasure that appears here belongs to Da Qi!”

“Scram Da Qi! You’re shameless! This is Elder Hao Yue’s territory!”

“Elder Hao Yue’s territory? Does he not belong to the Wang Court? Everything on the grasslands belongs to the Wang Court! The Wang Court has indisputable sovereignty over everything here!”

“Pei! A group of common people. If you all dare compete, this noble son won’t mind beheading all of you!”

Chu Mo heard the last voice. It was actually Leng Qiuming’s.

The mixed voices made Chu Mo feel speechless. Da Qi, the Wang Court, and Elder Hao Yue.....they were all mixed into this affair.

‘I cannot let these men grab me. Otherwise, it will certainly influence my future plans!’ Chu Mo secretly thought, then he looked into the sky at the streaming rays of light.

He couldn’t help but curse inside: ‘Speak, what are you following me for? This shining.....are you afraid others won’t catch me?’

Chu Mo couldn’t do anything else at this time. He stepped with both legs and wildly ran with all his might.

The Demon Lord passed down this footwork. It was still a little choppy as it hadn’t achieved a state of complete mastery.

But it wouldn't be thoroughly understood by Chu Mo without suspense.

Chu Mo already put Murdering Heaven back into the jade space, but the brilliant rays of light still followed him in the sky. The influence still lingers on!

The group of people were insane, pursuing relentlessly, unwilling to let go.

Chu Mo grabbed the Yuan stone with both hands, and started a mad rush with his footwork skill. He continuously found places to improve the footwork skill at the same time. He also madly cultivated Heaven's Will My Will to continuously suck in the Yuan power from the Yuan stone.

Multitasking!

A cultivator could only discover this state. It cannot be sought.

Chu Mo was unwittingly able to do it under this type of enormous pressure!

Only Chu Mo was completely unaware of this point. His brain only said one thing: 'Run! Don't let them see your identity! And you must not let them grab you!'

“What kind of treasure is this? How can it run so fast? I feel like I’m getting farther and farther away from it!” Leng Qiuming said to Dong Fangbai and Yu Zonghou.

Dong Fangbai and Yu Zonghou also didn’t understand. Yu Zonghou said: “I have never heard of this kind of treasure before.....”

“I’ve heard of spiritual treasures that can fly, but those treasures flee at first sight, disappearing in an instant.”

“But this.....seems to be intentionally teasing us?”

Dong Fangbai nodded: “I also have this feeling.”

Chu Mo would certainly spit in their faces if he heard these words.

“The ghost wants to play with you all!”

But it was indeed this type of feeling for Leng Qiuming and the others. Leng Qiuming wrinkled his brow and said: “Could it be..... this treasure is using the method to test us? See if we can persist to the end?”

Yu Zonghou muttered: “This is a possibility!”

Dong Fangbai said: “I still have enough Yuan stones!”

“Chase!” Leng Qiuming snarled, and he advanced towards the flowing light.

There were still several men of Da Qi, the Wang Court, and Elder Hao Yue behind the three of them.

They didn’t dare directly oppose the disciples of the sects, but they didn’t wish to give up. What if that treasure selected them?

Especially the people of Da Qi. They were the most aggravated. They already considered the grassland territory in the bag, even though it wasn’t theirs yet. This place was also discovered first by the people of Da Qi.

As a result they didn’t know who leaked the information and attracted so many people.

Da Qi’s group of people had enough certainty they could attain the treasure if it weren’t for those three large sect disciples.

But now.....they weren’t that hopeful.

“If I find out who leaked the news.....I will kill him with my own hands!” A handsome young man carried a peculiar shaped bow. The surface seemed to be submerged in water. He rode atop a horse and stared at the dazzling rays of light. He mumbled: “I must get this treasure. It is mine! Humph, what are sect disciples? I, Jiang Qiuyang.....am also a sect disciple!”

Chu Mo madly fled on the grassland. He also didn't dare run towards princess Bao Lian's palace. That was the same as telling everyone his identity.

He could only go towards another direction far away from the palace. At the same time Chu Mo scolded: 'Lousy blade.....have you showed off enough? Retract those brilliant rays of light for me! I'm likely to throw you away if you show off again! It is still good if master doesn't want?'

Chu Mo somewhat understood that the brilliant rays of light above his head were most likely caused by Murdering Heaven.

Because there was nothing before this!

Chu Mo was ruthless inside, and gnashed his teeth. He wanted to throw Murdering Heaven away, and the strange thing is the rays of light above his head actually started to slowly dull.

Chu Mo was overjoyed, and he muttered: "Quick quick, completely scatter. Such a large action, are you trying to kill me?"

The scattering speed of colorful rays of light.....slightly sped up.

"Quicker quicker!"

Chu Mo urged, and at the same time he silently cursed: 'Just a

blade.....who is this large extravagance for? Aren't you dressing up a bit much?'

Chu Mo was happy, but Leng Qiuming and the others all felt like they were splashed with cold water. They saw the brilliant rays of light gradually scatter a distance of a few miles away.

Leng Qiuming's face turned completely green!

Yu Zonghou and Dong Fangbai's faces also didn't appear so well.

This group of people came to the grasslands and bitterly searched ever since they received the news. Also the offended persons have a large background.

The treasure finally entered the world today!

But it ran.....

It would be nothing if I ran faster.

For example with treasures that disappear at first sight, everyone could only feel regret, and yet feel somewhat gratified: 'Although I didn't get it, others also didn't get it.....they could be comforted thinking like this. It could also be a story to tell the younger generation.'

But now this isn't the same!

Not to mention the three sect disciples, even the people behind had a belief: They all felt they had an opportunity to attain this treasure!

Although it fled very quickly, it still never left their line of sight.

Practically everyone believed they could certainly attain the treasure so long as they persevered. At the very least.....they could certainly see its true appearance!

But now.....the lighthouse in the sky that gave a guiding ray of light.

It actually.....scattered!

“Damn!” A male of the Wang Court couldn’t help but curse, and then he snarled: “We missed this treasure.....withdraw!”

A dozen riders quickly borrowed the moonlight to withdraw.

Elder Hao Yue’s group coldly watched the direction those horsemen left. The leading man coldly laughed: “You actually run swiftly, and think yourselves clever!”

Da Qi’s group was the most unwilling to give up. They had squandered the most in this search, and payed the greatest price.

Therefore, they didn't think to give up even if the light scattered.

Jiang Qiuyang coldly commanded: "Continue searching! We must find it.....even if it is buried three feet deep!"

The three men in front, Leng Qiuming, Yu Zonghou, and Dong Fangbai, each looked at each other. They saw the sky already darkened, and they didn't know if they should keep pursuing.

"At least.....we should go to the place where the light dimmed and take a look. Can't say for sure we will find anything." Yu Zonghou said.

Dong Fangbai nodded: "Perhaps it drilled into the ground!"

Leng Qiuming's eyes lit up: "That's reasonable, go!"

The three figured advanced there at high speed.

Chu Mo saw the light above his head finally fade away, and he immediately relaxed a breath. He thought a moment, then made a large circle in the grassland.....back to where he came from!

Because, that horse.....he is still there!

That horse is very clever. Chu Mo estimated it shouldn't have run away.

He went out on the horse from princess Bao Lian's palace during the day. Other people would certainly become suspicious if he returned without the horse.

Chu Mo also didn't know if the group of people behind him still had deadly intentions, and were still madly chasing.

But Chu Mo smiled: "Serves them right!"

Chu Mo galloped along the path. He held a Yuan stone in each hand, and he never stopped practicing Heaven's Will My Will.

The energy in the Yuan Stone was continuously sucked in, and they were turned into ordinary stones.

Those two stones that could restore Chu Mo twenty times..... were both half turned into ordinary stones by the time Chu Mo returned to the place he left his black horse.

The corners of Chu Mo's mouth pulled, and he painfully muttered: "A little loss....."

Sure enough, the black horse didn't walk far. It calmly waited there, and it affectionately pressed into Chu Mo's embrace upon seeing him.

Chu Mo patted the black horse's head and laughed: "Truly clever!"

He mounted the horse and bolted away.

He hunted several rabbits and wild chickens along the road back.....

Chapter 42: Hao Yue's Clan

Chu Mo walked out of his room exhilarated early morning the next day. He carried a happy expression. He called out with a big smile to his serving maid: "Good morning!"

"Ah.....he.....hello!" The maid's face turned red. Her heart started bouncing around like a little deer, and she believed the young horseman fancied her.

Horsemen of the Wang Court were the top pick for practically all the maidens of the grasslands.

Because the Wang Court horsemen were almost all in their twenties and thirties. They were young, handsome, and cultured. They also held a high position in the grasslands.

How could the girl not like him?

Chu Mo would certainly feel speechless if he knew what the maiden was thinking. He didn't even have any feelings towards top grade beauties like princess Nuo Yi.....don't mention he is ignorant about sensing these kinds of things.

Yesterday's experience was thrilling, but Chu Mo's acquisition was equally big!

He cut down a vile poisonous Immortal Sky disciple that was an evil presence for himself and Qi Xiaoyu. He obtained Murdering

Heaven, thereby possessing an outstanding weapon. The jade space also had an enormous change.

The most important part is a completely new scripture appeared on the second page of Heaven's Will My Will!

Rest assured, this made Chu Mo the most happiest!

He pulled out Heaven's Will My Will after coming back last night, and he shockingly discovered the second page of Heaven's Will My Will was surprisingly covered with writing.

After cultivating one cycle, he discovered his absorption speed of Yuan Qi was twice as fast as before.

Chu Mo cultivated for one night and two days, and he discovered his current Yuan Qi accumulation was already at the peak of the third realm. He could break through to the fourth realm at any time!

This kind of cultivation speed had never been heard of.....but now it has actually become reality!

Chu Mo's current status was that of a person at a happy occasion.

Chu Mo didn't go out for the next several days. He continuously focused on cultivating.

The place was peaceful. The disturbances throughout the grasslands seemed to have no relation with this place, and no one came to harass them.

Chu Mo snuck out several times at night to use Murdering Heaven and cultivate his sword skill. He discovered the power was several times greater than before.

It would be easy to directly confront an opponent the rank of Zhao Fan now.....one slash could chop across his opponent!

He wouldn't be in a difficult situation like last time!

The day of banquet arrived after several days. Nuo Yi, Bao Lian, and the little prince Lee were all in splendid attire. They sat in a luxurious carriage that was already prepared.

Chu Mo was dressed in festival attire like the other Wang Court horsemen, and he looked to be trembling with excitement.

Chu Mo rode on the black horse among the troops beside Nuo Yi's carriage. He looked a little frail compared to the full grown men, but he was still soldierly enough.

Nuo Yi looked out the window of the carriage several times and secretly stole glances at Chu Mo. Her eyes were a bit obsessed.

The dazzling princess Bao Lian at her side softly said: "Do you like him?"

Two red clouds flew onto Nuo Yi's face, just a little embarrassed, but she slightly nodded. Then she said in a somewhat hopeless voice: "He seems to not like me."

"How is that possible? My niece is so beautiful, and also the future queen of the grassland. What man wouldn't like you? Maybe if he is blind!" Princess Bao Lian said: "This is the way I see it. It's not that he doesn't like you, only he is too young.....he basically doesn't understand these things!"

"How can he not understand? He is so clever. He has the most wisdom among all the people I've seen!" Nuo Yi said somewhat sadly.

"Ha ha.....it looks like my precious niece.....the future queen of the grasslands is truly fond of him." Princess Bao Lian smiled tenderly, then said: "Your aunt has met men just like you say. Boys can be extremely clever, but they are much slower than girls about these kinds of things!"

"Remember my precious niece. If you like.....you must pursue! Do not miss out, or you will have regret."

"Thirteen or fourteen year olds.....they aren't that young. The boys of the grasslands already have a marriage arranged at that age, and at fifteen or sixteen they could be married and have a child!"

Nuo Yi looked with a bright red face at her aunt, and softly said:

“Auntie is speaking of me, but at that time why did you.....”

Princess Bao Lian’s face slightly changed.

Nuo Yi softly said: “Sorry auntie, Nuo Yi said something she shouldn’t have said.”

Princess Bao Lian shook her head and pulled Nuo Yi’s hand: “Auntie doesn’t blame you. At that time.....auntie had not choice. Your father.....father is good in that aspect, but his nature is soft. And he was too charitable.”

“In fact there were several opportunities at that time to take over the whole grassland with iron blood and skill. At that time he chose to appease.....humph. Only tyrants can be king in these grasslands! What use is appeasement? The more you appease, the more others feel you are easy to cheat!”

“Elder Hao Yue’s influence had already risen at that time, and it was an unstoppable trend.”

“If it continued on, I’m afraid.....the grasslands would turn into a giant battlefield after a couple of years.”

“At that time I advised your father to come up with an excuse to send troops and grab Elder Hao Yue.....if he didn’t kill him, at least place him under house arrest!”

“But your father.....yet refused.”

“That bastard Elder Hao Yue listened to any rumor at that time. He actually took his two guards and ran to the Wang Court to ask for marriage!”

Princess Bao Lian’s face revealed a trace of resentment: “Your father felt Elder Hao Yue was honorable, and he lacked a rebellious heart. Otherwise, how could he only take two people to the Wang Court and ask for marriage? In addition, your father never approved of me and mister Pang. I agreed to the marriage in that mess.”

Nuo Yi softly said: “My father did wrong in this. He delayed auntie so many years.....”

“It couldn’t be called wrong.” Princess Bao Lian plainly said: “After I came, that old bastard controlled himself much more than in the past. He didn’t dare openly develop the power of the Hao Yue clan. Otherwise this beautiful grassland would have entered into battle a long time ago.”

Nuo Yi looked at her aunt in a state of worship, then said: “Auntie, you are truly formidable! You suffered such a great wrong, and you are still able to calmly confront it. If we changed places.....I certainly couldn’t do it.”

“You could do it!” Princess Bao Lian earnestly said: “Auntie will certainly make you the most brilliant pearl of the grasslands!”

Princess Bao Lian’s place was approximately forty miles away

from the place Elder Hao Yue lived. They left early in the morning, and they finally arrived at sunset.

Chu Mo finally had a feeling of coming to the grasslands when he saw the yurt ahead of them.

Elder Hao Yue sent out troops to greet them. They intermingled after being received, and they majestically hastened towards the Hao Yue clan.

Elder Hao Yue and his three sons Gemu, Gewen, and Geshui waited there with high level members of the Hao Yue clan all around them.

The carriage slowly stopped. Elder Hao Yue's face revealed an infatuated expression in the moment that the richly dressed princess Bao Lian left the carriage.

Elder Hao Yue vaguely remembered. The only time she had dressed up like this was the day they were married.

‘What is this today? Is it so that I support her niece.....to climb on top the Wang Court throne?’

Elder Hao Yue looked at princess Bao Lian from far away, and his face revealed a moderate smile. Inside he was completely ice-cold: ‘It’s a pity. I won’t have the good fortune to enjoy this top level beauty! Because.....I want to sit on that throne!’

The three brothers at Elder Hao Yue's side also held an infatuated expression.

Sons taking wives from the father's concubines was a common occurrence in the grasslands.

They all were unaware their father already secretly poisoned princess Bao Lian. They all wanted to marry this woman that their father hadn't touched. If she could sleep with them once.....it would be very good!

Princess Nuo Yi left the carriage soon after, and it made everyone's eyes light up even more.

The most dazzling and resplendent pearl on the grasslands, dressed in rich attire, emitted endless youth and vitality.

She was a spring orchid. Even if she was standing next to princess Bao Lian, she did not lose out in the slightest!

Gemu secretly cast a glance at his younger brother Geshui, and he was envious inside. His father said he would marry her to the third brother if Nuo Yi was accommodating.

"If she accommodates, then.....my Hao Yue clan can easily obtain a former princess without anyone to rely on!"

"The people of the grassland will support us even more!"

These are the words Elder Hao Yue said to his three sons earlier.

Gemu was a little uneasy, because he is the oldest. He is the most deserving of marrying a princess!

But his father yet wanted to marry her to third brother!

The reason was very simple. Gemu is the oldest, and Gemu would inherit the throne in the future!

Elder Hao Yue couldn't permit the throne to return to that bloodline's hands after working so hard to obtain the it.

Gemu understood this logic, but his heart was still hot and impulsive as he looked at the beautiful moving face of princess Nuo Yi.

It is a pity no one here dares oppose Elder Hao Yue. Elder Hao Yue is the heaven of the Hao Yue clan! He is the one and only!

“Ha ha, welcome. Welcome all of you! My dear wife, and my treasured niece and nephew! Welcome all of you.....welcome to the Hao Yue clan!”

Elder Hao Yue's face carried a happy expression as he walked over. That good expression and warm smile, it looked entirely like a kind elder.

Chu Mo leaped down from the horse, and he secretly thought: 'This is the first time I've met such a deep and sophisticated person. No wonder he could develop the Hao Yue clan to the present degree.'

It seems.....the following plan will have to be acted upon according to the circumstance!

Chu Mo's greatest headache was the two guards of elder Hao Yue. They were seemingly inseparable!

There could ordinarily be no danger for elder Hao Yue to welcome princess Bao Lian in his own domain.

But those two guards still followed behind Elder Hao Yue extremely alert.

It seemed in their eyes, any person.....is a suspicious target!

Chu Mo somewhat painfully wrinkled his brow and thought: 'If there is a way to indirectly approach elder Hao Yue in an instant, end him in one slash without fooling around, then that would be best!'

Mulling it over, Chu Mo walked together with the group and was welcomed by Elder Hao Yue's clan.

Chu Mo was mindful to observe this course of events, and he discovered Elder Hao Yue's clan seemed to have a gleeful atmosphere. But they were actually relaxed on the outside and tight on the inside!

There are secret cards in many places.

‘These secret cards.....I'm afraid at one command they would immediately encircle, and not a single drop of water could break through.’

Chu Mo squinted and thought: ‘It looks like there is no good way today. There must certainly be a break!’

Chapter 43: Wily Old Fox

Twilight approached. A pink glow showed off the clouds far away in the lower half of the sky.

Elder Hao Yue's clan had already started burning a large bamboo fire. The raging flames and the sunset glow reflected off each other.

The people of the grassland are experts in song and dance. There were already a large number of young men and women circling around the bonfire, singing and dancing. One could feel the passion blowing from far away.

A joyous atmosphere!

The atmosphere here reached a high tide in the wake of princess Bao Lian's and Nuo Yi's arrival.

A large amount of young men and women encircled around princess Bao Lian's group.

Princess Bao Lian and Nuo Yi's faces revealed a joyful expression. They couldn't help but follow the music and twist their bodies.

Pang Zhongyuan walked to Chu Mo's side and softly said: "In such a lively atmosphere, don't be looked at strangely by others."

Chu Mo bitterly smiled. Where could he have learned things like singing and dancing!

But he could only follow the human tide at this time, and randomly twist. In the end he practiced martial arts from a young age. Rhythm, posture, and flexibility were not problems. He seemed decent after a few moments.

Everyone finally stopped after dancing for a while. The faces of everyone were flushed and smiling.

The faces of princess Bao Lian and Nuo Yi were extremely excited.

Chu Mo was secretly alert inside. Elder Hao Yue is formidable as expected!

If it weren't for princess Bao Lian's prior information, and if he didn't personally see the secretly arranged manpower, he would have been affected by the atmosphere. Chu Mo would have considered this scene a grand majestic banquet.

Soon after, the person presiding over the festivities announced that the outdoor banquet had started.

Men of the Hao Yue clan started to set the tables and chairs, methodically putting everything together. People came forth with wine and dishes soon after.

They were all specialties of the grassland. There was whole roasted lamb, beef boiled in a large pot, and a fragrant aroma permeating the whole place.

Chu Mo couldn't help but salivate.

Everyone quickly found their seat. Elder Hao Yue sat at the head. He raised a large bowl and heartily laughed: "Today's banquet is to welcome my Hao Yue princess, my niece and my nephew prince Lee! Everyone drink! Don't go home sober!"

"Bottoms up!"

Following Elder Hao Yue's words, everyone yelled out: "Cheers!"

Chu Mo drank a bowl of wine, and a burning feeling started. Princess Bao Lian said Elder Hao Yue wouldn't put anything in the wine or food, but he was still careful. He used the jade to identify the food and wine, and determined it wasn't poisoned.

Pretty young girls of the Hao Yue clan started to circle around the bonfire and dance after the start of the banquet.

These girls were extremely beautiful, and they danced seductively. They were vivacious and charming.

Watching these beautiful girls dance was truly a type of enjoyment. One would be intoxicated even if they didn't drink. Chu Mo stole a few glances, and even Pang Zhongyuan couldn't

help but squint multiple times over there.

The large majority of people drank three bowls of wine very quickly. Chu Mo didn't drink that quickly, but he still had one bowl.

Elder Hao Yue stood up and asked at this time: "Are these girls beautiful?"

"Beautiful!" The tipsy crowd loudly replied. Several people also whistled and applauded.

Elder Hao Yue smiled big: "Do you like?"

"Like!" The crowd roared like a pack of wolves howling.

Elder Hao Yue said: "Us strong men and women of the grasslands are all direct and straightforward! Not like those people in the central plains. They are secretive, coy, and boring!"

"Ha ha ha ha!" The crowd exploded with laughter. The whole atmosphere of the banquet became extremely warm.

"Then.....do any of you young people want to make a confession to your sweethearts today?" Elder Hao Yue asked again.

Chu Mo thought: 'Here it comes!'

Sure enough, Elder Hao Yue's words hardly faded before a young man's voice sounded out: "Yes!"

Hao Yue turned and looked at his own third son, Geshui. Everyone's faces excitedly looked at him.

"You stinky boy.....I never saw you fancy anyone. Who do you want to confess to?" Elder Hao Yue laughed and asked.

The smiles on the faces of princess Bao Lian and princess Nuo Yi became a little stiff, even though they knew that this would happen already.

Geshui immediately turned, lovingly looked at Nuo Yi, and proclaimed: "I.....Hao Yue Geshui, am a good youth of the grasslands! I love.....I certainly love the most radiant pearl of the grasslands! Other girls, although they are beautiful, but I only see and love Nuo Yi!"

"Ao Ao Ao!"

The Hao Yue clansmen immediately cheered like a pack of wolves at the outdoor banquet.

"Third noble son is most handsome!"

"Third noble son is most brave!"

“Only our third noble son matches with the most touching pearl of the grasslands!”

Gemu also smiled as he sat next to Geshui, only there was much gloom in that smile.

Most handsome? Most brave?

Gemu stole a look at the excited third brother, and at his happy looking father. His thoughts immediately calmed down: ‘Wait until the day I become king. Then speak!’

The warriors of the Hao Yue clan already started to gather at that time. They faced Nuo Yi and shouted in unison: “Princess respond!”

“Princess respond!”

“Princess respond!”

The voices shook the heavens and echoed all around.

Nuo Yi sat there carrying a somewhat stiff smile. She heard the voices, and she took a deep breath. Then softly.....raised a hand.

The voices came to a screeching halt!

Chu Mo saw Elder Hao Yue's expression slightly stiffen. A cold light flashed in his pupils.

"I will speak." Nuo Yi slowly stood up. She gracefully stood there and looked all around. Her vision slightly jerked as it passed by Chu Mo, but it quickly resumed.

"First, I must thank brother Geshui's generous affection towards me."

"Sister Nuo Yi, I am infatuated with you....." Geshui borrowed the liquid courage, and he shouted with a red face.

The surroundings burst with loud cheers.

Nuo Yi once again softly raised her hand, and placed some pressure: "Everyone please first listen to what I have to say."

The Wang Court princess's leftover power still remained. Even If the Wang Court had gone through drastic change, and even if she is currently wanted and slandered by brothers Jin and Yin, she still held an incomparable position in the hearts of the grassland people. It is the same, even if she is in Elder Hao Yue's clan!

The whole scene calmed down once again.

Geshui's face revealed a trace of embarrassment, but his expression was still full of excitement. It seemed to him, the most brilliant pearl of the grasslands was already his.....no one could

snatch her away!

“Here, I must first clear something.” Nuo Yi softly said: “You all must hear the changes that occurred at the Wang Court. Nuo Yi shouldn’t say these things to dampen this joyous occasion.”

“But, since Geshui is proclaiming to me, then, there are a few things I must say first.”

The flesh of Elder Hao Yue slightly twitched, but he didn’t cut off Nuo Yi. He only looked at the peacefully-sitting princess Bao Lian’s vision, as it turned ice-cold.

Obviously, he didn’t believe the young Nuo Yi could have such wisdom.

Princess Bao Lian tenderly cared for her own niece. She didn’t look at him, as if she completely didn’t notice Elder Hao Yue watching her attentively.

“First, Nuo Yi isn’t a fugitive!”

Princess Nui Yi contained her tears as she proclaimed: “Nuo Yi’s mother and father, your most beloved king and queen, were poisoned by the unfilial sons Jin and Yin. And their heads were personally chopped off by brother Yin!”

“Therefore, brother Jin and Yin are the real murderers of the former king and queen!”

“The second thing, Nuo Yi requests that uncle send troops to help Nuo Yi, to cut down the usurpers Jin and Yin!”

Nuo Yi looked at Elder Hao Yue, and she resisted the tears falling with great difficulty.

Geshui drank a little much and was caught in the moment. He roared without hesitation: “Don’t worry princess Nuo Yi. I will certainly send troops as long as you become my wife.....”

Gemu secretly gave a ruthless kick to Geshui’s leg below the table. The already wobbly Geshui immediately fell to the ground. Then Gemu looked a little shocked at the crowd and laughed: “Third brother drank too much. He can’t stand straight and is speaking nonsense!”

“I.....I didn’t.....” Geshui climbed up from the ground. He still wished to continue on with what he was saying, but he suddenly saw his father’s ice-cold sunken face. He shivered from head to toe and hastily said: “Hey.....I, I drank too much.....truly too much! Sorry I’ve lost face.....sister Nuo Yi, you.....you continue.”

Princess Nuo Yi acted like the scene never occurred. She directly looked Elder Hao Yue in the eyes and said: “Nuo Yi’s father and mother have recently passed away. Even if Nuo Yi has the heart, but right now it is an unfitting time to discuss marriage. I hope uncle can understand!”

“At the same time, Nuo Yi once again requests uncle to send

troops. Help the Wang Court destroy the rebellious brothers Jin and Yin. For the peace of the grassland, and justice for everyone!”

“Nuo Yi believes uncle to be a man of honor, and he will certainly help Nuo Yi! He will help the grassland’s Wang Court!”

Nuo Yi faced Elder Hao Yue and deeply saluted.

The whole scene quieted. Even the most slow-witted person could feel the atmosphere became tense.

Everyone’s vision fell upon Elder Hao Yue.

Elder Hao Yue suddenly smiled, reached out an empty hand to princess Nuo Yi, and said: “You have such a filial piety. It is rare and precious! It is truly not easy!”

“So uncle promises according to Nuo Yi’s request?” Nuo Yi directly asked.

Elder Hao Yue’s pupils coldly flashed, and he continued on smiling: “This matter is too complicated. It is also something a child like you shouldn’t participate in. But don’t worry, your parents died. I.....and your aunt are your only close relatives. I will certainly lord over you!”

Chu Mo slightly squinted, and thought: ‘The old guy is amazing. He actually used kinship and family seniority to suppress Nuo Yi.’

Sure enough, Elder Hao Yue continued speaking: “You are my younger generation, and my favorite child! I will certainly take care of your parents matter! Brothers Jin and Yin are traitorous parent killers. They subverted the Wang Court, and I will certainly send troops!”

Elder Hao Yue said these words without any doubt.

The surroundings immediately burst out with cheers.

Chu Mo’s pupils were ice-cold, and he thought: ‘Certainly send troops? It is for yourself!’

“As for the wedding. Right now you still need to be respectful to your parents, and not get married.” Elder Hao Yue sighed.

Geshui’s eyes immediately grew large. He wanted to speak, but Gemu stared daggers at him.

Elder Hao Yue changed the topic at this time: “But, Geshui is a little infatuated with you. I think you must certainly not refuse him princess. There is no rush to get married, but the marriage..... it can be arranged!”

Nuo Yi’s face immediately became pale when she heard these words.

Chapter 44: Chu Mo To Battle

Princess Bao Lian's pupils flashed ice-cold.

Geshui changed from anger to happiness. Men of the grasslands take promises seriously. Their word is as good as gold. So long as the marriage is arranged, this pearl.....cannot run away. She will certainly be his!

"I....." Princes Nuo Yi immediately worried. She already had a beloved. Even though the engagement would be in title only, she entirely could not accept!

"This matter.....it is agreed!" Elder Hao Yue seemed to have exhausted his patience. The Elder Hao Yue waved his hand: "I am your uncle, and your elder, naturally I couldn't harm you! We will certainly do what we promised!"

"Brothers Jin and Yin confused right and wrong. They splashed dirty water upon you. Your uncle will wash you clean, and make you snow white!"

These words didn't expose Elder Hao Yue's ambitious and ruthless nature. It also crushed Nuo Yi's little schemes into the mud!

He is the enemy, but Chu Mo couldn't help but secretly praise: 'Amazing!'

The present situation would soon follow the final words of Elder Hao Yue, but the peacefully sitting princess Bao Lian suddenly spoke: “Wait a moment.”

“What about marrying for love?”

Elder Hao Yue’s pupils flickered quiet cold rays of light. They attentively watched princess Bao Lian. His threatening stare wasn’t the slightest bit concealed.

You truly take no notice of your niece and nephew despite speaking for them!

Princess Bao Lian naturally understood Elder Hao Yue’s threatening expression in an instant. She plainly smiled and said; “Girls of the grassland all love heroes. Am I not right?”

Elder Hao Yue laughed: “Beautiful women match with heroes! Right!”

Princess Bao Lian said: “Then, the most brilliant pearl of the grasslands should find the greatest hero.....is that not what you said when I married you husband?

Elder Hao Yue was slightly shocked, but he could not refute these words. He could only nod and laugh: “This hero, I have given birth to!”

Princess Bao Lian continued speaking: “I am also considered

Geshui's mother. I don't have my own children. Therefore, I view him as my own child, even though he is not my own!"

Elder Hao Yue cursed inside: 'You never let me touch you. How could you give birth to a child?'

"But, although I am Geshui's mother, but I.....cannot show favoritism for this reason!" Princess Bao Lian said with a just face: "Therefore, I propose Geshui have a competition with the horsemen of the Wang Court!"

"Everyone knows! The horsemen of the Wang Court are the most outstanding sons of the grasslands!"

"If Geshui wins, he can naturally prove, he is the most outstanding son of the grasslands! A genuine hero!"

"Then, I will endorse this wedding with open arms."

"Everyone speak, how is my proposal?"

The three hundred Wang Court horsemen of princess Bao Lian and Nuo Yi erupted in applause.

"Good!"

"Good idea!"

“It should be like this!”

“Heroes come out fighting!”

Princess Bao Lian slightly smiled, and she looked at the stiff face of Elder Hao Yue: “Good, it can also activate the mood.”

Gemu said from the side: “Mother, your son has something to say!”

From an age standpoint, Gemu wasn’t much younger than princess Bao Lian. He ordinarily would be reluctant to call her mother, but he couldn’t show disrespect to her here.

Princess Bao Lian looked at Gemu and duly said: “Gemu child, what do you have to say?”

Gemu’s lips slightly curled, and he said: “Letting Geshui have a contest with the Wang Court horsemen would add to the fun under normal circumstances. It would be no harm. But.....everyone saw Geshui was too excited today, and he drank too much wine. Just now he couldn’t even stand up straight. I’m afraid it would be unfair if we let him fight at this time.”

“In such a situation, we can let Geshui’s bodyguard take his place!”

“These bodyguards aren’t a match to Geshui on an ordinary day!”

Gemu's face warmed and smiled as he slowly spoke each sentence.

Geshui appreciatively looked at his older brother from the side.

Elder Hao Yue also nodded satisfied. He normally didn't care about the infighting between his sons, but he still wished for them to rally together in these critical moments. No father wishes to see this kind of internal strife.

Princess Bao Lian thought and then said: "Also good!"

Gemu chuckled: "Then, we will do the best of three rounds!"

Gemu looked at Geshui, and Geshui immediately responded: "Who wishes to substitute in for me? The victor will be rewarded!"

"Me!"

"I'll go!"

"I'll go!"

Several bodyguards at Geshui's side immediately competed with excited faces.

Men of the grasslands never fear battle. They are a natural warlike race. Their veins pump with the blood of warriors!

Geshui's eyes swept around, and he casually picked: "You!"

The bodyguard immediately became excited and ran out, leaping several feet. The young man standing in the stage was lit up like a shining hero by the bonfire.

"Who will fight me!" The bodyguard was high spirited in his own territory, and he looked over at the horsemen in Chu Mo's direction.

The Wang Court Horsemen immediately blazed, standing up one by one. They wanted to teach that reckless guy a lesson.

It was already agreed upon that Chu Mo would fight in this battle, but these hot blooded men had much wine and little restraint. But the training and essence of these Wang Court horsemen were the best in the grasslands.

Therefore, although they were angered and stood up to fight, they didn't lose rationality.

Chu Mo stood up at this time and smiled: "I'll come!"

"All you older brothers have been famous Wang Court horsemen for many years. It would be the same as bullying if you all fought. So, I should go!"

Chu Mo's words were quite ruthless.

The bodyguard of the Hao Yue clan standing next to the bonfire looked in Chu Mo's eyes, filled with a murderous aura. He coldly said: "Who are you? You are so small.....are you also a Wang Court horseman? How come I've never see you?"

"Have you met all the thousands of Wang Court horsemen?" Nuo Yi dully said from far away: "He is my personally appointed bodyguard!"

This bodyguard of the Hao Yue clan immediately slowed, completely speechless. No matter how arrogant he is, he doesn't dare confront a Wang Court princess.

Elder Hao Yue saw Chu Mo the instant he stood up. He squinted, then immediately called over a person at his side. He softly said something to the person. The person's face was slightly shocked, and they quickly departed.

Chu Mo slowly walked out towards the bodyguard onstage. He said with a smile: "I won't bully you. Go ahead and act first!"

"Boy.....you are seeking death, don't blame me!" The bodyguard lowered his voice, and ruthlessly looked at Chu Mo: "There is no longer time to kneel and beg to be spared!"

Chu Mo slightly smiled, extended a hand, and called him with a

hooked finger: “Come”

“Seeking death!” The bodyguard was immediately infuriated. He snarled and rushed directly at Chu Mo.

Yuan power fluctuated and exploded with a loud sound. It actually pressured onto the bonfire not far away.....suppressing the flames back.

“Good!” The warriors on the Hao Yue clan’s side immediately cheered.

“Hey, this boy simply acts recklessly. Mu Han is one of the few experts of the Hao Yue clan. He is on the verge of breaking through the Yuan Closure. Beat that little fart child. Won’t it be the same as crushing an ant?”

“Ha ha, right, this little brat must certainly secretly love princess Nuo Yi. He saw the princess wants to become a person of the Hao Yue clan. He became jealous and lost all reason!”

“I cannot bear to look. It is simply an adult bullying a child!”

“Don’t beat him to death, that’s no fun!”

A gang of warriors from the Hao Yue clan loudly laughed. They didn’t placed the youth in their eyes at all.

All the horsemen on the Wang Court side enraged. They wished to tear the mouths of those few men.

But the Wang Court horsemen of princess Nuo Yi revealed a disdainful cold smile.

“Crush noble son Lin like a little ant?”

“Adult bullying a child?”

“Killing in one strike?”

Don’t joke around!

If there wasn’t an even larger plan in the background, these Wang Court horsemen that had gone through life and death with Chu Mo would all immediately stand up. They would give these ignorant blockheads a lesson about noble son Lin’s heroic achievements.

Crash!

The first pick of Geshui was indeed a little strong. A fist smashed across, and the air began to crackle.

The bonfire brightened back up once again, and it made the face of the warrior shine even more ferociously.

Chu Mo stood there, his figure thin and weak, yet tall and straight. But he appeared at a disadvantage in the eyes of others.

Only Elder Hao Yue's pupils twinkled with an ice-cold light. He looked at Chu Mo, but there was not the slightest smile on his face. Those two bodyguards also alertly watched Chu Mo.

The enormous fist of the bodyguard already smashed before Chu Mo. Chu Mo could even feel the fierce wind coming from the fist!

As well as.....the proud and ferocious smile of the warrior.

Chu Mo finally acted at this time!

He also struck a fist.

This fist was quick as lightning!

In the end.....it directly collided with the fist of the Hao Yue warrior.

Boom!

A muffled bang.

There was no shaking of the heavens and earth, no tragic roar.

This warrior of the Hao Yue clan, step step step step.....retreated back seven or eight steps before stabilizing.

“You lost.” Chu Mo dully said.

The surrounding noisy voices immediately calmed.

Everyone confoundedly looked at the stage. They didn't dare believe their eyes. This boy is the Wang Court horseman personally appointed by princess Nuo Yi, but his age.....it is too young!

At most he looked fourteen or fifteen, and possibly not even that old. How could he send Mu Han back with one strike? This power.....isn't it a little too strong? And it is clear, the boy is being merciful!

They didn't want to admit it, but these people aren't foolish. All the people of the grasslands respect heroes. Strength becomes respect. Even if they didn't wish to admit the truth, but they personally witnessed it. The warriors of the Hao Yue clan completely shut their mouths. Only their facial expressions became extremely unsightly.

They lost too much face!

Mu Han was completely shocked, then he immediately snarled and rushed to Chu Mo again.

“Enough!” Elder Hao Yue coldly shouted: “Losing is losing. Don’t make yourself a joke. Don’t tell me my strong men of the grasslands are sore losers?”

Mu Han slightly trembled, and he immediately knelt before Chu Mo: “Sorry, it is my loss! Mu Han is sincerely convinced!”

He then stood up and walked out with a pale face.

“Next one!” a Wang Court horseman by Pang Zhongyuan shouted.

“Next one!”

“Next one!”

The other people all followed after.

Elder Hao Yue slightly smiled: “Don’t worry, we commence right away!”

Crash! Crash! Crash!

A sound like iron chains rubbing came from far away. It sounded like a person was dragging heavy iron chains and walking over.

The continually calm face of princess Bao Lian suddenly changed.

She stood up and snarled at Elder Hao Yue: “You.....how could you bring out this person? This is against the rules!”

“Ah?” Elder Hao Yue slightly smiled: “He is the bodyguard I have recently entrusted to Geshui!”

Chapter 45: Natural Divine Power

Elder Hao Yue playfully looked at Nuo Yi when he made his remark.

Tit for tat!

If you can casually appoint a Wang Court horseman, I can casually appoint a bodyguard!

Princess Bao Lian was immediately speechless, but she still yet tried to resist: “This is a game to compare notes for fun. That’s it. Why have you brought this person out?”

Elder Hao Yue slightly smiled: “Dearest, this is no ordinary fun game. This concerns a lifelong event for our son!”

“You.....” Princess Bao Lian was so angry she almost passed out. She secretly cursed this shameless old animal inside, but now, she had no more room to speak. Speaking more would truly raise the old thing’s guard. She could only painfully watch the faraway Chu Mo.

The distance was very far, and Chu Mo couldn’t clearly hear what they were saying. However, Chu Mo clearly saw the confrontation between princess Bao Lian and elder Hao Yue. He also saw princess Bao Lian look at him with a helpless expression. Chu Mo faced princess Bao Lian and smiled, then he turned around. He looked in the direction of the iron chain noise.

Chu Mo could feel, what came.....afraid it is no ordinary person!

Bang!

Crash!

Bang!

Crash!

Footsteps stomped on the ground, sending a heavy sound. The iron chains shocked the crowd each time they crashed.

It is hard to imagine what kind of person this is. Why does he carry the iron chains?

Princess Nuo Yi didn't know what was occurring, but she saw the face of her aunt change color. The face that didn't change when confronted with an oncoming landslide. Nuo Yi immediately became nervous.

Princess Bao Lian looked at Nuo Yi and softly said: "Don't worry, he can handle!" only these words did not feel sincere.

Boom!

Crash!

An enormous figure entered into Chu Mo's eyesight as the person approached. It scared Chu Mo a step back.

"The world actually has this tall a person?"

The figure coming out of the shadows was just like a giant!

His height was at least ten feet!

Chu Mo clearly saw the person's face at last as he continuously approached.

He wasn't ugly. He had heavy features, but his skin was very dark. The two large eyes lit up like lamps, extremely bright.

Each step was like a moving black iron tower!

The enormous iron chains were as thick as an arm. The chains pierced through his two shoulders, and they hung down locking his wrists, linking the two arms together. He could move a little, but there was no way to make any large actions. The two legs also had countless iron chains that locked his ankles together. He basically couldn't make any large strides.

"This....." Chu Mo's mouth twitched, and he secretly thought: 'This terrifying giant.....why does he look like a captured

criminal?’

The crowd of Wang Court horsemen were intimidated by the giant. It was also their first time seeing such a large person. They also saw the enormous person’s iron chains that pierced through the shoulder blades, and the ankle locking chains. They all felt a sudden chilling aura inside.

The chains this guy carries must weigh a thousand pounds at the very least!

Furthermore, these chains passed through his shoulder blades. So painful!

The giant also didn’t seem to care about the iron chains. He walked slow because of the chains on his ankles, but it seemed like the weight had no effect on him.

Elder Hao Yue shouted: “This is my warrior of the Hao Yue clan. He is Geshui’s bodyguard. He has natural divine power as well as an irritable temper. The thing he likes to do the most is tear apart the living!”

Roar!

The black tower giant seemed to act with Elder Hao Yue’s words, and he let out an enormous roar.

The voice seemed like a ferocious beast howling.

“Therefore.....this little hero, you should be careful. You may withdraw now if you feel you aren’t his match.”

“Otherwise, don’t blame me. I cannot control him.”

Elder Hao Yue looked at Chu Mo and plainly spoke. His pupil’s twinkled ice-cold rays of light.

Chu Mo quickly thought: “Jade, let me see his realm!”

Information immediately entered Chu Mo’s mind.

“No realm. His basic essence is rank nine, natural divine power. Poisoned, toxicity degree.....”

“The ingredients to cure the poison are.....”

“Refinement method: After gathering materials, send into the space, and arrange on the green stone.”

“Required energy, weak.”

Chu Mo felt extremely shocked after obtaining the information on the black iron tower.

“No realm!”

This giant is an ordinary person without any realm?

“Body’s natural essence is rank nine! What is happening?”

He also used the jade on a few Wang Court horsemen in this short period of time. The highest natural essence didn’t pass rank three.

Basically they all had naturally powerful bodies. The most outstanding part is natural abilities of their bodies were a rank higher than their cultivation.

Chu Mo had also checked himself. His own realm cultivation was at the peak of yellow rank three. His physical essence was at rank five. This is all due to the short time spent with the Demon Lord. Chu Mo ate all kinds of high level Yuan beasts for nourishment. There were also the daily beatings.....in reality they continuously changed and perfected Chu Mo’s flesh. Only the method wasn’t too friendly.

Chu Mo’s physical essence didn’t break past rank five under this kind of training. The giant before him actually as a rank nine physical essence.....Chu Mo couldn’t help but exclaim inside: ‘Rank nine physical essence.....then shouldn’t his body strength be equivalent to a rank nine Yuan beast?’

Is this not too terrifying?

Furthermore, the jade also gave a natural divine power

assessment.

This is the first time Chu Mo had seen this kind of assessment. The jade had given an assessment of innate spirit in the past.

Compared to the latter, it appears the black iron tower's natural divine power is somewhat more threatening.

But poisoned.....how could this be?

Chu Mo looked over at the very calm Elder Hao Yue, and he secretly thought: 'Don't tell me it is this old thing's doing? Truly evil! It looks like he often uses his ancestor's poison to harm people.

These thoughts flitted across Chu Mo's mind. He immediately raised his head, looked at Elder Hao Yue, and cupped his fist: "Men of the grasslands only fight to the death. They are not afraid of death! Therefore, this battle.....I accept!"

"Good!" The Wang Court horsemen's blood couldn't help but heat up, and they shouted.

But they were all sweating inside for Chu Mo. They wouldn't have the slightest notion of fighting this giant if they changed places. They wouldn't say any blaming words if Chu Mo chose to give up.

Elder Hao Yue laughed: "Ha ha, good, a good grassland youth!

Has courage!”

“Gao Da.....enter!” Elder Hao Yue faced the enormous black iron tower and shouted.

Roar!

The giant faced the sky and let out a roar. The iron chains let out an ear-piercing noise.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

He moved to the stage step by step, looked at Chu Mo, and revealed a fierce-looking smile. The giant said: “Little guy, you have such soft and tender flesh.....it looks really good to eat!”

Chu Mo looked at the giant’s eyes, and his brow slightly wrinkled. Because he could feel no murderous aura when the giant spoke. But rather, there was only an extremely strong resentment!

This resentment was extremely strong. It was to the point that Chu Mo wondered. What kind of torment did this giant go through to have such intense resentment?

“Come, big guy! Come hit me!” Chu Mo squinted his eyes and came up with a plan. He immediately gave the giant a slight smile.

Weng!

A matchless oppressive sound. The giant swung the chain that passed through his shoulder blades and locked his arms. The long bulky iron chain ruthlessly smashed towards Chu Mo.

A noise in the air caused the crowd to shudder like birds.

Several Wang Court horsemen and Hao Yue clansmen couldn't help but retreat backwards.

This murderous aura is too terrifying!

Chu Mo's image slightly flashed, avoiding the giant's strike.

Bang!

The iron chains ruthlessly smashed the ground next to the bonfire.

The whole earth shook.

A ten foot deep ditch was smashed open by the hard iron chains.

Dust and dirt flew everywhere. The force splashed into the flames of the bonfire.

Several people were startled, and they retreated back.

Nuo Yi's face didn't hold a trace of blood color. She unconsciously stood up and said: "Don't hit.....don't hit....."

Elder Hao Yue coldly looked at Nuo Yi, and [he made a pun on the words](#): "Right now, there is already no one that can stop him!"

[TL: Yeah, I don't get the pun.]

Princess Bao Lian softly comforted Nuo Yi: "Don't worry, it's still good!"

"Ha ha." Elder Hao Yue let out a cold laugh.

Princess Bao Lian trembled inside. She continuously prayed: 'Noble son Lin, we are counting on you.....you must hold on, then find an opportunity to kill this old thing! Otherwise, today we are all doomed!'

Because princess Bao Lian already felt that Elder Hao Yue was suspicious of Chu Mo's status! Otherwise, he would not foolishly bring out Gao Da.

Even, it is very possible Elder Hao Yue already learned Chu Mo's true identity.

Because the the words Elder Hao Yue recently said to Chu Mo——

“Ha ha, good, a good grassland youth! Has courage!”

Don't tell me someone secretly sold us out? Princess Bao Lian's eyes moved over to the faraway Wang Court horsemen. Only she couldn't see anything clearly that far away in the night.

Chu Mo lead the giant everywhere, chaotically fleeing. The whole banquet site turned into a complete mess.

The whole area was in ruins!

The giant's destructive force was too powerful and terrifying.

Everyone hid far away from the two.

The giant also became excited by Chu Mo's continuous running. Two iron chains flew up and down, smashing everywhere.

No matter what it was, so long as the iron chains could touch it, there was only one outcome——smash!

“Don't run!”

“Stand still for me!”

“Coward!”

The giant snarled and continuously roared.

In the end, everyone.....moved far away from the two. Their eyes held endless terror as they watched.

Waiting for an opening, Chu Mo suddenly rushed at the giant. He displayed his footwork skill without restraint. He swished past the side of the giant, and left a word in his ear.

“You aren’t that foolish! You are poisoned! I can cure it!”

Roar!

The giant’s ruthless iron chains struck towards Chu Mo, but they smashed to the side of Chu Mo.

A deep pit once again smashed open in the ground.

A trace of a smile flashed in Chu Mo’s eyes.

He succeeded!

Because this time, the giant’s iron chains didn’t not come rushing at him!

In other words, his opponent listened to what he just said!

Whoosh!

Chu Mo once again flitted across the Giant's side, but a low voice came from the giant: "Why should I believe you?"

Chapter 46: Thunder-Clapping Strike

I can communicate a way!

Chu Mo started to coil around the giant at this time.

He rushed to the giant's side, jumped up high, and struck a ruthless fist into the giant's chest.

Boom!

It was like smashing into a boulder.

This fist of Chu Mo truly did not hold back.....he didn't want to raise Elder Hao Yue's suspicions. He also wanted to test the strength of a rank nine physique.

Hiss!

Chu Mo felt his whole arm go numb, and his fist sent a painful sensation.

Is he human?

Chu Mo scolded and yelled: "Die you big head!"

He then whispered immediately after: "The poison in your body,

it is made of.....”

Chu Mo spoke several ingredients, then fled far away.

The giant roared, turned the two chains attached to his arms, and smashed them down into the ground. They made two deep pits, and dirt flew everywhere.

All the onlookers shuddered with fear.

Including the leisurely Elder Hao Yue.

Elder Hao Yue had already completely relaxed at this time. It was as if he didn't see the other people retreat far away. He peacefully sat there while laughing and attentively watching.

Because he already determined. That little guy that snuck into the Wang Court Horsemen ranks was no opponent for Gao Da!

But this big guy was the Hao Yue clan's killer.

This one person could hold up to a strong army with thousands of horses!

In Elder Hao Yue's eyes, this guy couldn't be considered a human. He is simply a human shaped monster!

A human dragon!

An unstoppable power!

Elder Hao Yue held absolute confidence that he could always control this giant. He could dominate the entire grasslands in the future. Even.....the central plains would have to bow to him.

Princess Bao Lian and princess Nuo Yi's faces both turned pale. Brother Lee leaned against Nuo Yi's side. The little guy was already petrified.

He couldn't be blamed. Practically everyone, including the warriors of the Hao Yue clan, was trembling in fear.

They had the courage to fight to the death when fighting men, even if they were no match.

But when facing this practically invulnerable giant, basic battle courage.....is simply impossible to have!

Beat motionless, beat to death.....where would the courage to fight come from?

Practically everyone looked upon Chu Mo with compassion and a trace of admiration.

Because not only did this little guy dare to fight the monster

giant, but he also continuously charged!

They didn't speak any mocking words towards Chu Mo, even if they were Hao Yue clansmen.

Too courageous!

“Your poison's symptoms are.....”

“I am this kind and honest, how could I cheat you?”

“If you want to change everything now, then work with me.”

“Of course, I pledge to cure your poison, and remove your chains!”

“Give you freedom!”

An iron giant and a frail boy, fighting extraordinarily. Between you and me, isn't it exhilarating?

Everyone thought that this invulnerable beast-like giant was stupid, but rather, he is extremely clever!

The giant put on an amazingly realistic performance the whole time he and Chu Mo conversed. Basically no one saw.....the two people were actually secretly talking!

“If this poison isn’t cured, you will be controlled your whole life!”

“Think, how many wicked things has Elder Hao Yue done? I believe you know from experience!”

“Since I know the poison in your body, and I know the symptoms, naturally I have a way to cure you!”

“Look, I am not even fourteen, yet I am already this talented, unequaled on the grasslands.....cough, don’t glare at me, you don’t count, you are a freak!”

“So how could such a wise, brilliant, and handsome youth cheat you?”

In the end, after over a hundred rounds, the giant was finally moved by Chu Mo’s words. He asked in a low voice: “What should I do?”

Chu Mo was ecstatic. Although, not even he could guarantee the giant was actually moved by his words, but at this time.....he must make a decision!

Many times, war is the same as a casino.

One must observe before betting, and cautiously consider. One

must integrate many factors. But when making the bet.....when the money leaves the hand, there can be no hesitation!

Who can guarantee victory in every war?

Who can guarantee the strength of the enemy can be suppressed in every war?

A soldier who doesn't dare to gamble can never be a called soldier!

“Lift me up like you are going to tear me apart!” Chu Mo said through his teeth: “Then, wait for my signal. When I yell.....’Kill’, with all your power.....throw me towards Elder Hao Yue!”

Roar!

The giant growled.

A ruthless iron chain was dodged by Chu Mo.

The air sounded out with a muffled ‘weng’, this attack could smash a stone wall to pieces!

Everyone around trembled in fear.

The giant asked in a low voice when Chu Mo rushed forward

again: “You aren’t afraid I’ll break the agreement, and really tear you apart?”

Chu Mo said between teeth: “Afraid! But I must gamble! Gamble that you want freedom!”

“I’m hungry, I’ll turn to into food!” The giant said.

“Deal!”

Boom!

Chu Mo’s fist ruthlessly struck into the giant’s chest, making a huge noise.

He immediately moved, thinking to retreat, but he was half a beat slow. The giant snatched his leg.

Soon after, the giant grabbed Chu Mo’s ankle with another hand. He lifted Chu Mo high into the sky.

Chu Mo was like a small monkey in the hands of King Kong. He struggled for his life and snarled.

But to no avail!

“Ah!” princess Nuo Yi let out a piercing scream. She soared up:

“Don’t kill him!”

Princess Bao Lian could no longer sit in the end. She stood up and yelled: “Stop!”

The Wang Court horsemen all thundered in unison: “Put him down!”

The warrior clansmen of the grasslands are hot-blooded and passionate. They couldn’t help but bellow and roar: “Rip him apart!”

The whole scene immediately became chaos.

At the same time, several people looked at Elder Hao Yue with his dull smile.

Princess Bao Lian’s face seemed to be submerged in water. She looked at Elder Hao Yue and said: “Let him go. I promise, you can have what you want!”

Princess Nuo Yi said: “Uncle, I beg you, give the command to release him. I.....I.....I will give you the Wang Court Seal!”

Princess Bao Lian sighed. Her eyes turned red, but yet didn’t obstruct.

Wang Court Seal!

The most precious treasure of the entire grasslands!

It symbolizes the supreme royal power of the grasslands!

Without the Seal, even if you overtake the whole grasslands and call yourself king, you will not have the recognition of a king.

Royal power comes from the heavens. This Seal is the symbol!

The will of the people for the whole grasslands resides inside!

Elder Hao Yue squinted at Nuo Yi, then suddenly chuckled: “For this this boy, you are willing to hand over that thing?”

At this time, Elder Hao Yue no longer concealed anything. He dully looked at Nuo Yi, then he looked over at Chu Mo being held by the giant. Elder Hao Yue suddenly stood up and coldly said: “He, is a spy that infiltrated the Wang Court!”

“Big fool, don’t kill him!”

“I want his true identity made public!”

Weng!

Everyone was suddenly in an uproar.

The eyes of everyone held an unimaginable vision. They looked at the weak figure being held up, and they couldn't believe this youngster that dared fight a giant is a spy.

“You speak nonsense!” Princess Nuo Yi's tears flowed out faster: “He isn't a spy!”

“He rescued me!”

“This throne, I'll give it to you if you want!”

“I don't want anything. I only want him. Let him go!”

“I never thought!” Elder Hao Yue snapped: “You could be that childish, and you dare act out in front of my face?”

“This is the Hao Yue clan!”

“This is my territory!”

“Here, I can tell you fair and square, my good niece.....”

Elder Hao Yue coldly smiled as he looked at Nuo Yi: “I have known all your movements since the first day you left the Wang Court!”

“Do you want to know who has been secretly selling you out?”

Elder Hao Yue looked at the Wang Court horsemen, then he dully said: “Ge Ermu, have you still not come out?”

A figure came out from the dark at this time. It was Ge Ermu, who had always been locked up in the palace of princess Bao Lian.

Nuo Yi stared with big eyes. She unimaginably looked at Ge Ermu, seeming to think how he escaped.

But immediately she ruthlessly yelled: “Traitor, I should have killed you then!”

“You shut up!” Ge Ermu’s face suddenly revealed a ferocious color, and he raged: “I, Ge Ermu, have been Elder Hao Yue’s man since the beginning! I never betrayed Elder Hao Yue!”

“You have no qualifications to call me, Ge Ermu, a traitor, even if you are the Wang Court princess!”

“Ha ha, truly interesting.” Princess Bao Lian couldn’t help but give a cold laugh. She looked at Elder Hao Yue: “You truly hide deep. This announcement is really huge. I never looked down upon you, but today I finally discovered. I still underestimated you!”

Elder Hao Yue coldly smiled: “You are all soft-hearted. You didn’t kill Ge Ermu, and you let me obtain a great amount of useful information.”

“Ge Ermu is the most brave warrior of my Hao Yue clan! If it weren’t for him, I never would have known you had such a terrifying little thing in your ranks.”

“Perhaps I would have truly been outmaneuvered by you!”

“Ge Ermu, you have done a great service! In the future, this king.....will heavily reward you! Ha ha ha ha!”

Ge Ermu knelt down on single knee: “Ge Ermu thanks the king!”

Princess Bao Lian and Nuo Yi turned pale. They looked at each other, and they saw regret and hopelessness in the counterpart’s eyes.

What possessed them at that time? What made them hold back noble son Lin from killing Ge Ermu?

But now they harm noble son Lin!

Elder Hao Yue already calls himself king!

His ambitions are already completely out in the open.....he doesn’t even think to cover up. They are completely laid bare!

Nuo Yi suddenly said with flowing tears: “Uncle, I’m begging you don’t kill him. Only don’t kill him, and Nuo Yi will do anything!”

Elder Hao Yue revealed a fierce-looking smile. He looked at princess Bao Lian and said: “And you?”

Princess Bao Lian sighed: “Let him go. I will help you unify the grasslands!”

“This little thing is that important to you both?” Elder Hao Yue squinted, then coldly smiled: “A Da Qi traitor. That’s it. You two have been colluding together with Da Qi in the dark for a long time.....humph, how is your behavior any better than the parent killing brothers Jin and Yin?”

“Look clearly, he isn’t any traitor.” Princess Bao Lian already recovered her serenity. She looked at Elder Hao Yue: “He is a large sect disciple. Kill him, and you will have endless regret!”

Elder Hao Yue’s pupils flashed a dangerous light. He fiercely smiled: “Regret? Where? Who knows I killed him? Even if they know, he was killed in a fair contest! Don’t use those large sects to scare me!”

“Large sects.....also have a little face!”

Elder Hao Yue’s pupils hastily flashed, and he snarled: “Foolish Gao Da! Tear him apart for me!”

“I’ll let you eat a full meal today!”

Roar!

The black iron tower giant lifted Chu Mo up high. He roared, and he appeared like he truly wanted to rip Chu Mo in half.

“No!” Princess Nuo Yi’s tears flowed down, and she begged: “Don’t kill him!”

Snap!

Geshui’s face turned ruthless. He ruthlessly slapped her and scolded: “Slut!”

“You are my woman!”

“I’ll deal with you later!”

Chu Mo suddenly snarled at this time: “Kill!”

Four assassins unexpectedly flew towards Elder Hao Yue!

“Seeking Death!”

The two guards at Elder Hao Yue’s side suddenly moved!

They directly rushed at the four assassins.

Bang!

Bang!

The two figures were sent flying without fooling around, and they rushed at the two other remaining assassins.

This all followed in the instant after Chu Mo yelled kill——

The giant holding Chu Mo roared, and sent Chu Mo's body ruthlessly towards the location of Elder Hao Yue!

This scene was outside of anyone's expectations!

The giant used all his power to fling Chu Mo's body.....and it reached an unimaginable speed!

Like an arrow shot towards Elder Hao Yue.

Elder Hao Yue's bodyguards let out an earth-shattering roar.

But because they were dealing with the four assassins, their distance from Elder Hao Yue.....was slightly too far.

They couldn't hurry back!

Elder Hao Yue's pupils.....suddenly enlarged.

His pupils sucked in all the light.

Soon after, Elder Hao Yue——

This man of the grasslands, fully deserving of the title ruthless overlord!

His head flew.

Chapter 47: Slaughter Descends

Time seemed to freeze in this instant.

Everyone's expressions were like statues, locked in place!

Until——

Elder Hao Yue's golden crowned skull snapped, falling at a faraway place. The gold crown fell off.....and the head spun in circles several times. In the end, it fell beside Geshui's foot, who had recently smacked Nuo Yi.

Elder Hao Yue's eyes were still extremely large, and still had not lost their spirit. His eyes were full of shock!

Everyone's vision focused on.....that head.

Geshui's mean and ferocious expression still remained. His eyes stared at the boss, and soon filled with terror. His adam's apple constantly rolled up and down, and his mouth violently twitched. In the end, he appeared entirely insane, and he screamed an ear-piercing cry: "Ah!"

Poof!

Elder Hao Yue's headless body still stood there without collapsing. Following the wake of Geshui's shriek, hot blood

sprayed out like a fountain!

Princess Bao Lian's pupils exploded with an intense vitality. She loudly shouted: "Kill!"

The pre-prepared Wang Court horsemen rose in an instant. They lifted tables, pulled out swords, and slashed towards predetermined targets.

Plop!

Plop!

The sound of sharp swords cutting into bodies was terrifying.

Dozens of loyal Hao Yue Clansmen were chopped down in an instant, dropped in a pool of blood.

Elder Hao Yue's two bodyguards uttered an inhuman howl. They directly rushed towards Chu Mo.

"Little animal.....I will cut you to pieces!"

Weng!

The air filled with an incomparably deep sound.

Snap!

A bulky chain smashed onto a bodyguard's head that was rushing at Chu Mo

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The terrifying sound of shattering bones. The close body guard of Elder Hao Yue.....a warrior that had broken through the Yuan Closure. His head was split right open!

Like smashing a watermelon!

White and red.....flowed on the earth.

The other guard rushing at Chu Mo was struck by the unsightly scene in that instant. He unconsciously closed his eyes.....but they would never open again!

His head flew far away like Elder Hao Yue's.....then it crashed into the ground.

The two strongest Yuan Closure warriors of the Hao Yue Clan. They guarded Elder Hao Yue their whole lives!

But this slaughter could not be stopped.

Princess Bao Lian had made a list of Hao Yue clansmen that were diehard followers of Elder Hao Yue over the years.

These people could not have any possibility to struggle. Leaving them behind is the same as leaving a disastrous gang. They could bring enormous trouble at any time.

“Elder Died!”

“Elder has been killed!”

“Heavens.....how could this happen? Elder died, quickly flee!”

The lively grassland banquet changed in an instant. It became an Asura underworld.

The bonfire was still roaring. The joyous bustle was replaced by soaring blood and ice-cold murder.

It is unknown how long the Wang Court Horsemen restrained an accumulated inner-flame. They faced the Hao Yue clansmen with no mercy.

The dust was basically settled by the time the Hao Yue clansmen came to their senses!

The Hao Yue clansmen had prepared well for the ambush, but they were like a headless dragon because their leader died. They

didn't know what to do. They were strictly trained soldiers. Following commands is the most basic principle.

They didn't dare act rashly without orders!

None of the Hao Yue clansmen had the qualifications, not even the oldest son Gemu!

This was because Hao Yue was afraid of his own sons conspiring together, so he had a death grip on the military power. He never thought it would become a most ironic dark joke!

But even if Gemu could take over military authority, it was to no avail. Princess Bao Lian already had the whole banquet in the palm of her hand.

From the instant Elder Hao Yue's head went flying, Pang Zhongyuan was only stunned a slight moment, then he started to implement troop deployments.

These orders included capturing the three brothers: Geshui, Gewen, and Gemu.

As well as Ge Erzha!

The traitor that should die. Everyone extremely hated him.

Ge Erzha didn't resist when they captured him. He was beside

himself. Perhaps this attack was too violent!

He hid his identity all these years, living two different lives. He finally revealed his identity.....and was uncovered as the victor.

Ge Erzha was extremely pleased with himself, and overjoyed!

He had prepared to reap the victor's rewards, then it was like he was drenched in cold water.

This feeling would really cause people to sob.

The chaos, Killing, and bloody scene continued for more than an hour. The loyal Hao Yue clansmen were nearly all slaughtered. But the Hao Yue clan still had at least ten thousand soldiers and officers stationed in various places.

If these men cannot be captured right away, then they will inevitably become a grassland scourge!

After all, these men were all elites. They will become a terrifying power once they become bandits, or throw in with brothers Jin and Yin.

Princess Bao Lian's several years of accumulated experience was displayed at this time. She was like a battle-hardened general. She methodically began to deploy forces. The dispatched personnel carried her personal token. They began traveling around to request surrender.

In the end, there were only five thousand of the Hao Yue clansmen remaining. They already gathered up to defend the women and children of the Hao Yue clan, but they had no intention of attacking.

Elder Hao Yue already died, and their hearts were full of loss. They didn't know what to do for a time. The only thing remaining was instinct. They all gathered together, and silently held each other next to the fire for warmth.

The weather wasn't cold, but they.....yet felt ice-cold!

“Good, stop!”

Princess Bao Lian finally gave the command, and the Wang Court horsemen stopped killing.

The air was saturated with a dense bloody taste. Weeping could be heard far away. The slaughter had stopped, but the tense mood had not yet faded. The large majority had the feeling of being overwhelmed.

This was Chu Mo's first time experiencing this type of situation. He silently looked at the sight and thought: 'No wonder grandfather said, there is no righteous war in the world apart from defending home and country from foreign attack! Even if there are abundant reasons, but in the core.....it is all the same.'

A power struggle!

Fighting over interests!

Fighting over power!

Fighting over resources!

This contest is so bloody!

And so vile!

So.....bare!

Elder Hao Yue certainly wasn't a good man. His deeds and actions naturally deserved death.

But the warriors of the Hao Yue clan.....should they all truly deserve death?

Chu Mo shook his head with a bitter smile and thought: 'Compassion is not for soldiers! Looks like.....I still need discipline.'

Chu Mo really didn't want war to spread to his home after experiencing this. He thought: 'If it is all evil, then I will bear responsibility! Even if I become infamous, I will not hesitate!

War.....gives people trauma. It is truly too dreadful!’

I don’t regret the price of keeping war outside the country!

“Elder Hao Yue.....deserved to die!” Princess Bao Lian stood there. Her whole person carried an intense aura. People couldn’t help but avoid her eyes.

Princess Nuo Yi lead along brother Lee, and they stood beside princess Bao Lian. Princess Nuo Yi continuously stared at Chu Mo. Her eyes surged with love, and would quickly overflow. They had gone through life and death. She absolutely didn’t want to hide her feelings towards Chu Mo.

She wanted to rush into Chu Mo’s embrace, hug him, and cry aloud, even if the situation wasn’t fitting.

Then confess her love for him! Because she didn’t know any way to express her excitement apart from this.

A life unexpectedly rescued from danger!

These words seemed to describe her current situation. Furthermore, this ‘life’ was yet given to her by this heroic youth.

Chu Mo yet listened to princess Bao Lian’s words.

“He killed the king and queen!”

“He killed his own first wife!”

“He poisoned far too many people!”

“All the subordinates that dissented!”

“All the innocents that stood in the way of his development, yet never provoked him!”

“The most important, you all saw. He rebelled against the grassland’s Wang Court, and wanted to be king!”

“His schemes were laid bare under the sun!”

“Therefore.....he deserved death!”

“I am his wife, but I am a Wang Court princess!”

“I want to bring justice for you all!”

“I want to extend this justice to you all!”

“Any child of the grasslands would feel shame if they acted like him!”

“I have too much evidence against him in my hands. Soon, I will make it known one by one! I will prove to you, I, Bao Lian..... everything I said is true!”

It was silent all around, even the repressed cries stopped.

A figure walked out of the darkness at this time. A group of Wang Court horsemen immediately moved towards him.

Princess Bao Lian waved a hand: “Let him come!”

A man in a smashed helmet came out of the darkness. He seemed not to care about the Wang Court horsemen at his sides. He came before princess Bao Lian and knelt on a single knee: “Subordinate Teng Song meets the princess!”

“Teng Song, I know you. Stand up and speak.” Princess Bao Lian’s held a soft manner of speaking.

This Teng Seng was a mid-level person of the Hao Yue clan, but he was one of the few military officers in the Hao Yue clan that was loyal to the Wang Court. He had publicly opposed several of Elder Hao Yue’s methods. He really didn’t agree with Elder Hao Yue’s schemes.

This is also the reason why Teng Seng never entered into the core of the Hao Yue clan, even though he was deserving. He always stood at the gate, but never entered the center. But life is strange. No one ever thought the ruthless character of the grasslands would

so easily lose his life.

And in his most proudest moment!

Teng Song did not stand up. He knelt there, lifted his head, and looked at princess Bao Lian: “Subordinate wants to know. How will princess treat the officers and soldiers of the Hao Yue clan, as well as their families.”

This is an upright man!

Chu Mo looked from the side and thought: ‘An ordinary person would resist to the end. They would rather die than submit. Or, they would quickly bend the knee. They would use flattery to get what they want and show loyalty.’

This person asked the question in a way that showed his inner selfishness, even if.....it absolutely was not much!

Princess Bao Lian didn't hesitate: “Exile the family members of the dead!”

“Gemu, Gewen, and Geshui have committed unforgivable sins. They will be executed!”

“The others may vow loyalty to the Wang Court. They will not be investigated after swearing an oath!”

Princess Bao Lian had just finished speaking. Teng Song didn't have time to speak before Geshui collapsed to the ground, begging for mercy: "Mother.....don't kill your child. Child admits his wrongs.....child admits his wrongs! Don't kill me!"

"Trash!" The often silent Gewen struggled, ruthlessly kicked Geshui, and yelled: "Father's face.....has been completely lost by you!"

Geshui weeped: "Losing face is better than losing your life. I don't want to die!"

Chapter 48: Handsome Fool

The oldest brother Gemu ruthlessly stared at his disowned little brother. He scolded: “A disgrace! Winners become royalty, and losers become bandits. Look at your cowardly manner! I want to personally kill you!”

Gemu spoke with red eyes. He looked at princess Bao Lian: “Slut, I disagreed father should marry you back then. I knew back then you were a woman who didn’t know her place! Obviously you married my father, but didn’t behave like a woman. You didn’t do the things a woman should do! You fooled around with outside men. My father’s heart is soft. He never killed you. If it were me, I would have cut you a long time ago! Today’s events would have never happened!”

Princess Bao Lian’s shapely eyebrows shot up straight. Her beautiful face became deadly white. Without waiting to speak, Nuo Yi became enraged at her side. Nuo Yi rushed to Gemu and slapped him across the face like a mad little lion: “Even now you still dare slander? Do you not know that your own mother was poisoned by your father!”

“So what?” Ge Mu’s face didn’t change: “I already knew!”

“No matter, it can only be said.....you are the same as your father, an animal!” Nuo Yi looked at Gemu with rage. She personally wished to kill this scum: “My aunt.....also took the poison passed down by your ancestors! As well as my father and mother. They were all killed by your father!”

“Your father is scum below the beasts! Degenerate!”

Princess Bao Lian sucked in a deep breath, then duly said: “Nothing good to say, cut off his head!”

Gemu couldn’t help but roar to the heavens: “Why! Why! I’m not reconciled!”

Gewen closed his eyes, and didn’t say a word.

“Don’t.....don’t kill me.....don’t kill me ah! Mother.....I beg you.....don’t kill me!” Geshui bawling cries gradually grew father away.

The far away cries of Geshui came to a screeching halt a short time later.

Soon after, the Wang Court horsemen came back with three bloody dripping heads and gave a report. They were precisely the heads of Gemu, Gewen, and Geshui.

The whole Hao Yue clan was in the doldrums. The prior repressed cries completely faded away.

Chu Mo looked at the expressionless princess Bao Lian and thought: ‘These are true iron-blooded methods. This nature.....is about the same as my grandfather. Truly a formidable person. With here here, I reckon Da Qi will be unable to snatch the grasslands.

Princess Bao Lian didn't look at the three heads. She waved her hand and said: "Bury them as you please."

Nuo Yi's face revealed an unbearable expression. She is still a young girl in the end. But she didn't block Bao Lian's ideas.

Princess Bao Lian gently looked at Nuo Yi, and then looked at the crowd. She softly said: "Don't think me savage. If Elder Hao Yue had not died, then we would be the dead ones! He would have no mercy or pity for any of us."

"Soon after he would command a large force, and slaughter his way to the Wang Court. At that time, none of our Wang Court brethren, our parents, our relatives, our friends.....not a one would be left alive!"

"He had continually done these things over the years. You all know this yourselves!"

Han Song still knelt there. He said in a deep voice: "Wise princess, this evil person.....used subordinates to do his work!"

Princess Bao Lian shook her head. He said to Han Song: "Han Song, you are very good. An upright person and generous man. Do not worry. Bao Lian will do what she says. I now represent princess Nuo Yi. I officially appoint you as a Wang Court horseman!"

Teng Song was startled, and his face appeared overjoyed. Generous and fair doesn't mean a person lacks ambition. It doesn't represent that they don't want progress.

Who could have foreseen the circumstances today. Nuo Yi now had a very high chance of becoming this grassland's queen!

The future prospects are unlimited for those at her side!

Becoming the queen's horsemen.....that is enough to bring honor to the ancestors!

Teng Song deeply bowed his head: "Subordinate is extremely honored to become princess Nuo Yi's horseman. I am willing to use my life to ensure the princess's safety! I swear on my ancestors..... I will never betray the princess!"

"So long as you loyally follow the princess, and wait until the day she becomes queen, you all.....will stand at the highest level on the grasslands!"

"You all will become the most glorified group of people!" Princess Bao Lian looked at Teng Song: "Now your mission is to make reparations. Appease those that need to be appeased. Exile those that need to be exiled. Incorporate troops that should be incorporated.....I give you the power to act first then report later!"

Teng Song's eyes flashed brilliant rays of light. He thanked once again, and then strode out.

Chu Mo calmly watched everything. He admired princess Bao Lian's methods even more.

It appears Teng Song took the initiative to defect. It was not essential to be this generous.

But in reality, Teng Song required a lot of courage in that moment. He certainly was uneasy inside, furthermore, he may not necessarily be truly prepared to pledge loyalty to the two princesses.

Because no matter how resentful he is to Elder Hao Yue, Teng Song is still a Hao Yue clansmen.

But princess Bao Lian only used a few words to remove the nervousness and unease of Teng Song.

She killed the three sons of Elder Hao Yue in front of his face. Only the people involved can feel this kind of deterrence.

Soon after, she made him a member of the Wang Court. She showed graciousness to Teng Song. He was put in an important position even though they surrendered to the enemy general. There is no need to mention the graciousness Teng Song feels.

Princess Bao Lian had reached the pinnacle of using incentives and benefits!

Even more important is the matter at the end!

Princess Bao Lian gave Teng Song authority to act first then report later! This.....is the true killer!

Not only did she express that she is broad-minded to everyone, but she has a good attitude and trust to those that surrender. And it also gives a strong signal to Teng Song!

“Those that disobey you, those hidden loyal Hao Yue classmen.....they will be handled by you!”

Princess Bao Lian had her own intelligence gathering network, but it couldn't be compared to an insider like Teng Song. She did this to give Teng Song a chance to root out dissidents. Upper authorities must know how to decentralize power to accomplish great things.

Do not hesitate when one should give benefits!

Chu Mo stood there with a tinge of emotion. Pang Zhongyuan came to his side, and his face carried an appreciative expression. He cupped his fists and bowed: “This time, we fully relied on noble son Lin to turn the tide. Otherwise, I'm afraid we.....”

Chu Mo lightly smiled, then said: “Mister Pang is too courteous. I said before, I did these things for my motherland. At the same time, you all are also my friends. Is that not right?”

Pang Zhonguan vigorously nodded: “Of course!”

“Between friends, there is no need to speak so courteously.” Chu Mo said.

“Ha ha, good. I will remember this! In the future, if noble son Lin needs Pang, then I am bound by duty!” Pang Zhongyuan emotionally said.

Few people knew how high Pang Zhongyuan’s place was in the grasslands! Perhaps he didn’t have a distinguished reputation, but in the future, there will not be many in a higher status than Pang Zhongyuan in these grasslands!

Therefore, his promise was not much shorter than the promise of princess Bao Lian or Nuo Yi.

Chu Mo faced Pang Zhongyuan and bowed. He spoke no more.

“Noble son, noble son, the thing you promised me?”

A heavy iron chain sound followed the voice.

Clang.....clang!

Gao Da foolishly dragged the heavy iron chains and walked to Chu Mo. There was a simple and honest look to him.

But Chu Mo yet knew, this guy is not the least bit foolish!

If one were to give awards based on merits for today's events, Chu Mo felt this giant should get first prize! Chu Mo.....would line up behind this man. It would have been impossible for Chu Mo to approach elder Hao Yue had it not been for his toss.

Because Elder Hao Yue already knew Chu Mo's true strength from Ge Erzha. How could that evil tyrant let Chu Mo approach him?

Elder Hao Yue is wily, yet he overlooked one important area. He never predicted that his most controlled trump card could be turned in a short time by Chu Mo. This near perfect killer.

If Elder Hao Yue had another chance. He wouldn't hesitate to send a large force to extinguish everyone at the first opportunity. This includes princess Bao Lian and all her people.

Chu Mo smiled at the black iron tower giant before him: "I will naturally do the things I promised. Now, I will first set you free!"

Without waiting for the giant to react, a flash of light appeared. It broke open the iron chains binding the hands and feet of the giant.

"The iron cut like mud!"

"Terrifying sword skill!"

Pang Zhongyuan couldn't help but shriek. He looked towards Chu Mo with even more awe.

One slash cutting a man's head isn't too strange, but one slash cutting open hard iron chains.....thicker than a man's arms, it's just too terrifying!

This youngster brought them pleasant surprises and shocks. It is honestly too much.....and too grand!

The giant stared foolishly at his broken chains. Suddenly tears fell down, and he mumbled: "Have I regained my freedom at last? Hateful shameless Elder Hao Yue poisoned me, and held me captive ten years! He never let me eat my fill. He tormented me in every possible way! If it wasn't for my mind.....giving birth to obsession. I'm afraid I would have died there a long time ago!"

Rumble!

The black iron tower giant knelt down before Chu Mo. It was like a small mountain piled before Chu Mo.

"Noble son, I, [Gao Yingjun](#), this life.....is yours!"

"Cough.....Gao.....it's Gao! Yingjun?.....cough cough, good name! Your father and mother truly had vision!" This name made the corners of Chu Mo's mouth pull severely. He was completely speechless.

[TL: The giant's name is '高英俊'. It means 'Tall Handsome'. They called him '高大' before which was his nickname. It just meant big or tall.]

This jumbo wanted to follow him. He was tempted to believe it wasn't true. With a giant like this guy at his side, he was afraid anyone that wanted to hit him would have to carefully consider. Would they be spanked by this giant?

But Chu Mo also thought about how he didn't use his real name here! He didn't want to let people know his true identity.

Otherwise, Chu Mo had the identity of a general's son. He dug a pit for Da Qi in the grasslands, and burned down the plans Da Qi had painfully laid over several years. Hell would freeze over before they left it at that.

Da Qi would absolutely use this situation to give Da Xia pressure. This situation would certainly give his grandfather trouble in the future.

Chu Mo is a good child. He doesn't want to give his family trouble.

“Stand up. I saved you, and you also helped me. In fact, there is no debt between us.” Chu Mo had deliberated a moment and said. He looked at the remaining iron chains still bound to Gao Yingjun, then said: “I will completely break off these iron chains for you! I reckon for the two chains through your shoulder blades.....you'll want to pull them out yourself.”

Who knows why, but Gao Yingjun shook his head in refusal: “Let it be, they have been in my flesh for a long time, and become a part of my body. I have already gotten used to them on my body. They no longer affect my movements. They do not bind my hands.”

“You only need to break the chains off my ankles. I have trouble walking with chains on my ankles. The others.....leave them there.”

“The chains through your shoulder blades.....you also don’t want out? Too painful!” Chu Mo couldn’t help but wrinkle his brow as he looked at the crude black iron chains passing through Gao Yingjun’s shoulders.

Gao Yingjun laughed: “No problem noble son. A little pain lets me feel.....I’m still alive.”

Chu Mo looked confoundedly at the simple Gao Yingjun. A trace of sadness flashed in the black iron giant’s eyes. Chu Mo thought inside: ‘This big guy like a small mountain. I’m afraid he also has a story!’

Chapter 49: Enormous Chowhound

Everyone temporarily stayed at the Hao Yue clan for several days.

Princess Bao Lian's methods were truly brilliant.

Thunder and rain, incentives and penalties, practically no effort wasted, the whole Hao Yue Clan was absorbed. Of course, this was largely related to Elder Hao Yue and his three sons dying.

A dragon without a head, the remaining people basically had no courage to lift their heads to princess Bao Lian.

Not to mention that princess Bao Lian laid bare all of Elder Hao Yue's offenses.

Several of the Hao Yue clansmen already knew about the offenses, but they were silently resentful. There was no doubt about the authenticity!

In addition, there was even more they did not know!

Each accusation nailed the ambitious and ruthless elder Hao Yue with disgrace.

They would probably never turn.

After a time, the whole Hao Yue clan denounced Elder Hao Yue.

Among those, it is unknown how many wanted to pledge loyalty to princess Bao Lian and form troops, and how many wanted to express their innermost rage.

The whole Hao Yue clan had a brand new look after seven or eight days!

The clan's flag was also changed into the Wang Court flag!

Here, they laid out the second Wang Court!

Possessing the Wang Court Seal.....the genuine Wang Court!

The large majority of troops that princess Bao Lian sent out to placate the Hao Yue soldiers came back with good news. Practically all the military officers agreed to follow princess Bao Lian's command upon seeing her personal token.

But there were those who acted recklessly. One officer ordered the Wang Court messenger be killed upon seeing princess Bao Lian's personal keepsake.

The Wang Court horsemen saw the potential danger and fled. He ended up with four arrows on his body. It is unknown if the archers purposely missed his head, or if their aim wasn't good enough. But he still managed to make it back alive.

Princess Bao Lian immediately gave the command. She ordered the officers that had already sworn allegiance to go forth, encircle,

and annihilate.

This battle didn't have the slightest bit of suspense.....because before the main force arrived, the officer that revolted was beheaded by his own subordinates. He was hung up on the flagpole, and they waited for the large army to come take over.

One crisis painlessly eliminated.

Princess Bao Lian's renown and prestige is evident throughout the grasslands!

After victory comes the harvest.

The Hao Yue clan's degree of wealth exceeded Chu Mo's imagination. The clan's wealth had accumulated over the years, and it had already reached an astronomical number. To say it is enough wealth to oppose a country would not be an exaggeration. They were the funds Elder Hao Yue acquired to establish a country. Now it all belonged to princess Nuo Yi and her followers.

There was other wealth beyond words. The Yuan stone reserves left Chu Mo stupefied. Chu Mo never would have thought a small country tribe in the secular world would have so many Yuan stones before this. Chu Mo wouldn't believe other people if they told him.

This is an astonishing wealth!

But princess Bao Lian gave ownership to Chu Mo without even

batting an eye.

Chu Mo felt embarrassed taking all of the Yuan Stones. He finally took half after some encouragement from princess Bao Lian. The remaining half could be used for the Wang Court to someday train Yuan power warriors.

In fact princess Bao Lian wasn't satisfied with this result. She really wanted Chu Mo to take everything!

Because she could have a greater grasp over Chu Mo like this!

Don't look at that fact she uses all kinds of severe methods to face the grasslands, daring to kill and cut down. She is completely a female hero. But facing a grand benefactor like Chu Mo, these methods are completely useless. And she has no way to influence him.

She didn't know how many times she used Pang Zhongyuan to search Chu Mo's plans over the past several days. But even with a fellow Da Xia countryman, Chu Mo didn't didn't disclose the tiniest intention.

He only said that his learning through experience has concluded, and he will return to master's school to continue training.

Chu Mo thought of all the experiences on the grasslands as a memory, and a practical experience. Because his heart was not in this place.

Nuo Yi seldom came to see Chu Mo these several days. It wasn't that she didn't want to, but rather she had no time. The only way she could stand is by being the Wang Court princess, and becoming symbolic leader of the masses. Nuo Yi had no means of escape, and no possibility to escape!

This is her responsibility!

She was so busy that she had no time to herself. Chu Mo was leisurely enjoying himself, he brought the giant Gao Yingjun for a stroll to search for ingredients every day. Because he promised to cure Gao Yingjun's poison.

The Hao Yue clan had large quantities of medicinal ingredients stored, but they were short on a few kinds. Therefore Chu Mo brought Gao Yingjun along to search for himself.

The name Gao Yingjun completely matched the big guy. Chu Mo somewhat scratched his head.

This giant statured man had endless power, possessed Natural Divine power, and unequaled astonishing military power.

But at the same time, his food consumption.....was also absolutely shocking!

The day Elder Hao Yue was killed and the dust was settled, Gao Yingjun was always crying out for food. Chu Mo lead him to the

kitchen of the Hao Yue clan. There was an enormous amount of various foods because the Hao Yue clan prepared a feast that day. The food quantity was enough for over a hundred men to eat a round.

In the end.....under Chu Mo's watchful eye, the greater half of the food was eaten by this sole giant! It was just short of scaring Chu Mo to death.

Chu Mo had to continuously remind Gao Yingjun: "Eat a little slower.....don't burst open. You haven't eaten your fill for a long time.....don't eat that much all at once!"

Gao Yingjun just ate and talked to Chu Mo at the same time: "Don't worry noble son. I have an idea, I'm not stupid. I have read books before. Even now I'm only a little over half full, that's it. Just let me eat, I'm hungry."

Chu Mo was speechless. He looked on helplessly as the giant binge ate.

Gao Yingjun's food consumption became the talk of the whole Hao Yue clan for the next several days.

Elder Hao Yue never let Gao Yingjun eat his fill before now. He only fed him enough food for two or three normal people. It made this giant manage to live on, that's it.

Now he was unleashed, and he shocked everyone.

But it wasn't bad. Elder Hao Yue left behind a large amount of wealth. Princess Bao Lian and the others weren't worried about being able to provide food for the giant.

Gao Yingjun's had a much larger quantity of poison than princess Bao Lian. Elder Hao Yue wanted to continuously control the giant, and never wanted to kill him. So Chu Mo took the lead in searching for ingredients after several days.

Chu Mo places all the ingredients on the green stone in the jade space. Chu Mo watched. The large green stone sucked in everything, then after a moment, five medicine pills appeared on the large green stone.

This speed.....simply unheard of!

Chu Mo remained puzzled after much thought. He couldn't understand how the large green stone turned the ingredients directly into medicine pills.

Chu Mo used this opportunity to help princess Bao Lian. Chu Mo brought out Gao Yingjun to first give him a pill as an experiment.

"First eat one and see how it is, but don't eat too many....." Chu Mo was no pill doctor after all. He also didn't know how many pills it would take to cure someone the size of Gao Yingjun. He made him first eat one as an experiment. Chu Mo could use the jade at any time to determine Gao Yingjun's status.

“I know.” Gao Yingjun sat there. He was still fifty percent taller than Chu Mo. Gao extended out a hand for Chu Mo to place the medicine pill inside.

The pill could not be considered small, but it was a little grain of rice in Gao Yingjun’s palm.

Gao Yingjun swallowed the pill soon after. One small and one large person sat there waiting.

“Any feeling? Chu Mo asked Gao Yingjun after a long time.

“No feeling.” Gao Yingjun shook his head.

Chu Mo asked again after a moment: “Do you feel anything?”

Gao Yingjun shook his head once again and said: “Did I not take enough? I’m so huge. How about.....i try taking them all?”

“Cough.....wait a little bit!” This isn’t a Yuan pill that increases Yuan power after all. He could eat one too many, and there’s a chance the poison could become overactive.

Just when Chu Mo was about to ask the third time, that large dark face suddenly became tight. He appeared to be in some pain.

Chu Mo was startled, and was just about to speak.

Only Gao Yingjun soared up.....with an agility that completely didn't match his stature. Then he took a large step and ran out far away.

Crash.....crash.....crash!

The sounds of the chains striking each other continuously made noise.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

A heavy sound rang out with each step Gao Yingjun took. It seemed he ran a thousand feet in the blink of an eye. He would soon disappear from Chu Mo's line of sight.

"Hey.....what are you doing running so fast?" Chu Mo called out from behind.

"Bad tummy!" A huge sound like thunder came from far away.

"....." Chu Mo's mouth twitched, and he silently criticized: 'Such a large person saying bad tummy.....did the pit truly fill up?'

Chu Mo didn't know whether or not Gao Yingjun's pit actually filled up. He also didn't want to know. Anyways, the first words coming from this guy, the whole day, from morning till night, after sunset, and after returning from picking ingredients was

simply ‘I’m hungry’.

“Noble son, I’m starving, let’s go eat a meal!”

“.....” Chu Mo couldn’t help but give a haughty look to him:
“You good?”

“Hey hey, good! Noble son’s medicine is really effective! Only it is a little overbearing. I was just short of throwing up to death..... fortunately noble son persisted. If I ate two or three pills, it probably would have been tragic.” Gao Yingjun laughed, his whole face happy: “So now my stomach is empty, I’m starving to death!”

Chu Mo was sincerely without words for this big guy. After throwing up everything he wants to eat.....how can he say everything is good.

The two walked back, and Gao Yingjun suddenly said: “Noble son, do you want to leave?”

Chu Mo looked at him somewhat confounded. He could only see the two tree sized legs. He wanted to look at his face, but Gao had an upturned neck.

“How did you know?”

Gao Yingjun simply laughed: “Seems like, I have seen it all. That little Wang Court princess.....she clearly fancies you. But you are neither hot nor cold to her. This is a clear sign you don’t want to

stay here long!”

“Yes, I have too many restraints on my heart. I cannot stay here.” Chu Mo softly said. His young heart was a little melancholy when he thought of Nuo Yi’s beautiful touching face, and her crazy resentful expression.

But he couldn’t stay here, Nuo Yi.....also could not leave here!

Even more, Chu Mo’s innermost being had already been branded with the beautiful image of a woman.

“Ah, noble son leaves, then I will follow, but noble son must take care of the food!” Gao Yingjun’s face earnestly lowered and looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo looked like he didn’t know what on earth happened: “You stay here, isn’t that good? At least you won’t have to worry about eating and drinking. I believe princess Nuo Yi and Bao Lian will be very good to you!”

“I will quit!” Gao Yingjun stared at his two big eyes that were larger than a cow’s, and he spoke tongue in cheek: “Is Noble son avoiding me because I eat too much? How about later on I.....eat a little less?”

Chapter 50: One Exception

Chu Mo looked at Gao Yingjun with a speechless expression, then he said: “I hold nothing against how much you eat. I used a different name here. I didn’t want others to know my true identity. And you are too eye-catching. If you followed me, other people would certainly discover. Can you understand my meaning?”

Gao Yingjun scratched his head and said: “I understand. My physique.....is indeed too big and mighty. Everyone points when I walk. But...but I want to follow noble son. I don’t want to stay in the grasslands!”

Gao Yingjun spoke with a face of longing: “I heard, cities in Da Qi and Da Xia are busting. I want to experience them for my mother.....”

“Your mother?” Chu Mo looked at Gao Yingjun: “Tell me.”

Gao Yingjun didn’t speak. The giant frame crashed iron chains as he walked in the grasslands. It was like a silent giant beast. Very few knew that there was a sensitive and soft heart inside this giant beast’s body.

He softly said after a long time: “My mother ah.....she is the most beautiful, gentle, and kind woman in the world! She comes from Da Xia. She was traveling with my grandparent’s caravan, and they encountered bandits in the grasslands. Those bandits should die. They not only took all the goods, but they also killed all

the men and snatched all the women.

“That group of bandits were Elder Hao Yue’s men. My mother was extremely beautiful, so those bandits gave my mother to that animal Elder Hao Yue.”

“Elder Hao Yue.....after he had his way with her, he gave her medicine so she couldn’t give birth. Then he passed her off to a subordinate.”

Chu Mo couldn’t help but softly sigh. He wanted to comfort Gao Yingjun, but he didn’t know what to say.

“Later on, my mother spent her days with that man. He wasn’t bad to my mother. But his temperament wasn’t good because my mother couldn’t have kids due to the medicine. So the man would beat my mother after drinking much wine. One day my mother could no longer bear it. She escaped, and she found me in the grasslands.”

“You are an orphan?” Chu Mo looked confounded at Gao Yingjun.

Gao Yingjun nodded, then said: “Ah, I also don’t know who my father is. She said I was wrapped in a blanket when she found me. There was nothing else.”

“Probably.....I’ve been ugly since birth, so I was discarded.....”

Gao Yingjun's face revealed a lonesome color.

Chu Mo shook his head: "You aren't ugly. You are a little dark, but you have thick eyebrows and big eyes. You would be considered handsome if you were a normal sized person."

"Ha ha, my mother said the same. So she gave me the name Yingjun." Gao Yingjun scratched his head and embarrassingly smiled.

"Then, later on? How did you become like this?" Chu Mo asked.

Gao Yingjun sighed, and the space between his brows became gloomy. His pupils flashed ice-cold rays of light, and he coldly said: "That animal Elder Hao Yue!"

"I was completely different from normal children since I was young. I ate an especially large amount of food and grew very fast. My mother thought it was normal in the beginning, but she quickly discovered it wasn't the least bit normal."

Gao Yingjun bitterly smiled: "I could lift stones that weigh more than a hundred and twenty pounds when I was three. I had an adult's height when I was five. My strength was even larger than theirs.....many adults wrestled with me. None were my match!"

"My mother was afraid I would provoke disaster if this continued. She taught me to read books, and she desired I could become a person of knowledge and rationality.....not a barbarian

controlled by power!”

Chu Mo said: “You mother is very wise!”

“Yes, very wise, and also mighty. She taught me to not fill my heart with hatred. Otherwise hatred will blind me, and I will lose my reason.” Gao Yingjun’s eyes became gentle when he mentioned his mother: “Those short days were the happiest moments of my life.”

“It’s a pity, it wasn’t long. The man my mother found always thought I was a monster. I was too strong, grew too fast, and ate too much. Furthermore.....because I was around, he didn’t dare hit my mother. I wouldn’t allow it!”

“Therefore, he told my situation to the animal Elder Hao Yue. That old animal thought if he could put me on the battlefield, then it would produce a result never seen before. So he sent men to find me.”

“I was eight at the time. My mother didn’t agree because she knew Elder Hao Yue killed her parents. He is the murderer that made her fall into this state. Now he wanted to harm me, and of course she didn’t agree. As a result, Elder Hao Yue examined my situation, and he personally slashed my mother’s head.....”

Gao Yingjun’s huge eyes shed tears as he spoke this: “My mother clutched Elder Hao Yue’s clothes and didn’t let go, even at death!”

Chu Mo sighed: “No wonder you agreed so quickly when I said I wanted to kill Elder Hao Yue. It was because of this?”

“Yes, my mother said not to let my heart fill with hate. But I couldn’t do it!” Gao Yingjun sobbed: “I hate that animal, hate he killed my mother. I hated not being able to shred him to pieces!”

“That old thing also knew I hated him. He used huge iron chains and pierced them through my shoulders since the beginning. He binded my movements and tortured me every day. He treated me as an animal, and made me completely submit to him.”

“I still sought revenge, so I only pretended to follow orders. But that old thing is too wary. He always had me locked up over the past several years. He had no choice when noble son came. He let me come deal with you, and he promised a full meal.”

Chu Mo’s mouth twitched, and he muttered: “I’m that cheap.....” He looked at Gao Yingjun: “You are eighteen now?”

Gao Yingjun spoke: “Nineteen, that old thing locked me up eleven years! But he could not extinguish my hate for him. In fact, I planned to help you on that day, even if you didn’t say you could cure me. Because that was my best opportunity!

Gao Yingjun smiled as he spoke: “My mother was right. Extreme bitterness.....naturally leads to sweetness. The heavens didn’t discard me. They let me meet noble son.”

Chu Mo somewhat shyly smiled: “In fact, I’m much younger than you. I am still several moons away from fourteen!”

Gao Yingjun earnestly said: “My mother said, ambition doesn’t belong to a person’s age. People without ambition are all the same age.”

“Your mother is indeed awesome, it’s a pity.....” Chu Mo could tell. This giant-sized man held respect and regret for his mother that no one could replace.

At the same time, Chu Mo held feelings of admiration for the woman that passed away eleven years ago. She forcefully molded this giant with brains in a few short years. This is something that not anyone could do. It is not the least bit excessive to use the word ‘mighty’ to describe her.

“So noble son, that animal Elder Hao Yue has already died. My mother’s enemy has already been avenged. This grassland holds nothing for me anymore. I do not wish to stay here.” Gao Yingjun honestly looked at Chu Mo and said: “Noble son feels I am a target that is too eye-catching. Then take me to a place where I can hide. Don’t let other people see. I can hunt Yuan beasts even if you take me to the Da Xia forests. I can eat the meat, and then I’ll give noble son the skin and bones to make money. Noble son, would that be okay?”

Chu Mo looked at Gao Yingjun: “Do you purely want to leave the grasslands, or do you wish to follow me?”

“I wish to follow you!” Gao Yingjun roared without hesitation.

“Why?” Chu Mo couldn’t understand.

“I feel close to you noble son. You don’t avoid me, and you trust me. I don’t have anyone else close to me in the world. I’m a lonely and impoverished person.....” Gao Yingjun lowered his head: “Noble son is like a close relative to me.....although I am older, I will obey you!”

“You don’t want to find your real mother and father?” Chu Mo couldn’t help but ask. Chu Mo could understand this giant’s grieving state of mind.

“This, depends on luck. I feel the chance is small! I would ask them why they threw me away if I had the chance. I am ugly and eat a lot, but I can take care of myself!” Gao Yingjun felt wronged: “They gave birth to me, but they did not care for me. I want to ask why?”

Sigh!

Chu Mo suddenly let out a large breath. He wanted to pat Gao Yingjun’s shoulder, but Chu Mo discovered he was simply unable. He let out a breath, then patted Gao Yingjun’s thigh: “Since it is like this, then, you will come with me!”

“Wa, really? Awesome!” Gao Yingjun became so excited he almost jumped. He extended a hand and pulled Chu Mo’s arm. Chu

Mo was lifted into the air, and placed on the giant's shoulders. Gao Yingjun ran and shouted into the sunset: "I have family! Ha ha ha, I have a family at last!"

Chu Mo was shocked by him at first, but the corners of his mouth began to rise. His face revealed a smile.

"Family! A beautiful word!"

.....

"What? You want to go? Why?" Nuo Yi looked at Chu Mo startled. Those beautiful eyes carried incomparable loss: "Didn't you come to learn through experience? After such a time.....do you, really hate me?"

Nuo Yi's eyes turned red, and she sobbed.

Chu Mo helplessly said: "I came down the mountain to learn through experience. I have a limited amount of time. Master needs me. He wishes I come back before the new year."

"But now.....it is still more than a month until new years!" Nuo Yi nibbled her teeth. She gazed with starry eyes at Chu Mo: "Can

you not stay a little longer?”

Chu Mo bitterly smiled: “I truly cannot. Nuo Yi, you have your business, and I also have things I must do. You all have already integrated the Hao Yue clan. You have the greatest power in the grasslands. I believe you will quickly unify the grasslands with princess Bao Lian’s help. These beautiful grasslands will return to the hands of the Wang Court.”

“I believe, there is no great meaning for me to continue staying here.” Chu Mo looked at Nuo Yi and honestly said: “Furthermore, I am a cultivator. I shouldn’t participate too much in the secular world’s affairs.”

Chu Mo thought inside: ‘Sorry Nuo Yi, I don’t wish to lie to you. I’m afraid you would be grieved and distracted if I told you the truth. You have the grasslands to protect. I also have my home.’

‘You cannot leave the grasslands, and I.....wish to return to my home sooner or later.’

Nuo Yi was silent. Her beautiful eyes stared at Chu Mo for a long time until she finally asked: “Then.....will I have the chance to see you again?”

Chu Mo thought, then said: “Perhaps.....”

“Only perhaps?” Nuo Yi’s pupils flashed with despair, then she raised her head and warmly looked at Chu Mo: “Lin Bai, in fact.....

I really like you!”

“Cough.....” Chu Mo never thought Nuo Yi would be able to say these words to him. This is the first time Nuo Yi personally called his name. Chu Mo froze in that moment, not knowing what to do.

Nuo Yi gave a haughty look to Chu Mo: “He he, I am joking with you. I wanted to scare you! You have helped us so long, and now you wish to leave. I must host a grand party to send you off!”

Chu Mo shook his head and refused: “Let it be. You have much more important things to do right now. It is best I leave alone.”

Nuo Yi hesitated a moment. The despair in her eyes became even thicker. She nodded and softly said: “Good, then.....let me send you off when you go. Okay?”

Chu Mo thought a moment, then nodded.

“Then.....I will leave first. You.....rest well!” Nuo Yi said. She walked to Chu Mo, then softly gave him a kiss on the cheek. Nuo Yi blushed, then quickly ran off.

Chapter 51: Really Really Miss You

Chu Mo didn't give Nuo Yi a chance to see him off in the end.

He didn't like saying goodbyes.

Also, Chu Mo's current ability allowed him to easily leave without anyone knowing.

Nuo Yi woke up early in the morning the next day, and her heart carried endless sentiment. She discovered Chu Mo's room was empty when it came time to see him off.

Nuo Yi stood there alone, silently bawling.

A warm voice came from behind Nuo Yi: "So he has left?"

Nuo Yi softly nodded without turning around. Tears streamed down her face without stopping.

"Ah.....forget about him. He is a cultivator. He doesn't belong to our world." Princess Bao Lian slowly walked over as she spoke. She held Nuo Yi from behind, then softly said: "You still have many important things to do right now."

"I know....." Nuo Yi said: "But I can't forget him.....auntie, tell

me how. How can I forget someone?”

“This.....auntie doesn’t know. I am the same as you. I cannot forget someone once I like them. Perhaps this is the nature in our bloodline.” Princess Bao Lian seemed to speak absentmindedly.

“At least auntie is better off than me. Mister Pang is here. You can be together later on!” Nuo Yi said while in despair: “But as for me, I don’t even know where he cultivates..... Perhaps I will never have the opportunity to see him again in this life!”

“Auntie had to wait several years for this day. I had many years of hardship in the past. You aren’t thinking about it all. Even my life was almost lost.” Princess Bao Lian extended a hand and wiped the tears off Nuo Yi’s face. She softly said: “Moreover, I can only be with him in secret. I can never be with him in the open! Elder Hao Yue is still my husband in name even though he died. I can never officially be with him while having that title. I can never marry him. I have been too bitter to him in a sense.”

Nuo Yi turned around. She saw her aunt also had red eyes. Nuo Yi couldn’t help but press into her aunt’s embrace and cry. “Auntie, my heart hurts! It is difficult to bear.....why is it like this?”

“Cry, cry it out.....you will feel much better.”

“Auntie, will I see him again?”

“I feel so!”

“Why?”

“Because auntie senses that he is not a person without emotion. He helped cure my terrifying poison. He is a honest good person. Only.....he has things he must go do.”

“Then why didn’t he let me see him off?”

“He probably doesn’t like goodbyes.....”

“Then he should stay!”

“Ha ha, you are being childish. He certainly has extremely important things to do. Could you give up everything and leave the grasslands right now?”

“Of course I could! I don’t have the least bit desire to be queen!”

“What about your brother Lee? What about the millions of people in the grasslands? Don’t tell me that you could watch the Wang Court fall into decline? Could you watch the grasslands fall into war? Could you watch the people fall into an abyss of chaos?”

“I.....”

“Good, then listen to auntie. Wait until you have united the grasslands. Wait until you are ruler over thousands of miles. You will have unimaginable power at that time. This power can do many things! it can even find noble son Lin.”

“This is possible?”

“Listen to auntie. It is definitely possible!

.....

Chu Mo didn't have the opportunity to know the words between the two princesses.

Chu Mo was already hundreds of miles away from the Hao Yue clan.

Chu Mo didn't bring Gao Yingjun along. The two came to an agreement earlier. Gao Yingjun would leave after half a year and meet Chu Mo in Yellow Flame City.

One reason is because Chu Mo didn't want his identity revealed. The other reason is because he could help Nuo Yi.

This near invulnerable Giant would make it much easier for Nuo Yi to capture the grasslands.

Chu Mo's frame of mind already had a big change when he got back on the road.

He recollected the events that occurred over half a year ago. He left Yellow Flame City after suffering endless wrongs. Then he stepped out into the desolate icefield. Chu Mo wanted to enter the Immortal Sky wholeheartedly, and become an immortal's disciple.

He then encountered the Demon Lord. Chu Mo never thought this encounter would change his entire life track at that time.

Chu Mo now knew better. He would almost certainly be an Immortal Sky disciple if master had not sealed his abilities.

However, Chu Mo's fate would not have been good due to the character of Seventh Elder Zhao Hongzhi.

It is very likely he would have died in a training accident.

There can be accidents even if he is talented after all.

These events are not uncommon in sects.

Some are truly accidents that lead to geniuses dying. It causes people to feel disappointment. And some.....

So Chu Mo was very fortunate to have encountered master, and not become a disciple of the Immortal Sky.

Chu Mo also gained enormous rewards on the grasslands. Chu Mo destroyed the plans Da Qi arduously laid down over years as well.

Chu Mo gave the list containing all the Da Qi personnel to Pang Zhonyuan right before he left.

Chu Mo believed Pang Zhonyuan wouldn't require much time to take out all those people with his skills.

Chu Mo successfully put into practice the knowledge he had gained from war strategy books as a child. He had also gained the friendship of the Wang Court.

This friendship is indeed valuable!

Chu Mo believed that neither Nuo Yi nor Pang Zhonyuan would refuse a request when the day came.

Chu Mo didn't dare think that he could ever become a good friend of the Wang Court queen when he was growing up in the military.

'I don't know if the things I've done will be counted as a success.

Will my grandfather be proud?' Chu Mo thought.

The heaven is vast, and the green grass is endless.

Chu Mo's heart was not calm on the road home.

Chu Mo experienced countless things he had never experienced before over the past half year.

"I don't know if I'll have the opportunity to meet Qi Xiaoyu again....." Chu Mo's heart somewhat swelled when he thought about that beautiful blue dress girl.

She hadn't appeared ever since he obtained Murdering Heaven.

As if listening to his heart, a blue dress girl came to him from far away.

"Xiaoyu?" Chu Mo somewhat didn't believe his eyes. He said a little tongue-tied: "How can you always find me?"

"Of course, who do you think this girl is?" Her face carried a genuine smile as she looked at Chu Mo, and she spoke like a spoiled girl: "Play with me!"

"Cough....." Chu Mo looked at the beautiful maiden a little speechless: "You want to.....play?"

“No.....” Qi Xiaoyu plainly said: “Right now I only want you to follow me. Yes or no?”

“But.....I must return home!” Chu Mo scratched his head a little, but he was very happy to be with Qi Xiaoyu in reality.

“That’s no problem. We are going the same way!” Qi Xiaoyu sweetly smiled: “But I will have the final say in how we go.”

“.....” Chu Mo was completely confounded: “And what about your business?”

“We’ll talk about it later.” Qi Xiaoyu seemed to not want to bring the subject up again.

Chu Mo thought a moment, and then he nodded: “Good. I was just begging to become lonely traveling alone.”

Soon after, two people walked together on the road.

The grasslands don’t have any high-rank Yuan beasts. There are even very few ordinary Yuan beasts. This made the short journey extremely relaxed for the two.

Qi Xiaoyu didn’t speak about her mission. She said she wanted Chu Mo to follow her, but it really seemed like she was following Chu Mo back home.

Chu Mo encountered some questions while cultivating. Qi Xiaoyu carefully and patiently gave him instructions.

Her knowledge was broad and profound. Chu Mo was left speechless. It was like no problem could stop her.

The two watched the sunset next to the river. They walked together in the night winds. They watched the birds take flight in the early morning together.....one time they chased a goshawk's shadow for a hundred miles.

The journey was wildly happy. The two almost forgot everything outside themselves.

“Are you happy?” Chu Mo pulled on Qi Xiaoyu's hand at dusk. They were standing on a small hill and looking off into the distance. A densely forested mountain chain could be seen up ahead. The territory of Da Xia was just beyond those mountains.

“Happy!” Qi Xiaoyu was extremely happy. She snuggled into Chu Mo, and then she said: ” I am very happy with you! But, isn't the territory of Da Xia beyond those mountains?”

“How did you know? Have you been before?” Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu a little shocked.

“Big brother, will you miss me if I disappear one day?” Qi Xiaoyu didn't answer Chu Mo's question. She just leaned into Chu Mo and asked her own.

“Disappear? Why must you disappear?” Chu Mo had an ominous premonition. His brow wrinkled: “Don’t tell me you are disciple from a large sect, and you are gaining experience in the world?”

Chu Mo knew about top disciples from large sects, even though he is not one himself. They wander the secular world to gain experience.

They break off all ties with the world after the experience gathering concludes, and the disciples return to their master’s school. They step on the path in pursuit of higher realms.

They are indeed people of different worlds when compared to normal humans.

It is a complete break when they separate. Perhaps there is no meeting again in this life.

“Ha ha, yes. You got me. [I’m some sect disciple](#) gaining experience.” Qi Xiaoyu softly smiled. Entanglement flashed in the depths of her pupils, but she still gave Chu Mo a smiling face in the end: “You still haven’t answered me.”

[TL: Qi Xiaoyu says she is a sect disciple in a weird way. It somewhat suggests she could be letting Chu Mo believe what he wants. I could also be reading too much into it.]

“I will miss you if I never see you again in this life.” Chu Mo looked into those black and white eyes of Qi Xiaoyu and seriously

spoke.

“I will also miss you. I will think of you over and over again.” Qi Xiaoyu’s eyes condensed with watery mist.”

Chapter 52: Inhuman

“Do you have to return to the sect to cultivate?” Chu Mo’s brow wrinkled. The Demon Lord never said these rules to him. In fact, the Demon Lord booted him out of the mountains with one kick.

“Yes!” Of course I must go back!” Qi Xiaoyu sighed. She looked at Chu Mo and said: “It is the same as you and that grassland girl. She cannot leave the grasslands for you, and you cannot stay in the grasslands for her. It is the same reasoning. Each of us is without a choice!”

“How do you know these things?” Chu Mo returned a haughty look.

“Who do you think this girl is?” I know everything in the heavens and the earth below. I am unique in the heavens and earth.....”

“Fine, you are the most beautiful, most clever, most outstanding! In addition, that girl is not mine.” Chu Mo felt he must explain the situation clearly.

“What does that have to do with me?” Qi Xiaoyu’s words acted like they didn’t care, but the slight corners of her mouth sold off her heart.

“Fine, it has nothing to do with you. Then, will you come home with me?” Chu Mo suddenly said.

“What? Go, go home? Your home? And do what? Are you making a pass on me?” Qi Xiaoyu loveable face became red, but she looked at Chu Mo and set off a string of questions.

“I like you. I want to take you home to meet my grandfather.” Chu Mo pulled Qi Xiaoyu’s hand. He looked her in the eyes and spoke earnestly.

“I.....I.....I am still not prepared. Don’t you feel this is a bit abrupt?” Qi Xiaoyu’s face became crimson. She seemed to be an entirely different person from the previous carefree beautiful maiden that she was just a moment ago.

“You don’t wish to?” Chu Mo immediately felt loss. The hearts of youths.....are somewhat sensitive in the end.

“I.....” Qi Xiaoyu gave Chu Mo a haughty look, then hesitantly said: “I am a girl from unclear origins. Your grandfather certainly wouldn’t like.”

Chu Mo smiled and said: “I like you so it’s good. I only need to have him see you. Who must he like?”

“I haven’t thought about this before, so I have now way to answer you now.” Qi Xiaoyu carefully looked at Chu Mo. It seemed she was afraid to make him unhappy. Then she added: “I am a girl! These types of things.....cannot be answered right away.”

She was basically telling Chu Mo: I want to answer you, but I am a girl. I must have face. Can I immediately answer you at your request? You must invite me several times so I have no means to refuse, then I will bashfully answer.....

It is a pity that the so-called omniscient-since-the-beginning-of-time of everything-under-the heaven-and-on-earth girl forgot one thing.

Not so long ago she cursed this youngster as a pig head, fool, and idiot.....

Chu Mo has innate talent and a shocking ability to study, but he is truly a blank paper when it comes to feeling.

Just being able to openly tell someone he likes them, it is like breaking through the horizons for Chu Mo.....

Therefore, Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu at a loss. He looked at the black and white eyes filled with a matchless spirit. The corners of his mouth slightly moved, but he didn't say those words in the end: Why won't you answer me?

Chu Mo is the emotional equivalent of white paper, but he doesn't have the IQ of white paper. He looked at Qi a little humiliated and angry. Chu Mo had an intuition: If I truly ask this, I am not prepared for her to turn and disappear.

“Save me ah.....”

“Save me.....”

“I’m begging you.....”

A weak cry came from a distant location just as the young man and woman were each worrying.

Chu Mo and Qi Xiaoyu both heard the cry for help, and they turned to look.

“Let’s go take a look.” Chu Mo pulled Qi Xiaoyu’s hand, and they rushed in that direction.

Qi Xiaoyu automatically flew along with Chu Mo. It didn’t feel the least bit unnatural.

It had already become a custom to be held by this young man’s hand.

Everything turned on its head. Ten thousand demons plunder.

The stars, the morning sun, and the clear blue sky were like ink.

The origin of strange appearances. The blood of disaster.

The balance of heaven and earth chopped open by the devil.

‘The stars, the sun, the blue sky are like ink.....this, is it him?’

‘If it is truly him, what do I do? Beg him to help? But I don’t want to involve him in this.’

‘I remember everything now.....I remember what I came here to do, but I don’t want to involve him! Such a contradiction.....I truly want to leave him immediately. Leave him and go far away.’

‘But I.....hate to part with him!’

‘What do I do? What should I do?’

Chu Mo never thought the beautiful girl at his side would be at such torment inside. Her heart was being tortured.

The cry for help became clearer, but that voice seemed to be piercing, as if it was going through the most dreadful thing in the world.

Chu Mo and Qi Xiaoyu sped up at the same time, and they charged in that direction.

The scene made Chu Mo and Qi Xiaoyu’s eyes split open. The two immediately seethed in anger.

A large group of horsemen were mercilessly slaughtering a large

group of people on the grassland!

The air overflowed with the stench of blood. There were corpses everywhere, and blood flowed like a river.

Several horsemen carried a cruel cold smile on their faces. The horsemen chased after the women and children, deliberately not killing them for the moment. Then they chased them again and again.

They wildly fired their bows, but they didn't shoot at places that would kill. They aimed at the arms and legs of the women and children.

The hopeless cries came from the mouths of these women and children. The grief of heaven moved the earth. It was an extreme tragedy!

One child had three or four arrows in his arms and legs. He was nailed to the ground, and he cried out to his mother with his last gasping breaths.

A woman had fallen about ten meters away from there. Her hand was extended to the child. She ought to be this child's mother. Her eyes were fixated in the child's direction, but there was no life in her eyes. She could not answer her baby.

An arrow was sticking through her back. It went through her chest and nailed her firmly onto the ground.

There was an old woman who had been shot with three arrows, but she had not died. She continuously struggled to get up while in the bloody pool. A horseman brandished a long saber, and he cut her head with a slash.

The horseman laughed madly. He then charged on his horse to the next person who was struggling on the ground.

This is slaughter!

Inhuman slaughter!

There is no fundamental reason.....only a bloody slaughter!

There were still thousands of people alive at a far away place. They were being driven on and slaughtered. The people fleeing were lessening.....at an astonishing speed.

Chu Mo and Qi Xiaoyu saw the scene from far away. Both their eyes turned completely red in an instant.

This is simply humans slaughtering!

But, to say they are human, it would be the greatest insult to the word!

They are simply dregs beneath the animals!

“Animals!” Qi Xiaoyu thundered loudly. Her image soared. A crescent moon blade suddenly appeared in her hand.

She swept straight across towards the group of horsemen. A cold clear blue colored moonlight brushed down, and ten horsemen were swept directly off their mounts.

The bodies of the men split open in two after falling from the horses. Some had still not died, and they gave extremely dreadful cries while struggling to get up. They were just like the people they massacred.

A middle-aged man was shot full of arrows, and he was originally at his last breath waiting for death. But he suddenly saw a horseman that was split open crawl in his direction.

The man let out a cry like a suffering beast from his throat. It is unknown where that amount of power came from, and he directly rushed towards the horseman that only had half a body remaining.

He ruthlessly bit into the horseman's throat!

It was like a ferocious beast biting the throat of his prey. He ruthlessly bit.....and used force to tear!

Blood hurricane!

The horseman immediately howled miserably.

Another bite!

And another!

It continued endlessly. The man resolutely bit the half dead horseman all the way to death.

“He he.....he he.....” The man didn’t say a word from the beginning to the end.

His throat gave off a laughing and weeping noise at the very end. Then the man’s head turned crooked. He spit up a mouthful of blood and died on the spot.

The power of hatred.....is this terrifying!

Chu Mo charged into the ranks of horsemen. He felt a repressive aura in his chest.....a type of feeling that wanted to restrain the madness.

A small tinkling of bells!

Murdering Heaven out!

A horseman covered in armor was chopped in two with one

slash.

A bloody light appeared, life and death determined!

Another slash!

Another horseman's head was cut down.

The horseman he just killed had a seven or eight year old girl on his pike.

The girl already breathed her last breath, but the horseman still had a self-pleasing smile.

His laughter resounded on the blood splattered earth as his head flew through the air.

“Kill!” Chu Mo's whole person erupted with endless murderous intent. He was like a demon spirit.

The recklessly massacring horsemen.....were completely stunned by the two people who came in killing.

They lost their ability to think!

“Who are you all? You dare block the Wang Court's law enforcement? Do you not wish to live?” A majestic horseman

wearing silver colored armor roared.

He charged towards Chu Mo as the same time. The horseman had an extremely vigorous bloody aura. He held a halberd in his hands, and his two arms were like young dragons. They seemed to possess inexhaustible power!

“I will send you to death!” The silver armored horseman roared. The halberd directly thrust towards Chu Mo’s brow.

The air seemed to be ripped through by the halberd!

Chu Mo lifted Murdering Heaven. Chu Mo was in the process of falling down from the middle of the air. The opponents halberd would certainly pierce through his brow in the moment he landed.

Unavoidable!

But something happened that the silver armored horseman could have never dreamed. The opponent unexpectedly let out a scream. Not only did the youngster no longer fall down, but he actually went another ten feet higher in the air!

This unbelievably precise attack.....struck into the air!

“This.....how is this possible?” The silver armored horseman’s eyes revealed a shocked color: “Yuan.....Yuan closure warrior!”

Pu!

Chu Mo ruthlessly slashed from the apex of his leap, directly towards the silver armored horseman.

The silver armored horseman was completely stunned. He suddenly howled: “You can’t kill me.....I am prince Yin of the Wang Court!”

Snap!

Brother Yin was hacked into two halves by Chu Mo.

Chapter 53: Overflowing Killing Intent

“What kind of thing is Brother Jin?” Chu Mo was completely unaware his eyes had turned blood-red at this time. He especially didn’t notice a barely visible thread of blood enter into his body each time he killed a horseman.

To be precise, it flew into the jade on his chest.

The fingernail-sized mark on the green stone in the jade space began to grow each time he killed someone.

The rate of increase was very slow, but it continuously increased with Chu Mo’s massacre.

Bloody spirit aura!

Chu Mo was unaware as to what the outcome of the bloody spirit aura would be. He was even more unaware as to what it could be used for.

He was completely unable to consider these things right now. Chu Mo already didn’t consider the horsemen human after personally witnessing their atrocities.

Qi Xiaoyu did not hold back in the slightest. She killed no less horsemen than Chu Mo.

But her skills were much less flashy when compared to Chu Mo. The crescent blade in her hand shined a dull blue light, and a horseman would fall soon after.

They were both slaughtering, but Qi Xiaoyu's slaughter held an elegant beauty!

Chu Mo on the other hand——ice-cold, powerful, and a towering bloody light!

All of the horsemen chose to leave far away from Chu Mo. They would rather die at the hands of the immortal-like maiden. This is such a preposterous choice——which way do I die?

But they practically all had the same feeling: I want to die at the hands of the maiden instead of that youngster!

Only the ones with a chance to choose.....were very few!

Ice-cold pressure fell down from the two. There were still some survivors among the innocents being slaughtered. Some of them were men, and they finally came to their senses after going through the most terrifying experience.

They saw the group of horsemen that had recently killed their closest friends and family want to flee in terror. These hot blooded men of the grasslands immediately had blood-red eyes.

“Kill that group of animals!”

“Brothers, helpers have come! They were certainly sent by the princess! Now the horsemen want to flee! Together.....kill the scum!”

“May princess Bao Lian live forever! May princess Nuo Yi live forever!” Some old people bitterly wept and knelt on the ground, thanking the two princesses.

These two princesses were number one in the hearts of the common people.

The people that were being slaughtered picked up weapons, and they began to resist. The five thousand plus horsemen broke under the pressure.....and they immediately collapsed.

They started to flee in all directions.

Some officers yelled, snarled, and even killed the fleeing soldiers, but it was no use!

An army in flight is like a landslide!

The people are unable to be redeemed.

The battle had over five thousand Wang Court horsemen that

belonged to second prince Jin. They originally wanted to wipe out clans loyal to princess Nuo Yi.

This was a large clan of over a hundred thousand people!

But they were powerless to resist under the iron oppression of the Wang Court horsemen. This tribe would be thoroughly extinguished in a couple of days if no one came to help.

But they they never imagined encountering Chu Mo. Over eight hundred of the total five thousand plus horsemen died at Chu Mo's hands! Over five hundred died at the hands of Qi Xiaoyu.

The three thousand plus remaining horsemen were killed by the enraged grassland men.

The grassland men that were originally powerless to resist became an unparalleled terrifying military force after the Wang Court horsemen were defeated.

Because.....they weren't afraid to die! They held a dreadful amount of hatred.

Taking a horse hoof in the chest? No problem! When a horse stomps into the chest, a blade can slash the horse's leg at the same time. Then the rider will fall off!

Then several more men can rush over, and hack the fallen horseman to death!

This could be seen everywhere on the battlefield!

In the end, some older children and women couldn't resist charging forward.....

They had no weapons. They used stones from the ground, fists, and teeth.....anything that could be used.

This is hatred!

Hatred engraved into one's bones!

Chu Mo and Qi Xiaoyu converged together in the end. The two had stopped slaughtering because they were no longer needed.

Chu Mo discovered the nearly invisible blood threads at this time. They were continuously flying into his body.

“Bloody spirit aura?” Chu Mo's brow slightly wrinkled.

His spirit immediately entered into the jade space, and he looked at the green stone. The small blood colored vestige on the stone became even more distinct!

The mark didn't become longer, but the original slight blood color already became a hundred times greater!

The distinct blood color seemed to occupy one third of the fingernail sized mark!

"It looks like there is some use indeed, but I have not yet discovered it....." Chu Mo thought, and then his spirit returned.

This is all only an idea. Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu and said: "Let us go!"

"These people.....will they encounter an even greater retaliation?" Qi Xiaoyu's pupils gradually returned to normal. She never thought she would kill this many people before. But she didn't regret getting her hands bloody today after seeing the atrocities committed by the horsemen.

These people.....should die!

"What is your meaning?" Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu.

Qi Xiaoyu pupils twinkled, and she softly said: "It would be better to outright help your grassland princess since we have already acted. We should take out that brother Jin!"

"She isn't my grassland princess!" Chu Mo couldn't help but return a haughty look, but Qi Xiaoyu's proposition had some meaning.

Qi Xiaoyu's eyebrows raised at this time, and she looked far away. She said somewhat shocked: "It seems a very powerful person is coming!"

Chu Mo also felt an extremely ice-cold breath at this time. It extended over from an extremely remote location. Chu Mo's face revealed a shocked color, because he didn't even see the trace of the opponent's shadow.....the opponents presence actually already extended this place from such a far distance.

What realm is this person?

Qi Xiaoyu's face exposed a solemn color. She looked in that direction, then softly said: "The person coming.....is very strong!"

.....

Ten days prior.

An extremely indignant roar came from the palace of Da Qi.

"Are you trash?"

“Shameful thing, you believe yourself infallible!”

“And you all, do you eat shit? He is an idiot, are you also the same?”

“I painstakingly laid these plans for twenty years.....and they were finally in my net. I entrusted you all. I let you all take the people in the net. It was the same as gifting you a heavenly feat! Is this how you all collect my net?”

“The fish haven’t died.....and the net is broken! Furthermore.....there is now way to repair it!”

“Speak for yourselves, what punishment should you have?”

The whole palace was silent. It seemed to occupy only one enraged emperor, but in reality, the golden palace was filled with a mass of kneeling people.

Crash!

A crisp noise. An exquisite vase broke apart. It shattered everywhere, and it even splashed into some people’s faces. It cut open shallow bloody traces, but not a single person dared move.

A handsome young man was kneeling at the very front. His head was lowered, and the handsome face swelled with a completely red

color. He speechlessly stared at the gold bricks of the gold palace. It was as if the decorative designs carried an incomparably profound fighting technique.

A middle-aged man wearing a crown stood before the throne. A long thin beard flowed down from his jaw. He appeared very scholarly. His pupils were sharp, and they carried an imposing manner that looked down upon everyone under heaven. His chest was violently heaving up and down, and his face was enraged.

This middle-aged man is the King of Da Qi.....Jiang Hengyu!

The handsome young man kneeling below was the third prince of Da Qi.....Jiang Qiuyang. He is the one who originally shot Chu Mo with an arrow.

Jiang Qiuyang was very young, but he was one of the most outstanding princes among the many in Da Qi.

He was sent to a large sect to cultivate at a young age. He left the mountain when he had finally reached twenty, only two years ago. He displayed his extraordinary brains and extreme power as soon as he returned to Da Qi. He quickly rose among the ranks of princes.

He became one of Da Qi's most popular heirs!

The king of Da Qi, Jiang Hengyu, let his third son handle all the affairs of the grasslands. This was due to his trust in his third son,

and the king's desire to help groom his son for the future. He gave it all over to Jiang Qiuyang against the popular opinion of the masses.

The king originally wanted to use this event to cement Jiang Qiuyang's status. The country of Da Qi still did not have a crowned prince!

The mission given to Jiang Qiuyang made all the brothers envious. Everyone knew this was a ready-made success. Their father had begun making these preparations when he was only a prince. It had been twenty years, and the arrangements had already completely matured.

It could be said that Jiang Qiuyang is picking peaches! And this peach.....is really a little too big!

It was to the extent that the King Jiang Henryu hesitated a long time before deciding to hand it over to the outstanding third prince.

It was the equivalent of expanding their territory!

They could also capture the never before captured northern grasslands without shedding a drop of blood!

This was an achievement splashed down from the heavens!

This type of achievement was enough to make an ordinary

person king in such a peaceful era! It was enough to make Jiang Qiuyang the future king of Da Qi without any resistance.

This was an extremely simple mission to Jiang Hengyu. Anyone could do it without using any effort. They only need to issue a few commands, and let the preparations be unleashed!

“Even a speaking dog.....would be able to do it!”

“You’ve yet managed to crush me?”

Jiang Hengyu coldly stared at the unmoving Jiang Qiuyang. He also swept an eye across the chancellors that were keeping quiet out of fear.

“I specially gave you an envoy, and several helpers.....you really did it. You actually carelessly placed everyone on that damned grassland!”

“To find an immortal palace? Tell me! Is your mission to find an immortal palace? Did you find it? Was there an immortal inside? Did you seize the opportunity?”

“Incapable thing! You put the cart before the horse! Do you feel that cultivating in a sect and stepping into the Yuan Closure realm was a disaster? You despise the secular world, despise the king’s authority. I will make you clearly understand what the king’s authority is today!”

Jiang Hengyu's cold severe pupils stared at the silent Jiang Qiuyang. Then he suddenly said in a low voice: "Mister Sun, I am truly sorry. This matter.....must trouble you."

A faint voice suddenly sounded in the golden temple: "The king doesn't need to be this furious. This decrepit old man has been idle too long. Ha ha. And he wants to go gain some knowledge and experience. This person will give a great result to the little hero that messed up the plans of the king."

The kneeling Jiang Qiuyang seemed to remember something. He suddenly raised his head and looked at his father with a shocked expression. His mouth twitched a couple times, but he yet didn't dare say a word.

He recalled a legend, and was scared!

Chapter 54: Secular King's Authority

Legends say the four continents are carried on the backs of four ancient divine beasts.

These four ancient divine beasts were the Green Dragon, White Tiger, Vermillion Bird, and Black Tortoise. The Green Dragon is lord of the east, the White Tiger is lord of the west, the Vermillion Bird is lord of the south, and the Black Tortoise is lord of the north.

Da Xia, Da Qi, the grasslands, and several small and large kingdoms were all located in the eastern continent.

Because of this, this region is called the “Green Dragon Continent” by the people. The dragon is naturally the divine protector of this land.

This is also the reason why the Immortal Sky Seventh Elder Zhao Hongzhi was so afraid. He feared his act of stealing the Wind Dragon's egg would be made public. No one in the Green Dragon Continent would forgive him if this was made known!

The Immortal Sky is the number one sect of the Green Dragon continent. It is regarded as a top rank sect in the whole four continents, but they wouldn't dare provoke the masses for this matter. They couldn't offend the whole Green Dragon continent on account of Zhao Hongzhi.

Sects are not in touch with the world. They are all like this, no

matter if it is the Green Dragon continent or the whole four continents.

The people in sects all regard themselves as cultivators on the path to immortality. This is despite no news of someone ascending for several years. But the position of sects has never wavered.

This has resulted in several people looking down upon the secular world after they enter into a sect. They look down upon the king's authority and despise everything in the mortal world.

It appeared to be this way. Even royal children would give sect members the appropriate respects. If people from a sect come out and cause a mess in the secular world, even if it is a disaster, it will become marginalized.

After all, the influential power of a sect in the secular world is terrifying.

But in reality.....are the sects and secular world in two non-intersecting realities?

This obviously is a false viewpoint!

The people that live in the large sects are not true immortals! They can not fast to that level. They must eat and drink like the rest. They require all kinds of resources!

Where does this stuff come from? Are they self-sufficient?

In fact, that is impossible!

Self-sufficiency could only let these sects have a life of survival at most. It cannot let them possess a dignified life!

They are not true immortals. They are the same as men! They have emotions and desires, such as the need to live with dignity.

Then, what is to be done?

Royalty of the secular world is naturally the best choice.

Cultivators need a large quantity of Yuan stones to cultivate. Where do Yuan stones come from? Do they rely on the Yuan stone mines occupied by the sect's mountain range? Even a large Yuan stone mine will be completely emptied some day.

Even a strong sect cannot occupy all the world's Yuan stone mines. Some of the Yuan stone mines are occupied by the secular world in the end.

This power is basically all controlled by the royalty of the secular world!

There were still several exchanges between sects and the secular world in addition to this. Of course the common people were unaware of these things, and it was not obvious.

But Jiang Qiuyang is not the same. He is a sect disciple, but he is even more so a royal child of the secular world! He is in an extremely revered position.....he could even become the crowned prince!

Jiang Qiuyang had spent his infancy, childhood, and youth inside the sect.....all the way until he was twenty years old. In his inner depths, he indeed despised the secular king's authority.

This is why he placed so much emphasis on the immortal cave rumor, even though the matter of the northern grassland was so important. In his opinion, a small grassland is like an ant in the face of a sect disciple like himself. He can easily crush it!

Even towards his own father—the Da Qi king! Jiang Qiuyang only had the respect a child has for their father before today. He absolutely didn't have the respect for the king's authority!

Because he completely forgot one thing. That is: How did he enter the sect to cultivate!

He also forgot a slip of the tongue made by his master while in the sect: His master's uncle was once a deacon in the sect. He requested to enter the secular world because it was hard to make another breakthrough, and the sect life was bitter. It is entirely possible that uncle stayed with the Da Qi royal family and became a follower.

Jiang Qiuyang somewhat disdained his master's uncle at that

time. He couldn't make a breakthrough.....so he must certainly not be that strong.

His master taught him a ruthless lesson at that time. He said: "What do you know? My uncle is several times more powerful than me! It's possible you can't reach his degree in your whole life. What qualifications do you have to mock him?"

It was hard for Jiang Qiuyang to comprehend at that time. If his master's uncle is that amazing, why would he long for the world of mortals? Cultivators shouldn't want anything in the secular world.

He also remembered how his master only shook his head and smiled. He said one day you will be the king of Da Qi. If you can say these words on that day, then master will see you in a new light.

These words were spoken over ten years ago. Jiang Qiuyang wasn't yet a teenager at the time. The conversation had already been forgotten in the back of his mind.

He was ruthlessly scolded for a long time today by his father. In addition, an unseen person's faint words filled the golden palace. It suddenly made Jiang Qiuyang think of the conversation at that time.

"This.....this is my master's uncle?" Jiang Qiuyang looked at the his father standing there with a kingly aura. Jiang Qiuyang never placed him in his eyes before, but now he suddenly felt somewhat taller.

“Why? Did someone tell you I was old and decrepit?” An old man in his fifties wearing a gray clothes appeared in front of Jiang Qiuyang after a dull voice. He was dry and nothing special to look at. The small old man sized him up, full of interest.

“Xiang Hegong.....the seventy-third generation disciple Jiang Qiuyang pays his respects to great uncle!” Jiang Qiuyang stayed kneeling so as to avoid kneeling down again. He honestly gave respects to the little old man.

But there was yet a great uncertainty inside: ‘This is the man master spoke about at that time.....this is the great uncle that got fed up with living the bitter life in the sect? The one that joined the world of mortals? Why does he not have fresh clothes and a spirited horse? Where are the wives and concubines? What is the difference between this and staying in the sect?’

The old man beamed with all smiles at Jiang Qiuyang. He profoundly stated: “Young man, you don’t walk the cultivation road very well. If I were you, in your situation, I would either be an idle prince that only focuses on cultivating, or I would carefully think about how to be a wise king. Ha.....you are fortunate. You not only have the sect’s backing, but also have the royal family background. Treasure it!”

The old man’s figure faded away in front of Jiang Qiuyang after he finished speaking. Jiang Qiuyang couldn’t even see how this great uncle disappeared right in front of his face. His eyes were only left with a shocked color.

The king of Da Qi, Jiang Hengyu, made all the ministers withdraw at this time. Only Jiang Qiuyang remained there, kneeling all by himself.

Jiang Hengyu returned to the throne, and he looked at Jiang Qiuyang unenthusiastically for a moment. He finally said: "Stand."

Jiang Qiuyang slowly stood up. His head remained low, and he didn't speak a word.

Jiang Hengyu looked at his most favored son before him and unenthusiastically said: "How very strange. How could such a mighty person worship the royal family in the secular world?"

"Yes, master said that great uncle was weary of the bitter sect life, and he gave up on making a breakthrough. He wanted to return to the mortal world....." Jiang Qiuyang honestly replied.

"Ha ha, weary of the sect life? You are truly.....naive!" Jiang Hengyu coldly laughed: "You should know, Mister Sun is not a drunkard, and he is not filled with lust even though he lives in the royal palace. He bitterly trains every day!"

"Ah!" Jiang Qiuyang somewhat guessed this before, but he still felt confused after officially hearing it from his father: "Then why did he....."

Jiang Hengyu couldn't help but sigh: "It looks like you didn't

listen to a word mister Sun just told you. It's no wonder, you are indeed too spoiled! You have never ever lacked cultivation materials. Therefore you don't understand, and you think it's normal."

Jiang Hengyu stood up as he talked, and he slowly walked before his son. He looked at his son that was half a head taller than himself. Jiang Hengyu raised a hand, and patted his son on the shoulder: "Young man, royalty is at your back! Royal resources have always been given to you to use. Mister Sun has none. The Xiang River Palace sect is no inferior to the large Immortal Sky sect, but their resources are limited! Mister Sun isn't a cultivating genius, and he has no influence. How could he ask the Xiang River Palace sect for a large amount of cultivation resources?

Jiang Qiuyang looked stunned at his own father. This was the first time hearing these kinds of words. He had never thought of this before.

"Do you truly believe the large amount of resources you used to cultivate were provided by the Xiang River palace? You are so talented that they are willing to let you recklessly use up a large amount of resources? Even if I wish it were true.....you are not!" Jiang Hengyu walked past Jiang Qiuyang's side and plainly said: "All the resources you used over the years came from Da Qi. Not even one percent of the whole country's power is dedicated to the Xiang River Palace. Now do you understand the secular king's authority?"

Jiang Hengyu left alone after saying these words.

Jiang Qiuyang stood there like a statue. He was the only one left in the golden palace.

His ears continuously buzzed with his father's final words: "Now do you understand the secular king's authority?"

"Do you understand the secular king's authority?"

"The secular king's authority?"

"The King's Authority!"

Jiang Qiuyang's pair of naive, ignorant eyes were ripped off after a long time passed, brilliant rays of light shone: "Father.....your child understands!"

An old eunuch walked out from a dark place in the golden palace. He respectfully looked at Jiang Qiuyang and said: "His highness has explained. If you truly understood, go to the military camp by the border of Da Xia and report. There.....perhaps within several years, a year, or even faster.....there will be a war."

"His majesty is letting you consider well. If you haven't given it full thought, then carefully think again. If you truly do not wish to be king, then you could return to the Xiang River Palace. You most likely won't run out of cultivating resources there."

The old eunuch plainly spoke, then looked at Jiang Qiuyang.

Jiang Qiuyang shook his head: “I will go report to the military camp tomorrow. Tell father I understand, and I have thought it through! I want the power of Da Qi to cover the whole Green Dragon Continent!

The old eunuch gave a gratified smile, nodded, then retreated without a noise. It was just like he had never appeared.

Jiang Qiuyang’s pupils filled with the will to fight. His fist powerfully shook: “I understand the King’s Authority! I understand the benefits of power! Master, you were right. I lose. You cannot see me in a new light! I am no immortal. I thought of myself as high and pure. But now.....I cannot!”

Chapter 55: Dry Old Man

Chu Mo's brow wrinkled, and he muttered: "Don't tell me it is a person of Da Qi?"

Qi Xiaoyu thought a moment, then said: "It is possible. You have probably angered the Da Qi king to death. He bitterly worked for so many years and arranged so many schemes. In the end.....you alone spoiled it. It's only a matter of time until the grasslands return to your princess's hands. Furthermore, the power will have consolidated, and it will greatly exceed the former king's power. Da Qi wants to regain their grip, even though it seems the grasslands are being tossed about by the winds and the rain. I'm afraid it is impossible! You have spoiled the grand plans of Da Qi. I'm afraid no one would let you go after doing such a thing."

Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu a little confounded: "You are young girl, how can you know all these things? And also, she isn't my grassland princess!" The two were both rather stubborn about the grassland princess issue.

"Why can't a girl understand these things? Looking down on me, who do you think this girl is?" Qi Xiaoyu stared at Chu Mo with her pretty big eyes.

"Fine fine, forget it. I was wrong. I admit I looked down on you. You are the greatest on heaven and earth....." Chu Mo returned a haughty look. Yet he still unconsciously flattered Qi Xiaoyu.

Qi Xiaoyu then did something that made Chu Mo lose his senses

for a long time. She walked over, and she softly kissed Chu Mo's face. Her charming face turned scarlet red, and her star-like eyes became bashful. She stood there gazing at Chu Mo with deep loving emotions.

Chu Mo was a little stupefied. He even forgot forgot the oncoming ice-cold breath. He just stood there looking at her like an imbecile.

“In fact I.....also like you a little.” Qi Xiaoyu tenderly looked at Chu Mo.

“Then like this.....do you promise to come back home to meet my grandfather? Promise to be my wife?” Chu Mo stared with big eyes. He almost didn't dare to believe as he looked at Qi Xiaoyu.

Qi Xiaoyu also stared with big eyes, and she inconceivably looked at Chu Mo: “What does liking you have to do with promising to see your grandfather? And also.....who wants to be your wife?”

“You don't want to be my wife.....what are you doing kissing me?” Chu Mo muttered.

“Your grassland princess also kissed you! Why don't you make her your wife?” Qi Xiaoyu returned a haughty look.

“Did not!” Chu Mo directly denied. He is the emotional equivalent of white paper, but he still knows to not easily admit this kind of thing. Moreover, he didn't believe Qi Xiaoyu was

actually incredible enough to know all of his business.

Sure enough——

“You really didn’t?” Qi Xiaoyu looked at Chu Mo a little shocked, and her eyes sparkled. Her impression is that Chu Mo had never told her a lie, and he isn’t the type that is able to lie.

The world is like this. When an honest person who never lies actually tells a lie, they are almost always successful at deceiving the other person.

Chu Mo’s heart settled down, and he said with a loving face: “Of course not!”

“I still believe.....she liked you so much. The girls of the grassland are passionate and unrestrained. How could she hold back from kissing you?” Qi Xiaoyu suddenly became a little coy, then she smiled and squinted at Chu Mo.

“Ha ha.....then, am I the first to kiss big brother?” It is unknown when it started, but Qi Xiaoyu had begun calling Chu Mo big brother. Chu Mo resisted and called her big sister, but he was ruthlessly suppressed.

There’s no way to help it, he is no match for her.....Chu Mo didn’t want to mention such a shameful thing.

‘Then big brother it is, it is just a nickname. Ha ha ha’ Chu Mo

calmed himself down like this.

Qi Xiaoyu's face was blushing, and her eyes were full of love. Chu Mo suddenly felt a little guilty. Then he suddenly thought of an old saying: One lie needs a hundred words to justify.

“Cough cough.....yes!” Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu's expecting expression. He could only bite the bullet and nod, because he had a hunch. The girl before him would immediately storm off if he said it wasn't true.

“Truly good! I'm so happy!” Qi Xiaoyu smiled extremely happy. She walked to Chu Mo and kissed his face again: “Left side, right side.....the second kiss is mine, and the third kiss is mine!”

Chu Mo was stunned. He quickly lost his ability to think. His whole brain was an empty space. His face blushed, but he yet watched his Qi Xiaoyu while in a daydream. Chu Mo's heart seemed to explode with happiness.

Even if a potential large enemy is approaching, Chu Mo didn't wish to think of it. Only there was a suspicion inside.

She said grassland girls are passionate and unrestrained. She isn't a grassland girl, so how can she be so bold? This isn't like her!

The two had spent a good amount of time together getting to know one another. Chu Mo felt he understood Qi Xiaoyu.

‘Then, why did she.....suddenly change like that? Is it really because she merely likes me?’

‘These things.....don’t boys take the initiative? Aren’t girls bashfully passive?’

‘Then is it still.....don’t tell me she must leave?’

It can’t help but be said, people’s intuitions are terrifyingly accurate sometimes.

But Chu Mo didn’t have much opportunity to think it over, because that ice-cold breath not only enshrouded the two.....but also directly made the two freeze!

The feeling of being frozen still was incomparably strong. It made Chu Mo feel like a frog locked on by a viper.

Qi Xiaoyu was oddly calm at his side. She seemed to make some decision, and her whole person became extremely relaxed. There was no heavy concentration in her pupils.

She extended a soft little hand, and she pulled Chu Mo. She said somewhat ice-cold: “Don’t be afraid, you have me!”

“Shouldn’t I be saying that?” Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu, and his self-pride was a little hurt. He increasingly felt Qi Xiaoyu’s expression today is very strange, extremely wrong.

Qi Xiaoyu captivately smiled: “Could it be that only you can say that, or am I just not allowed to say that?”

“I am a man!” Chu Mo had a feeling like he was out of breath, but he still straightened his chest and spoke earnestly.

“Ah, I know you are!” Qi Xiaoyu softly said: “Big brother is still my hero!”

Qi Xiaoyu suddenly yelled out with cold contempt: “Have you seen enough? Old fart, do you still need to see more?”

“Little baby’s temper is actually irritable. This old man hasn’t asked you two little babies to stop kissing. Yet you look at this old man irritated. Did you not mention this old man first?” As he spoke, an insipid, homely little man slowly appeared from high up in the sky.

Chu Mo’s inner tension actually went away at this time. He pulled Qi Xiaoyu’s hand and blocked in front of her with his body. He calmly looked at the old man in the sky and said in a deep voice: “What has senior come down here to do?”

The massacre on the grasslands had already come to an end. The remaining couple hundred horsemen had all already fled like dogs.

The lucky survivors gathered together. Either tears were flowing down like rain, or they were laughing because they survived. The

laughter still carried a dense sorrow, but they were survivors. They could live on, a heavenly fortune.

Some people seemed to want to go over and thank the young boy and girl, but a thin old man suddenly appeared in the sky. It made them awed in fear. They believed an immortal appeared. Some people even kneeled on the ground and sincerely prayed.

The old man seemed to look at Chu Mo with praise, and he softly sighed: “Heroes appear at a young age since ancient times. My ancestors have not deceived me. You are so young and talented, a rare sight in this old man’s life! Such a young age, not only have you broken through the Yuan Closure, but your temperament is steady. Truly a buildable talent.....it is a pity!”

“What is a pity?” Chu Mo could feel the old man had no good purpose in coming.

“It is a pity you have destroyed Da Qi’s plans. So, such a unique talent must be destroyed.” The old fellow sighed, His face revealed a color of loss: “Had I discovered you earlier, perhaps I would have a disciple to shock the four continents!”

“Pei, old bastard!” Qi Xiaoyu coldly said: “You done?”

“Little baby girl, hey, a peak yellow rank five realm. You are also an unnatural talent! Even more amazing than this youngster! Really rare, I don’t know who could train such a disciple? It is truly a little curious. There appears to be a hidden supreme expert on the four continents. The old man seemed to not mind Qi Xiaoyu’s

rudeness. He simply said: “I don’t want to make things difficult for you. This has nothing to do with you, withdraw.”

“You feel.....that is possible?” Qi Xiaoyu coldly stared at the old man halfway up in the sky: “Also, stop playing the role of a senior expert. If you have come to find trouble, then come down and speak! Are you criticizing me? You aren’t even a match!”

Qi Xiaoyu was no longer that innocent, unaffected, narcissistic little girl at this moment. Her body penetrated with a matchlessly honorably breath. She stood there like a legendary phoenix, exceptional and alone!

Chu Mo looked a little startled at the girl he was still holding hands with. He suddenly felt a little strange.

This this still the lively, cute, ultra-narcissistic blue dress girl he knows?

Qi Xiaoyu turned as if she somewhat felt it. She softly looked at Chu Mo: “Big brother, I am still me! You must remember me! You must certainly remember me!”

These words made Chu Mo’s heart suddenly jump, and a little painful at the same time. Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu a little angry: “What are these words? This old man says this has nothing to do with you. Go!”

Qi Xiaoyu didn’t get mad at all. Her smiling expression was filled

with soft tenderness. She even turned away from the old man in the air and faced Chu Mo. She softly stroked Chu Mo's face: "Big brother is so childish sometimes. How could I throw away big brother and leave?"

"These are your words, then do not leave me!" Chu Mo grasped the opportunity and loudly said: "Then, if we live, we live together. If we die, we die together!"

"Yes, I promise you!" Qi Xiaoyu smiled a glittering breathtaking smile.

"Enough you two!" The dry old man became a little angered: "Baby girl, this old man isn't the kind to recklessly kill innocents. I don't want to make things difficult for you, but you provoke this old man's patience again and again!"

The dry old man slowly came down from the sky as he spoke. He stood a hundred feet away from Chu Mo and Qi Xiaoyu. A pair of sharp eyes stared at Qi Xiaoyu: "Don't force this old man to strangle a talent. You are so talented. Killing one of you is enough. This old man doesn't want to commit sins too deep. Right now you are not my match!"

"You want to kill me by yourself?" Qi Xiaoyu's face showed an arrogant expression. She looked at the dry old man: "You may try!"

Qi Xiaoyu shed off Chu Mo's hand as she spoke. Her image flashed, and she directly rushed at the dry old man. At the same

time, a crescent shaped blade chopped towards the dry old man!

Serene cold blue rays of light shattered the empty sky in an instant. It directly rushed towards the dry old man!

Chu Mo reacted just as quickly. He snarled, and Murdering Heaven appeared in his hand. It actually let out a high pitched bird cry, like it felt its master's intent. Murdering Heaven erupted with unbelievable intense battle desire!

“Big brother no!” Qi Xiaoyu saw Chu Mo act, and immediately worried.

But, too late.

Shua!

A blade light slashed towards the dry old man.

This blade is the strongest strike that Chu Mo could muster!

Ring!

The dry old man's image flashed, directly avoiding Qi Xiaoyu's strike. This his image flashed again, and appeared directly in front of Chu Mo.

The old man's face that was dry as a ravine, revealed an ice-cold smile.

“I'm sorry, you must die!”

Chapter 56: Don't Forget Me

A small gold colored knife appeared in the dry old man's hand as he spoke. It directly struck against Chu Mo's Murdering Heaven.

Qiang!

A blast in the sky!

The dry old man's gold colored knife unexpectedly cracked.....it was snapped by Murdering Heaven!

The old man let out a scream: "A masterpiece weapon?"

Chu Mo yet felt an unrivaled power follow behind the opponent's golden knife. It passed through Murdering Heaven and struck his arm.

Snap!

Chu Mo's arm broke on the spot. He was sent flying back like a kite cut from its line, and he sprayed out a mouthful of blood in the air.

Murdering Heaven buzzed. There was a brilliant ray of light, and it retreated back into the Jade space on its own.

Qi Xiaoyu let out an earth-shaking screech: "Big Brother!"

She turned and looked at the dry old man extremely enraged: “I want to kill you!”

Her body suddenly erupted with an unimaginably powerful aura. A storm gathered in the sky, and black clouds began to roll all at once. The heavens in the area were completely enshrouded in a black inky darkness.

The aura unexpectedly struck the colors of the heaven and earth!

The dry old man’s facial color changed in an instant. He looked at Qi Xiaoyu, and his eyes filled with an inconceivable light: “You..... you.....”

“Ignorant thing, you dare injure my big brother.....I will kill you!” Qi Xiaoyu raised a palm.

An incomparably gigantic palm appeared in the sky at the same time. It was transparent and colorless, like made out of water. The fringes were yet like a flaming blaze, and they pulsed with gold colored rays of light.

Following Qi Xiaoyu’s action, this enormous palm was like a mountain——

Descending from the heavens!

The dry old man's body started to crackle apart.

The old man's body already couldn't bear the pressure before the palm even struck him.

Suddenly a 'bang'.....immediately exploded apart!

Changed into a bloody mist!

Wiped to ashes!

The grassland people that personally witnessed the sight were dumbstruck. They immediately.....as if by instinct.....turned and ran!

They didn't even fully understand what just happened!

But this scene.....is really too terrifying!

This scene was like an attack on the inner spirit for the grassland people that believed in God. It is hard to imagine.

There was only one thought remaining in their brains: Run.....quickly leave this terrifying and ominous place.

Qi Xiaoyu turned a blind eye to the grassland people's reaction. The murderous aura in her pupils slowly disappeared after she

crushed the dry old man into ashes. But the noble and powerful aura on her body still yet couldn't be suppressed.

Crack!

A slight crisp noise came from Qi Xiaoyu's body.

“In the end.....it still must come? I really hate to part.” Qi Xiaoyu's soft voice whispered. The aura from her body yet continually rose.....it was even more intense than when she struck the dry old man!”

This aura seemed to produce some kind of hard to describe conflict between the heaven and earth here. The sky started to fill with black rolling clouds for the surrounding hundreds of miles.

Lightning flash after flash constantly lit up the black clouds.

In the end——

Crack!

Exploding Thunder!

Crash.....!

Torrential rain fell from the skies.

Qi Xiaoyu flew to Chu Mo's side. She saw the blood flowing from the corners of his mouth, and her face became pale. But she still kept her eyes open. She propped up Chu Mo even though tears silently fell. He hadn't fainted.

Qi Xiaoyu sat on the ground and held Chu Mo in her embrace. She called out to big brother, and her tears fell like rain: "Why must you persist, pass out or you will suffer a lot!"

Qi Xiaoyu cried and extended out a hand. She supported Chu Mo's back, and a portion of powerful Yuan Qi rushed into Chu Mo's body. It repaired his injured meridians.

"I'm afraid....." Chu Mo's face was weak. He looked at Qi Xiaoyu: "Afraid once I closed my eyes.....I wouldn't see you."

Qi Xiaoyu's tears flowed even more, like the rain from the sky growing larger and harder.

She didn't dare look into Chu Mo's eyes. Her eyes seemed to slightly close. The torrential downpour from the skies fell to the two people, but it automatically flowed to the side. It was like an invisible barrier was blocking overhead, not letting the rain fall in.

"How could it be. I like big brother so much, and I'm so severe. What was that old man thinking? One spank and he dies, how could he not see me?" Qi Xiaoyu's tears flowed down while she lovingly looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo turned pale as he looked at Qi Xiaoyu. A series of cracks started to appear on her beautiful face at that moment.

It was like looking at a broken mirror that was glued back together.

Chu Mo's heart also began to break. He could bear it no longer in the end, and teardrops formed in the corners of his eyes.

Qi Xiaoyu was slightly startled, but she didn't stop treating Chu Mo's injury. She unconsciously patted her face and mumbled: "So you have seen.....big brother, am I ugly now?"

"No.....not ugly.....you are the most beautiful girl in the world!" Chu Mo was in so much heartache that he almost fainted. He saw the cracks on Qi Xiaoyu's face grow more and more. Chu Mo felt his own heart began to break into countless pieces.

Ah!

Fresh blood sprayed out of his mouth.

Then Chu Mo struggled with all his effort to break away from Qi Xiaoyu's healing hand. He raged: "What are you curing me for when you are like that? You are going to die, and I will live?"

Qi Xiaoyu's noble and powerful aura had no effect on Chu Mo.

Before Chu Mo, she is always that carefree, lively, narcissistic, and beautiful little girl.

Only, now she is completely weak.

“Big brother, I won’t die, really. I’m not tricking you. I.....I come from another world. In this one I.....am merely a clone. I cannot endure the pressure of this world once I use my original power. Therefore, I will crumble apart.....” Qi Xiaoyu looked with sorrow at Chu Mo. She said heartbroken: “I do not wish to leave you, but there is no way.....big brother, promise me, you must live on!”

“You cheated me! You speak nonsense! What clone.....I don’t believe! You are clearly trying to deceive me!” Chu Mo struggled. He wanted to shed off Qi Xiaoyu’s hand, but there was absolutely no way. Qi Xiaoyu’s hand was like an extension of his body. The Yuan power constantly streamed into his body.

“Big brother must behave. I’m not cheating you. The things I said.....are all true. If you keep wasting my energy like this, perhaps I won’t have enough energy to speak with you in the end.”

Qi Xiaoyu exposed weakness in the end. She was silently weeping inside. She thought to herself as she looked at Chu Mo: ‘Big brother, I really didn’t deceive you. I really won’t die, but this clone is unexpectedly collapsing. My original body will suffer serious damage.....I won’t remember who you are. The damage is nothing to me, but forgetting you is the most grieving part!’

Chu Mo immediately stopped moving, but his young eyes were yet filled with sadness. His heart hated, hated that dry old man, but that old man already died!

“You speak, I’m listening.” Chu Mo watched Qi Xiaoyu’s cracking face, raised a hand, softly caressed, and muttered: “I will believe anything you say.”

“Good.” Qi Xiaoyu tenderly smiled, then she said: “I come from a world completely different from this one. I wanted to find a man that could help me. Originally I believed it was big brother, and later on I recalled my memories. I discovered that I was wrong, but I.....didn’t want to leave and search again.”

Chu Mo looked at Qi Xiaoyu’s pair of beautiful eyes, and he remembered their first appearance. That confused blue dress maiden.

“Since the beginning.....you have been horrible at lying.” Chu Mo shook his head: “I don’t believe! The person you must find is most certainly me!”

“It really isn’t.” Qi Xiaoyu somewhat painfully looked at Chu Mo: “It’s not a problem. I believe, I can cope with it. Only I don’t know when I will see big brother again. Big brother must try hard to cultivate. Do not forget me. You must absolutely not forget me! Remember my appearance.....you must think of me. Think of me every day! You must not forget me!”

Qi Xiaoyu’s body started to slowly.....emit rays of light. They

shot into the rolling black clouds in the sky!

Suddenly!

Her body exploded open! It instantly erupted with and incomparably intense brilliant rays of light!

It pierced a hole through the rolling black clouds in the sky, The light plunged into the highest heavens!

“Big brother, you can remember my appearance, and not forget me.....right? Qi Xiaoyu’s voice echoed in the heavens.

After that, the radiant light instantly disappeared.

The black clouds in the sky also quickly scattered.

The blue sky revealed itself once again, only it lacked her shadow.

“No!” Chu Mo mournfully roared. He spit out a mouthful of fresh blood. He extended out a hand, and used all of his energy, thinking to grab.....but there was nothing to hold.

“Xiaoyu!”

“Come back!”

“Come back for me!”

“Qi Xiaoyu! You swindler! I only lied once to you. Do you wish to deceive my whole life?”

“Come back!”

“Come back for me!”

Chu Mo faced the sky and roared. A frenzied grievance, heart completely crushed, he felt the whole world collapsed.

Soon after, everything before his eyes turned black, and he collapsed there.

A black figure watched from an extremely remote location. It seemed a black flowing light moved to Chu Mo's side in an instant. It looked at the unconscious Chu Mo with twitching lips: “Really good for nothing!”

Chu Mo was dragged up and carried. After thinking a moment, they flew to the distant groups of mountains at the border of Da Xia and the grasslands.

Chu Mo discovered he was laying on a slightly hard bed when he woke up. He was covered in a soft cotton quilt. His eyes opened, and he looked around the room at a loss. He could only feel very

familiar, then he realized, this is his home!

The Fan mansion of Yellow Flame City!

“Was I dreaming?” Chu Mo couldn’t help but mutter. Murdering Heaven appeared in his hand, and he sadly smiled: “It was not dream. Everything was real. Who brought me back here? She already died.....why save my life? What will I still do alive? Grandfather, sorry.....”

Chu Mo held Murdering Heaven up horizontally to his neck as he spoke.

“Bastard!”

Chapter 57: The Day Must Pass

A raged yell came. Chu Mo felt Murdering Heaven easily rip from his hand, and it appeared in the hand of another.

“Master?” Chu Mo saw the person clearly, and he couldn’t help but be stunned.

At last he understood. He appeared at home because master unexpectedly brought him back.

Murdering Heaven struggled with all its might in the Demon Lord’s hand. It finally changed into a bright light and retreated into Chu Mo’s jade.

“Ah? You boy.....you really received a great fortune in the grasslands!” The Demon Lord was shocked. He sized up Chu Mo with interest, but there was a complete lack of wonder.

Chu Mo couldn’t resist crying: “Master, sorry.....I.....”

“You want to say sorry to me in the end?” The Demon Lord enraged, then coldly said: “Cry cry, are you a little girl? Where did you learn to commit suicide for love?.....Did I teach you so that you could commit suicide? How could I have such a shameful disciple!”

“I.....I suffer, master!” Chu Mo yelled with bitter tears: “She died because of me. I let her down!”

“Pei! Look at your future!” The Demon Lord coldly said: “She still hasn’t died, you crying ass!”

“Not.....not dead?” Chu Mo immediately stopped crying. He looked shocked at the Demon Lord, then snarled: “Even you deceived me. Everything disappeared. Why am I alive?”

“You know shit! She is only a clone in this world. She used power that she shouldn’t have. Naturally she was repressed by the heaven and earth. She truly suffered for her crime, but she certainly didn’t die!” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo with a face full of anger: “How can this master have such bad luck that I teach such an idiot disciple? Are you a pig? How can you be so stupid?”

“Master, you said she is still alive? Really? You aren’t deceiving me?” Chu Mo completely ignored the Demon Lord’s attitude, and he leaped right out of bed. He eagerly looked at the Demon Lord and asked a string of questions.

“Really shameless!” The Demon Lord faced the heavens, then he stiffly said: “This master rarely deceives you. Had she not contacted me before disappearing, do you think I could have found you so fast?”

The Demon Lord coldly spoke, but he yet thought inside: ‘I really never thought she would be the little princess of that race, and she actually likes my disciple. Are they not the most proud race in the world? I guess it like this! She has a discerning eye, and knows this boy isn’t ordinary! But.....this girl liking him, I really don’t know if

it is good luck.....or bad luck.'

"Big brother, you can remember my appearance, and not forget me.....right?"

These words still echoed in Chu Mo's mind. That voice was like a magic spell.

"Your appearance is already engraved in my heart. It is completely filled with you. How could I forget?" Chu Mo closed his eyes, and he felt like a boulder was crushing down on his heart, making him feel out of breath.

"She.....the message she gave you? What.....what did she say?" Chu Mo expectantly looked at the Demon Lord.

The Demon Lord thought to give Chu Mo a ruthless beating after seeing his appearance, but he sighed inside when thinking of some former events. He simply said: "She said you wouldn't see her when you woke. You would certainly worry, and she asked me to watch over you."

"Just that?" Chu Mo somewhat disappointedly looked at the Demon Lord.

"What did you believe the message was? Are these words too simple? It was very difficult for her to tell me anything!" The Demon Lord coldly looked at Chu Mo: "You don't understand anything!"

“You didn’t teach me.....” Chu Mo felt a little wronged.

“These things.....” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “I don’t know if it will be good for you.”

“But I want to know.” Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord: “I must go find her!”

The Demon Lord coldly smiled: “Find her? Do you know where she is? Do you know how to leave this world? Do you know the price of finding her?”

“I don’t know, but I still must find her.” Chu Mo returned the look to the Demon Lord, then softly said: “She could give master a direct message.....so she obviously knew master exists. Master ought to be.....a person from another world? Otherwise, how could master’s skill be unheard?”

The Demon Lord was silent for a while, then apathetically said: “I also don’t know.”

Chu Mo obstinately looked at the Demon Lord, and he thought: ‘Jade, let me know Master’s situation!’

Boom!

Chu Mo suddenly felt the jade pressed up against his chest erupt

with extremely intense heat. It was only for a moment, but he couldn't help but scream out.

“Ah!”

The Demon Lord's brow slightly wrinkled as he looked at Chu Mo. He coldly said: “What are you whining about?”

Chu Mo's vision was yet a little dizzy. He was stunned by the large amount of information pouring into his mind.

“Realm unknown, physique unknown, other unknown. Poison critical, poison ingredients.....”

Everything in the beginning was unknown, but the poison composition was unexpectedly built of over fifty poisonous ingredients!

Chu Mo had never heard of the vast majority of them before.

The most important part is, the jade gave him information to cure the poison!

“The required ingredients to cure the poison.....” an overwhelming amount of ingredients, at least thirty plus.

Chu Mo had heard of five or six of the poisonous ingredients forming the Seven Demon Poison, but the curing ingredients.....

Chu Mo hadn't heard of a single one!

But at the end, there was an added piece of information: "This world doesn't have the poison curing medicine, thus.....the materials of this world don't have many properties, and there is a great difference in potency of the medicinal nature. Because of this, a large amount of low level drugs can be used to substitute."

Soon after, a large amount of medicine names appeared in Chu Mo's brain.

Chu Mo had heard the great majority of these medicines. But the amount required for each kind was beyond what Chu Mo dared believe.

It could be summarized like this: The Demon Lord's Seven Demon Poison could be cured in this world! There is a way! But the amount of ingredients required is an astonishing number. Chu Mo estimated over three hundred kinds!

And the quantity required for each type would make a person speechless. Chu Mo felt like he had hit a wall.

One of the ingredients is called Seven Star Grass, and it actually needs 50,000kg!

What kind of idea is this? Even all the Seven Star Grass in Yellow Flame City wouldn't amount to 2,500kg!

Chu Mo estimated the entire stockpile of Da Xia would have to be emptied in order to get the several hundred ingredients accumulated.

Don't even mention the large amount of Yuan stones stored in the jade space. The amount currently inside Chu Mo's jade space would only accomplish one percent. It could possibly not even reach one percent.

This made Chu Mo feel completely agonized. He could clearly see his goal ahead, but it was like he came to an impossible crossing.

But, if he gave up like this, then he wouldn't be Chu Mo!

'Master, I swear an oath. I will certainly rescue you! Don't worry, your disciple definitely does what he says!' Chu Mo was determined. He would complete this mission no matter how difficult.

The Demon Lord looked at the daydreaming Chu Mo, wrinkled his brow, and said: "Forget it, you first rest a bit. The greater part of your body has recovered, but you still need to take it easy for a while. I will stay here in this time, and guide you."

"Really? That's too good!" Chu Mo's face finally revealed a happy smile.

His grandfather was certainly at the border at this time. The whole Fan Mansion only had the one-armed uncle and a few

veteran guards. Having master here to accompany him was naturally the best.

“I will first leave a moment and return tomorrow.” The Demon Lord’s figure flashed as he spoke, and he disappeared from the room.

Chu Mo waved his hand through the empty space, then his whole body quickly calmed down. He forced himself to not think about Qi Xiaoyu no matter how difficult it was.

So long as Chu Mo was awake, it didn’t matter if he opened or closed his eyes. He could only think of that delicate beautiful face and lovely voice. Chu Mo was long accustomed to having Qi Xiaoyu accompany him from morning until evening.

No matter what he did, he did it as if there were two people there.

A heartbreaking grief and sadness that couldn’t be expressed in words returned when he remembered there was only one person.

Therefore, Chu must force himself to adapt to a life without Qi Xiaoyu.

“Didn’t master say, she isn’t dead? She herself said, she comes from another world! Her appearance at the end, so powerful..... then, is she in a world of immortals? Therefore, I must try hard and cultivate! I must go find her!”

“Don’t worry Xiaoyu, I will certainly cheer up! I will let you know, the one you like is not trash!”

“Hmph, master didn’t tell me. But one day I will know myself!”

“Xiaoyu, you are my wife.....no one can change this fact!”

Chu Mo muttered, sucked in a deep breath, and slowly shut his eyes. When his eyes opened again, one could see this nearly fourteen year old youth had a new look in his eyes. He carried the eyes of someone who had seen the highs and lows of life.

The vicissitudes called experience.

Any ordinary youth would mature after going through so many experiences over the past half year. Don’t even mention that Chu Mo is naturally gifted.

“The medicine master needs, there are over three hundred kinds altogether! Over two-hundred and ninety of them are commonly seen in the world. The prices aren’t expensive, and they are findable.”

“Only the quantity is enormous. It will be difficult to gather in a short time, but so long as I desire, it can be obtained!”

“The most difficult problem is the other ten types of materials.

Those are all top quality Yuan medicines. Just one piece could buy a house in the heart of Yellow Flame City. Several of them aren't even buyable. The large majority of people won't part with these top rank medicines unless it is against their will."

"The good news is that the quantity required for these ten medicines aren't very large. Each one needs only about ten pieces, that's it.....cough cough....."

Chu Mo's lips twitched, and he muttered to himself: "They seem few compared to other ingredients, but in reality.....I don't even have one! It looks like curing master is a serious and long journey!"

"Work hard Chu Mo! You can do it! There is nothing in this world too difficult for you!"

Chu Mo whispered, then he spoke to himself: "How many ingredients could the Yuan stones I'm carrying buy? Right now I could be considered rich, ha ha." Chu Mo's spirit entered into the jade space as he spoke. Soon after.....he gave a miserable scream: "Ah!"

The Demon Lord wasn't there to shield his voice at this time.

Worried footsteps came from outside. The door was pushed open, and a one-armed man worriedly rushed inside. He saw Chu Mo sitting there in a daze. The middle-aged man's face was deeply troubled: "Little Mo, are you okay? Is there a problem? Don't scare uncle. Your master said you suffered injuries, and you must rest. Why are you up? Quickly lay down!"

Chu Mo's eyes didn't blink, and the corners of his mouth twitched. His eyes stared in a daze as he slammed back onto the bed: "My Yuan stones.....my Yuan stones.....fuck, will I make it through this day?"

Chapter 58: I'll Think Silently

“My young master, what is going on? Just ask if you want some Yuan stones. Our family has some! Don't frighten your one-armed uncle.....” The middle-aged man was very handsome. He carried a bloody-aura vigor. He would be a ferocious General on the battlefield if it were not for missing one arm. He never took a wife in his life, and he basically looked at Chu Mo as his own child.

“One-armed uncle, It's nothing. It is only a little heartache.....I'll think silently.” Chu Mo said while lacking strength.

“Silently? Is there someone you like?” The middle-aged man curiously looked at Chu Mo, then gave a big laugh: “Our family's young master has finally been enlightened? Ha ha ha ha, it's really not easy. Make it clear! Go pursue! You are the grandson of a General! What is there to be afraid of?”

“.....” Chu Mo looked completely dumbstruck. He stared at the one-armed uncle in front of him, and he couldn't even say a word. Chu Mo took the storage ring off of his finger and threw it at uncle: “There are several Yuan beast materials in here. There's flesh, bones, and skin. It can sell for a lot of money. I don't know the ins-and-outs, so could you sell them? Take the money and repair the Fan Mansion. There's no need to make it rich and grand, but don't let it leak rain. It is too busted right now! The rest of the money.....you take care of the arrangements. Isn't grandfather always worried about those injured and retired soldiers? This money can solve a large amount of problems.”

The one-armed man was also a warrior that had broken the Yuan

Closure realm at that time. He easily opened the ring and searched around inside with his spirit. His face revealed a shocked color: “This.....where did this all come from?”

“Hunted.” Chu Mo said.

“Hunted by.....you?” The one-armed man looked at the intact Red Eye Ice Python skin, the intact bones, and head.....and he immediately trembled up and down. Even though that event happened several years ago, he still felt extreme dread every time he recalled it.

“Yes, I am now very formidable.” Chu Mo said, yet he mocked himself inside: Yes, very formidable, I can’t even protect the girl I like. You even let her be a sacrifice, truly formidable!

“Extremely good! Really extremely good! These things are worth a fortune! Each one of these items could be the grand finale at the auction!” The middle-aged one-armed man was extremely excited: “The house will be repaired. Otherwise the girl you like will be disappointed when she comes to visit!”

“.....” Chu Mo helplessly looked at the man who was the battlefield’s ferocious general, and a man who was clever in life. The corners of his mouth pulled, and he nodded: “Yes, you aren’t wrong. You speak with too much logic one-armed uncle. I have now seen, you are even more wise than you were before!”

“Ha ha ha, who do you think uncle is? I’m not trying to boast, but uncle used to be popular with the ladies back in the day. Women

with the big chests, big butts, and snow-white skin.....I could fish them out of the water.....cough cough.” One-armed uncle was excited, but he suddenly discovered Chu Mo looking at him strangely. His face immediately turned red: “Heh heh.....heh.....”

Chu Mo felt in a better mood all of the sudden. This is his home! Everyone here is his family. They are not blood-related, but there is no difference between them and true relatives. Of course one-armed uncle isn't that foolish. He didn't fail to realize what was going on with Chu Mo. Only he saw Chu Mo was unhappy, and he decided to poke fun at himself.

“One-armed uncle, I think we could now be considered rich.....” Chu Mo felt a little pain when he brought up the word rich. Originally.....he could have had much more money.

“Your personal problem, should you go settle it?” Chu Mo looked at the middle-aged one-armed uncle, and he said with a smile: “The big chested one you like, shouldn't you go find her? One-armed uncle should find a wife. I think your vision hasn't gone soft. Am I right?”

“Silly boy, you are so bold even with uncle!” The one-armed man looked at Chu Mo and revealed a smile. He immediately became happy, and he said to Chu Mo with a tinge of regret: “Little Mo, you have grown up!”

“Yes, I've grown up. Only the price of growing up is filled with pain.” Chu Mo curled his lips.

“Ha ha ha ha, what pain do you know boy?” One-armed uncle laughingly scolded, then he asked: “These Yuan beast materials are a large fortune. Do you not have any plans with it?”

Chu Mo thought of his previous dreams, laughed, and said: “Specifically, there’s nothing. But uncle, could we use this money to set up an organization?”

One-armed uncle’s brow slightly raised: “Organization? What organization? What do you want to do?”

Chu Mo spoke: “I want to use a power unknown by the outside world! I wish for this power to be spread all over Da Xia.....but, it would be best to extend across the whole Green Dragon continent! Then, I wish to be aware of everything that happens in the Green Dragon continent in the moment it occurs.”

“Then an intelligence organization?” The man didn’t mock Chu Mo’s whimsical idea, but he seriously asked: “And then what?”

“Then, I wish to use this influence to achieve some things I wish to do. For instance.....in the battlefield, it can be brought into play. It can also have a use for trade.....” Chu Mo looked at the one-armed man: “Uncle, is my idea a little naive?”

The one-armed man seriously thought a moment, then said: “The idea isn’t necessarily naive, but this needs a large amount of financial resources to support. Uncle doesn’t know what you plan to do after all, but uncle will certainly support you!”

“Hey, I know one-armed uncle’s heart hasn’t grown old.” Chu Mo happily smiled.

A man in his thirties that has cultivated to the Yuan Closure realm, how could he be a person without any aspirations inside? Losing his arm is practically the same as losing the cultivation path. Staying inside this military mansion could be considered a fatal attack for the one-armed uncle.

“Your uncle is still young.” The one-armed uncle smiled, then said: “In fact, there are a large amount of elite soldiers that leave the military each year for various reasons. Some are even dissatisfied in their retirement because they became accustomed to the military life. They don’t know what they should do besides the military.”

Chu Mo’s eyes lit up: “So?”

“So, these men can certainly form a considerable force if they are recruited. Who knows how many hundreds of times stronger than those underground societies in the secular world!” The one-armed middle-aged man earnestly said to Chu Mo: “But, these things must be kept a secret! Once it is known by the outside world.....a general’s decedent actually doing this kind of thing.....”

Chu Mo nodded, then softly said: “Yes, they could suspect we wish to revolt.”

“Right! Therefore, I am not suited to do this kind of thing, but I

can get in contact with these people. Your uncle had a group of life and death soldiers at that time.” The one-armed uncle exposed a tyrant aura, and he seemed to return to the all-powerful era of the battlefield.

“Okay, I will seek out the people that can do these things! Uncle only needs needs to help me get into contact. Then, help make this house look nice. I will certainly help uncle find a large chested, big butt, snow-white skinned wife!” Chu Mo seriously spoke.

“Fuck you!” The middle aged uncle was being teased by Chu Mo.

Soon after, the one-armed uncle looked at Chu Mo and said: “There’s still one thing.....”

Chu Mo looked at him: “Xia Jie?”

That name is a hurdle Chu Mo couldn’t avoid after returning to Yellow Flame City. He is the only son of the Da Xia prince. His genitals were trampled by Chu Mo with one kick, causing him to be inhuman. Chu Mo believed prince Xia Jing wouldn’t let him go easily.

But the current Chu Mo isn’t the same young boy that left Yellow Flame City half a year ago.

Don’t talk about Xia Jie, Chu Mo wouldn’t be afraid even if prince Xia Jing personally acted against him.

“Young master is the grasslands knight Lin Bai. He has wrecked the plans laid by Da Qi over the past twenty years. He personally raised a grassland queen! Are you afraid of a prince? [War is coming!](#)”

[TL: I believe this is Chu Mo talking to himself in the third person.]

The one-armed man looked at Chu Mo. He couldn't help but smile and say: “You boy, I don't know if your luck is good or what. Did you guess this after you left? Who knows why, but the emperor suddenly became angry. He dismissed prince Xia Jing's chief cabinet position. The emperor casually gave him an idle office, and he has already lost real authority!”

“What?” Chu Mo was immediately shocked, then he said: “How is it possible? His son was going to snatch a commoner's daughter on the streets. I crippled him before it happened. Xia Jing yet gave the order hunt and kill me. The emperor didn't say anything at that time. Why did he suddenly dismiss his position?”

“You don't know anything; however, I am also not too clear on the details of this matter. But there is a rumor. When Xia Jie was going to snatch that commoner girl, she was actually no ordinary daughter. Furthermore, she is now the youngest and most loved princess of the emperor!” The one-armed uncle mysteriously said: “The reason the emperor didn't act at that time is because he didn't want to create waves! But how could he easily let him go after?”

“You are speaking nonsense uncle.” Chu Mo speechlessly looked at the one-armed uncle: “Furthermore, I have seen the princesses

countless times at banquets before. That girl was soft and gentle. She wasn't infected by royalty in the slightest bit. How could she be the youngest and most loved princess? How could you forget one thing? Xia Jing is a prince! He is the emperor's personal younger brother! Don't tell me his son doesn't know his own sister?"

The one-armed man shook his head and said: "I have naturally thought of these things before, but seeing is believing. It is said that this princess was sent to a large sect when she was little. She was also kept in secret by the emperor. He didn't want others to know her status. You have never seen her because of this, and that little animal Xia Jie also didn't know her. There is logic."

"Could a person who has entered a large sect be so physically weak?" Chu Mo couldn't help but return a haughty look: "Don't talk nonsense.....I bet prince Xia Jing did something else to enrage the emperor."

"Cough.....perhaps, it is merely a rumor." One-armed uncle scratched his head: "But this is only good news for us."

"That isn't wrong." Chu Mo said.

"Good, rest well for a while. I will go on a trip. I will see how to take care of these treasures." The one-armed middle-aged man spoke elated. He looked at Chu Mo again: "Right, young master found a good teacher. At first glance, he appears to be a hidden power. He comes and goes without a trace, only his temper is a little bad."

“My master’s temper stinks. Tell the people in the house not to provoke him.” Chu Mo explained.

The one-armed middle-aged man nodded, then left with a happy face.

Chu Mo sat there, and he sneered: “Xia Jie.....your father is no longer chief of the cabinet. Do you still wish to seek trouble for me? Your grandfather is in a bad mood. I hope you brighten up for your sake, and not provoke me!”

Chu Mo had a painful expression when he spoke again. He grumbled: “My Yuan stones.....enough Yuan stones to cultivate for several years.....they were unexpectedly all swallowed! Don’t tell me it was because you inspected master? Apart from that poison.....you didn’t even tell me anything else! Everything unknown.....you should die. I believed myself very rich. I didn’t expect to instantly become a poor wretch.”

Chapter 59: Xu's Tenth Noble Son

“Little Black Chu.....little black Chu.....ha ha ha ha ha, you unexpectedly returned. Don't tell me you aren't afraid of the big devil eunuch finding you trouble? Come out come out come out! Quickly scurry out! Your old uncle Xu wants to see you!”

A voice shouted from far away outside as Chu Mo was painfully thinking about his lost Yuan stones. People who didn't know the situation would believe it was a call for revenge, just by hearing the voice alone. Chu Mo's face yet revealed a knowing smile.

He stood up, extended his right hand, pushed open the gate, and walked out. The shattered bones in his right arm had already reconnected, but they hadn't yet completely recovered. It still needed a period of time.

“Xu 2Fu, you bastard. You dare call out to me. I caught you when you were seven.....” Chu Mo shouted.

Chu Mo hadn't finished speaking when a pained voice shouted back: “Little black Mo, are you still not finished? That thing happened so many years ago. Why must you always bring it up? Do you not feel any shame?”

Chu Mo coldly smiled: “Okay, I won't talk about the time when you were seven. I'll speak a little more recently. Let's talk about last Autumn when you went to the minister of revenue's household. You fooled around with their daughter, then minister Guo discovered it. He chased you all the way to your house and

asked that you marry his daughter.”

“I say.....do you have a conscious? Do you specialize in opening my scars?” A helpless voice came from outside. Soon after, a figure walked in. A sad face looked at Chu Mo: “Your good uncle Xu watches after you with kindness and love. Is this how you welcome a brother?”

“Who made you hate me!” Chu Mo smiled. He extended out his left arm and gave Xu 2Fu a hug.

“What’s wrong with your right arm? Is it injured?” Xu 2Fu wrinkled his brow at Chu Mo. He sized Chu Mo up with his eyes: “Little black Mo, why do you feel a little different from before?”

“What is different?” Chu Mo gave a beaming smile to the handsome teenager that was a little bit shorter than himself: “I’m not missing an arm or a leg, or something like that.”

“No, no, you changed a lot!” Xu 2Fu’s brow wrinkled. He sized him up: “First, you were a little shorter than me half a year ago, and now.....you appear to be just as tall as me!”

“A little taller than you.” Chu Mo simply said.

“The same height!” The extremely handsome Xu 2Fu got a little mad: “The same!”

“Fine.....” Chu Mo returned a haughty look, he didn’t feel like

bothering with this fool.

“Let’s go go go! You finally returned. I don’t need to worry about you. Your brother is giving you a welcome dinner!” Xu 2Fu pulled Chu Mo along.

The veteran guards of the Fan Mansion turned a blind eye to Xu 2Fu. They had already become accustomed to this kind of strange scene.

Xu 2Fu is about the same as Little black Mo. They are both nicknames from childhood. Xu 2Fu is called that because his original name is Xu Fufu. Chu Mo decided to call him Xu 2Fu because the word ‘Fu’ is repeated twice. Xu 2Fu didn’t want to be outdone, so he threw away the Mo in Chu Mo’s name. Mo originally means ink, so he started calling Chu Mo Little black Chu because ink is black.

That is how these two names appeared. But there were very few people who called them this in the whole of Yellow Flame City!

Xu Fufu’s family background is very powerful. They are a family of officials, and high level officials at that!

His grandfather, Xu Zhongliang, is a vice-cabinet member. Chu Mo didn’t know if grandfather Xu went up in position after prince Xia Jing was dismissed. He thought it was a possibility. The the Xu family grandfather is merely sixty years old. He could be considered a strong young man in the royal court. He also always carried the deep trust of the emperor.

Xu Fufu's father, Xu Shan, is the mayor of the most important city in southern Da Xia. It was only a city, but the administrative level was equivalent to a province!

Da Xia was split up into provinces, prefectures, counties, and districts.....the highest level magistrates of provinces are known as Provincial Rulers. Provincial Rulers are already genuinely large officials of the regions in Da Xia.

Xu Fufu's father is merely forty years old, and he had already arrived to this status. Many people thought he could end up as a cabinet member within five years, just like his father! This is the Xu family.

In addition to Xu 2Fu's grandfather and father, his two uncles and aunts were also very extraordinary. They were practically all officials in positions of influence.

Because of this, the Xu family is called Da Xia's number one government family by several people!

It is obvious that their influence is enormous.

At Xu 2Fu's generation, several of his older brothers had already entered into various levels of Da Xia's government. They borrowed the family's influence, and continually kept their noses to the grindstone.

Perhaps because his father was never around, or he was the most spoiled by his grandfather, but Xu 2Fu has had a rebel nature since he was a child. It can become a very awful thing if son's of high level officials are spoiled by their families.

They can become bullies, tyrants, and simply childish. They can even become vile.

But Xu 2Fu didn't become that type of rich playboy. On the contrary, he is an academic, and a seldom seen genius. Not only is he learned, but he has read all the great writings of Da Xia at a very young age. This includes everything from ancient times to present.

He could even express his own unique understanding after reading them!

The prospects of a genius born in such a family is normally limitless. If he took the [imperial examinations](#), it would be no exaggeration to say he would be the top scorer!

[TL: Imperial examinations have a long history in China. For more information see: [Imperial Examinations](#)]

If you only looked at these examples, then Xu 2Fu would clearly be a bright shining star of the future!

He has a great family background, a family of high officials, personal talent, cultured, and extremely handsome. Even the emperor would be tempted to have his daughter marry him.

Don't even mention that the emperor really did know Xu 2Fu is outstanding, and he really had a thought to having a princess marry Xu 2Fu.

But.....the emperor quietly extinguished that idea after hearing of Xu 2Fu's accomplishments. He actually celebrated not bringing this up with Xu Zhongliang.

Because that young guy.....is too much!

At seven he peeped on his own maid bathing. By eight years old, he had already snuck into the brothel to drink wine. At nine he had paid the debt for a girl seven years older than himself.....the most popular girl at Yellow Flame City's largest brothel.....such types of achievements were simply too many to count.

The matter at the brothel especially caused a ruckus at that time.

The most popular girl was taken away. What boss would be happy? As a result, Xu 2Fu nearly tore the brothel down!

Even Xu 2Fu's father, Xu Shan, hurried back from the south because of the incident. He ruthlessly gave his foolish son a beating.

The final result.....he still couldn't change Xu 2Fu!

The most popular brothel girl at that time is said to be a top level beauty that even moved the heart of prince Xia Jing. She is still in

the Xu mansion even now! As far as something occurring between her and Xu 2Fu, that cannot be known.

This is merely the tip of the iceberg for the guy. The daughters of royalty and ministers, the concubines of business tycoons.....anyways, so long as he wishes, he is rarely unsuccessful.

Xu 2Fu once sympathetically said to Chu Mo in the past: “We are the same age. You are even a month older than me, but I am yet a highly skilled artist. And you.....have yet to touch the stem of a flower. It is truly a pity!”

This guy was such a player. It didn't matter if the girls were older or young, they all chased after him. The amount of aristocrats that accused Xu 2Fu of misconduct could fill up a whole house. Yet this guy was unaffected, and he continued on in his own style.

This guy had one great advantage. He never used force. Moreover, he always disdained the people that used force. In Xu 2Fu's own words: To use force is worse than the beasts! Men who are not tender to the fairer sex are the most bothersome!

But Yellow Flame City still had a saying: Guard against fire, thieves, and the tenth Xu! Xu Fufu is the tenth son in his generation. He is nicknamed the Xu's tenth noble son.

To say Xu 2Fu only had this ability would be another mistake. He is also the secret owner for the largest restaurant chain in Yellow Flame City!

There was only one person who knew this besides the restaurant bosses.

That is Chu Mo.

Because strictly speaking, Chu Mo also had a share of this industry!

The reason these restaurants opened is somewhat ridiculous. Xu 2Fu disliked other restaurant's dishes, so he decided to start his own. He didn't even say anything to his family. Who could have imagined it would become a hot business.....it accidentally became Yellow Flame City's number one restaurant.

Now he didn't dare tell his family. Otherwise there would be countless jealous people accusing him of misconduct once word got out.

Some of the Xu family probably knew about Xu 2Fu's business, but they weren't inclined to bother him. They probably never thought Xu 2Fu would become this big.

Xu 2Fu casually pulled Chu Mo to the largest restaurant in Yellow Flame City——[Gluttonous Ogre!](#)

[TL: The restaurant name is an actual Chinese mythological creature loosely translated as the Gluttonous Ogre. You can read more about it here: [Taotie](#)]

This restaurant is one owned by Xu 2Fu, and it is also the first one he built at ten years old.

Chu Mo came up with the name of the restaurant. Xu 2Fu has profound knowledge. He is a learner of [the hundred schools of thought](#), and he is also a poetic intellectual.

[TL: [Hundred schools of thought](#)]

The hundred schools of thought are used to deal with his family; Poetic knowledge is used to deceive the girls.

But he is not as good as Chu Mo when it comes to miscellaneous knowledge.

Xu 2Fu ran to Chu Mo at that time, and he requested Chu Mo help with the name. Chu Mo casually said: “The real eaters are like Gluttonous Ogres. They will dare eat anything, so call it Gluttonous Ogre.”

Chu Mo merely casually said this. Who would have thought Xu 2Fu was actually serious, and used this as the name. Who knows how many people laughed at the name of the restaurant when it first opened. But in the end, the fame of Gluttonous Ogre spread more and more. Countless people requested a seat in Gluttonous Ogre, but they couldn't get one.

“Little black brother Mo, half of our restaurant is yours. Your profits have been recorded on the books for you. Several branches have opened over the past two years, but.....there is still a large portion of them belonging to you.” Xu 2Fu appeared pleased with

himself as he looked at Chu Mo: “Isn’t brother wonderful?”

“Don’t cause a fuss. This is all made by you. I didn’t help in the slightest. I know you consider me your best brother, but I will be really mad if you act like this!” Chu Mo seriously looked at Xu 2Fu, and he spoke solemnly

“You still have no interest? I’m clearly praising you! How can you be that unreasonable? Did you not come up with the restaurant name? Didn’t several of the business ideas come from you? Several of the employee recommendations.....were they not given by you?” Xu 2Fu returned a Haughty look: “Don’t say that you didn’t help. Do you not know? The things you have helped with, any business tycoon would consider you a priceless treasure! The business immediately increases if they receive your personal instruction. Do you think that is worth nothing?”

“I have always felt greedy by only giving you half. I never thought that you would want nothing. Little black Mo, carry on with me! Otherwise, we won’t be brothers later on!” Xu 2Fu angrily said.

Chu Mo curled his lips: “Do not threaten me so much. I do not wish to say this to you, but this noble son has been in a bad mood recently. Be careful when provoking me, or I’ll beat you!”

“Damn, do you have Yuan power? I’m not inclined to test it, but I must tell you, your Xu family uncle isn’t the same uncle he was half a year ago!” Xu 2Fu immediately pulled up his sleeves and muttered: “Come, but don’t say I beat up a little one-armed cripple.....ah!”

“A.....aaaaaaaaah!”

Crash!

Chapter 60: Miao Yiniang

“Your Chu Mo brother is still the Chu Mo brother that you could never beat!”

Xu 2Fu’s stance still wasn’t ready, and Chu Mo’s figure flashed and circled around behind Xu 2Fu. He was kicked in the butt and sent flying.

Xu 2Fu ruthlessly fell to the ground on his butt, and then climbed back up with an enraged face. He wanted to find Chu Mo and fight with all his might: “Little black Chu, you are especially underhanded. You dare sneak attack!.....I’ll fight you!”

A large crowd gathered around the gate of the Gluttonous Ogre at this time. People recognized the status of the two, especially Chu Mo. Several people looked at him with a completely shocked face.

They never thought the person personally kicked out by prince Xia Jing half a year ago.....would actually return!

Especially since prince Xia Jing was dismissed from the Grand Secretary position in the cabinet not long after Chu Mo left. The situation held countless mystery.

A soft voice suddenly came from inside the restaurant: “Two people have grandfathers with status, and yet they are fighting in the street.....aren’t they afraid of becoming jokes?”

The voice was soft, sweet, and bored. It simply made a person feel mushy in their bones.

The angered expression on Xu 2Fu's face quickly disappeared. He slapped the dust off his butt, and he ran towards the restaurant doors with a smiling expression: "He he he he, [wife](#), why have you come out?"

[TL: Xu 2Fu often calls her wife as a joke. Because.....well.....that's just Xu 2Fu.]

"Hurry hurry hurry, your hair is a mess. Stop making the place look cheap!" A beautiful girl with an enchanting expression softly stepped outside of the restaurant.

Several of the surrounding spectators were stunned.

"Isn't that the Miao Yiniang, the lady boss of the Gluttonous Ogre? Heavens.....she's too pretty! If my wife was that beautiful, I would do her eight times a day....."

"Would you? Eight times.....three seconds each time?"

"Ha ha ha, brother, as the proverb goes, don't expose the weak points of others when joking....."

"I heard that Gluttonous Ogre's boss is very mysterious. She rarely appears in public. Looks like Xu's tenth noble son has been given a lot of face!"

“I feel noble son Chu has even more face!”

“Yes, Xu’s tenth noble son comes here all the time, and I’ve never seen her come out. Noble son Chu comes here once, and she instantly comes out. Looks like noble son Chu has been given even more face!”

The surrounding crowd talked among themselves. A couple people’s faces changed color when they saw Chu Mo, then they quietly turned and left the crowd.

Chu Mo saw the Miao Yiniang, and his face immediately gave off a smile: “Sister, we meet again!”

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, and she also held a smiling expression that came from the bottom of her heart: “You returned! Really good!”

“Hey! Could you two stop flirting right in front of me. You are my wife! Do you feel like having secret lover?” Xu 2Fu jealously looked at the two, then he glowered at Chu Mo: “Wait until I get back at you for kicking my ass. But I must make one thing clear right now, you must not covet your friend’s wife!”

“Take a secret lover my ass! Xu 2Fu, I will rip you apart if you dare speak such rubbish again!” The girls beautiful eyes shot out a dangerous light. Xu 2Fu immediately trembled. Then he muttered out of the corner of his mouth: “So feisty to the boss, who would dare marry you in the future?”

“What does it matter to you if I’m unmarriable?” Miao Yiniang returned a haughty look, then she took the two to the top floor to sit.

The Gluttonous Ogre has five floors altogether. It could be considered a relatively high building in Yellow Flame City. A five story building naturally had a very nice and wide view.

Only adults with extremely high status would normally be able to enter the fifth floor to eat.

Several people made a ruckus about this rule in the past. They felt a small restaurant actually dared be so arrogant. They really set up such a rule? They are simply acting recklessly!

As a result, anyone that caused a ruckus would have the crap scared out of them, and they would obediently apologize later. Not a single person dared cause a disturbance after some time.

The rules of Gluttonous Ogre slowly took shape over this process. This already become a consensus among people of all statuses. Also, only Gluttonous Ogre had this rule in all of Yellow Flame City.

Other places tried to copy it, but the rule didn’t last more than a few days. The boss would simply be switched.....giving government officials rules, are they asking for death?

Several people were suspicious of the Gluttonous Ogre’s

background. A rumor started to spread. People said Gluttonous Ogre was supported by a sect! They said the boss Miao Yiniang came from a sect herself!

This caused people to not dare investigate the Gluttonous Ogre restaurant.

Sect!

That word alone was already enough.

There was a room on the fifth floor. The room normally wouldn't even be opened if a prince came!

The room didn't appear large from the outside. It also wasn't too eye-catching. Very few people knew that this room was especially built for Chu Mo and Xu Fufu.

The outside wasn't large, but the inside was a paradise. Genuine ancient artifacts were casually decorated all around. It was worth a fortune! Paintings were placed all over the walls, and they were all famous works by masters of past dynasties. A person who knew art would certainly tremble with fear and become deathly angry. They would believe the boss was insane by casually decorating with so many precious treasures.

Miao Yiniang brought the two inside. She welcomed them to a rustic table. Miao Yiniang looked at the dirty Xu 2Fu, and she couldn't help but snicker: "How is it, did you give him the

money?”

Xu 2Fu returned a haughty look, and he snorted: “You already know the answer!”

“If I must say, you two old farts are sure stubborn.....one tries with all his might to give the other money; the other, would rather die than take it. In fact, it looks like you two are bored!” Miao Yiniang sat the two down next to the window, and then she leisurely sat by Chu Mo’s side. She carefully sized up Chu Mo. Miao’s eyes revealed a trace of surprise: “Chu Mo seems to have changed a lot over the past half year!”

“He has had a fart’s change! You first speak, how can we appear bored?” Xu 2Fu was in a fit of anger, and he returned a haughty look. He didn’t even admit that he believed Chu Mo changed earlier.

Miao Yiniang simply said: “Are you two not brothers?”

Xu 2Fu curled his lips, yet he still said: “Stop speaking nonsense, of course we are brothers!”

Chu Mo laughed: “Although he is a little foolish, but he is my only brother in Yellow Flame City!”

Xu 2Fu eyes flashed a trace of emotion. Sons of high officials can make friends easy, but becoming brothers is very difficult.

“Then, you would help the other if he needs anything? Would you turn a blind eye to them?” Miao Yiniang asked again.

“Of course not!” The two said in unison.

Xu 2Fu somewhat angrily said: “I was in the south being scolded by my father when Little black Chu had problems. Chu Mo had already left Yellow Flame City when I got the news. That bastard Xia Jie was made an eunuch by Chu Mo. He has spent the whole time hiding at home, refusing to face reality. I wanted to give him a ruthless beating several times, but I have never found the opportunity. I was scolded by my grandfather later on. He said I didn’t have any troubles, so I shouldn’t go seeking trouble! But in my heart.....I am still unhappy!”

Xu 2Fu’s eyes became a little red. He was always felt shame that he couldn’t help his brother. Otherwise, he could not have immediately come to give Chu Mo money when he returned.

Xu 2Fu never thought Chu Mo would refuse. It made him feel hurt.

“Do we have to use such an explanation?” Chu Mo looked at Xu 2Fu a little touched: “Do you not know me, or do I not understand you?”

Miao Yiniang sat to the side. She looked at the two young talents of Yellow Flame City with much interest. She said with a smile: “Both of you look. Both of you young masters understand logic. You were making a disturbance, and being made a fools. Don’t tell

me you are bored? Looks like I am a little excessive here. Fine, you two have a talk. I will go prepare you two uncles some food!”

“Come back in a moment and share a drink with me, wife!” Xu 2Fu yelled recklessly.

Whoosh!

Mia Yiniang had already walked to the door, and she threw a vase towards Xu 2Fu.

“Fuck!” Xu 2Fu caught the vase, and sweat trickled down his face. Shaken, he said: “This is a three hundred year old vase from the palace. I couldn’t pay for it even If I sold you!”

“Humph!” Miao Yiniang snorted. She was too lazy to pay him anymore heed, so she turned and left.

“This girl.....she is truly a thorny evil spirit!” Xu 2Fu looked at the door in a crazed daze.

“You are cheap.” Chu Mo summarized extremely simply.

“What would I do if I’m not cheap?” Xu 2Fu returned a haughty look and said: “Should I mix in with the officials like my grandfather, father, and uncles? Wouldn’t that depress me to death? I would have to argue every day with a group of boring men. They are even excited about arguing. They are truly a group of idiots.”

“.....” Chu Mo was completely stunned. This guy scolded his whole family in a few short sentences.

“Right, isn’t your grandfather the Grand Secretary now?” Chu Mo asked Xu 2Fu.

“Yes, that idiot Xia Jing finally opened up the position. My grandfather naturally took his place.” Xu 2Fu was still quite proud of his grandfather becoming the Grand Secretary, even though he didn’t like his family being officials.

That position is said to be the highest office!

It is truly beneath one man, and above ten thousand!

The Grand Secretary holds supreme power of Da Xia. Many times, even the emperor must listen to the Grand Secretary’s suggestions.

“This is a good thing.” Chu Mo nodded. He felt happy for his brother.

He was naturally very close with the Xu family. The two were always together ever since they were little. Chu Mo was often at the Xu household whenever he wasn’t in a military camp. Grandfather Xu Zhonglian was now the Grand Secretary, and he really liked Chu Mo. Furthermore, he felt Chu Mo was a talent. Everytime Xu Zhonglian scolded his grandson, he used Chu Mo as

an example of who to be.

Xu 2Fu was forced to study the hundreds of texts, and he was nothing like Chu Mo. If Xu 2Fu had a choice, He would spend all his time chasing after women.

“Hey, it could be called a good thing or a bad thing. Grandfather returned home on time almost every day before becoming the Grand Secretary. And now.....he is not seen for several days. His hair has become very white, and there is a lot of pressure. I really don't get the picture. Political aspirations.....are they that important?”

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “I also don't understand. But, perhaps it's their calling in life.”

“So speak about that thing. What are you considering?” Xu 2Fu looked at Chu Mo: “The experience with Xia Jie, I think.....you must have thought it through.”

“Yes. Power is really very important! But you and I both don't wish to be like your family members. There is too much intrigue and fighting all day. Therefore, we can only establish an underground power that belongs to us!” Chu Mo softly spoke: “Only, I do not wish the emperor to be suspicious.”

“Shit! Do you think the emperor wouldn't be suspicious of us?” Xu 2Fu returned a haughty look: “The grandson of the Grand Secretary, and the grandson of an influential general, together establishing an underground organization. Would you be afraid if

you were the emperor?”

“Then it’s best to not let him know.” Chu Mo had already come to a similar decision. He looked at Xu 2Fu: “And what about Miao Yiniang?”

Xu 2Fu’s mouth twitched a few times: “You can tell her if you want to, but I don’t dare. If I go tell her.....she will rip me to pieces.”

Outsiders would never think about two young masters from a distinguished noble lineage. Apart from being clever and handsome, they didn’t think anything special of them.

But in reality, the power of these two combined could make the whole Yellow Flame City.....feel a tremble!

Chapter 61: That Year

Miao Yiniang quickly came back carrying an enormous serving tray. She brought back several exquisite dishes and placed them on the table. She also brought a pot of warm wine back with her. Miao Yiniang placed it between the two and said: “You two young masters drink slow, I still have a few things I’m busy with.....”

“Wait.” Xu 2Fu quickly spoke.

“What?” Miao Yiniang coldly looked at Xu 2Fu and groaned. She duly said: “Are you trying to hit on me again?”

Xu 2Fu pulled back his neck. He looked over at the three hundred year old vase which was recently thrown at him. Xu 2Fu had set it next to him on the window sill. His mouth twitched, and then he said: “Little black Chu has something to tell you.”

“Ah?” Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo: “You are finally agreeing? You promise to take me as a maid?”

“.....” Chu Mo was at a complete loss. He used his hands to cover his face, then reluctantly said: “Are you remembering that?”

Xu 2Fu had a jealous expression: “I say.....big sister Miao, why must you be like this? The person who rescued you that time..... was also me! I also helped! Why must you always think to only repay little black Chu? What kind of logic is that? It’s simply insane!”

Miao Yiniang glanced over at Xu 2Fu, then she gracefully sat down next to Chu Mo. A burst of fragrant wind came by. Chu Mo shuffled over to the window without batting an eyelid.

Miao Yiniang was a little hurt: “Look, do you know why?”

“Isn’t this cheap.....” Xu 2Fu couldn’t help but give a haughty look: “Do you like him because he always avoids you? Fine, your Xu family uncle will go far far away from you starting tomorrow!”

“I long for the day, I couldn’t be thankful enough!” Miao Yiniang said.

“.....” Xu 2Fu was enraged. He lifted up a pot of alcohol and downed it in one gulp. Then he said: “I see, you don’t like me. Ah, you let a handsome devil like me go, but you actually want an ugly guy like little black Chu. I’m really deeply hurt!”

Miao Yiniang lovingly smiled. She paid Xu 2Fu no mind, but instead turned to look at Chu Mo. Her beautiful eyes fell on Chu Mo: “Well is it about that?”

Chu Mo shook his head: “Sister, you were originally a sect member of noble status. Why bother fulfilling that promise? I told you back then, rescuing you.....I was really just at the right place at the right time. I never wanted you to repay anything. You have helped me all these years. It’s already enough! There would be no Gluttonous Ogre today without you. I couldn’t have fled Yellow Flame City without you. Neither Xu 2Fu nor my grandfather were

here at that time. There was only you.”

“So, strictly speaking, I saved you once. You have also saved me once. We are already even. If you wish to leave, 2Fu and I cannot say anything.”

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo with her captivating smile: “Sister likes your serious manner.”

Pfft!

Xu 2Fu sprayed out the mouthful of food he was about to swallow. He angrily looked at Miao Yiniang: “Little black Chu, the Xu family grandfather was wrong about you. What flower hasn’t been groped by you? You are clearly an experienced playboy! Your skill at loosening the reins to grasp them better is a true beauty.”

Chu Mo dully looked at Xu 2Fu: “Stick to business.”

“Cough.....” Xu 2Fu was defeated by Chu Mo’s three words. Dejected, he said with a sad face: “Fine, ah, one less wife is just one less. The falling flowers are yearning for love, but the heartless brook ripples on. What else can I say?”

Miao Yiniang seriously looked at Chu Mo now: “Whatever you need me to do, only speak it and it’s done. Anyways, you don’t accept me as your maid, but I still see you as my young master!”

“And me?” Xu 2Fu expectantly looked at Miao Yiniang.

“You are my young master’s brother and my boss.” Miao Yiniang smiled at Xu 2Fu.

“Give me a bucket! I need to spit blood!” Xu 2Fu returned a dirty look and muttered.

Chu Mo chose not to acknowledge the fool. He looked at Miao Yiniang and said: “I want my own power!”

“Ah?” Miao Yiniang’s pupils flickered as she looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo continued on: “I desire this power to do many things for me after it develops! But I only need it to give me various information at the present stage.”

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo a little surprised: “Why do you suddenly want to do that? Do you wish to give your grandfather trouble? Damn, my young master really isn’t easy. You think to do something like this, but when it comes to taking me as a maid.....”

“Can we not bring that up?” Chu Mo looked frustrated.

“Okay, you are young master, you’ve just agreed!” Miao Yiniang seemed to be very happy. Her face was all smiles: “Speak, what do you want me to do?”

“I want.....to make you responsible for this matter.” Chu Mo said: “After all, with 2Fu and my status.....we can’t do this while being in the spotlight.”

Miao Yiniang thought it over, then nodded: “Okay, this is no problem, but I also have a question.”

Chu Mo pathetically looked at Miao Yiniang: “So long as it isn’t about becoming my maid.....”

Miao Yiniang scoffed off her smile, gave Chu Mo a dirty look, and angrily said: “Of course it isn’t about that! My question is, what degree do you want to develop this power to? Speak directly. What is your wild ambition? Subvert the royal power? Do you wish to be the king of the underworld?”

“Subvert royal power? No, I have never thought of doing that. But, setting up a formidable power, and becoming the king of the underworld.....this is a possibility!” Chu Mo’s voice was slow and even as he said each word. An unspeakable aura emitted from his body.

Xu 2Fu couldn’t help but be shocked. He mumbled: “This guy..... he really changed!”

Miao Yiniang’s beautiful eyes became even more colorful. She smiled and said: “It looked like you experienced many things over the past half year! You’ve had such an unexpected and large transformation, but I like it!”

Chu Mo face was steady, but he bitterly smiled inside: Sister, how could you begin to know what I have experienced over the past half year?

Xiaoyu disappeared from this world because of me. The person that caused her to leave is already dead, but they were from Da Qi!

What is Da Qi? Da Qi is one of the Green Dragon continent's number one powers!

The combined power of Da Qi is no less powerful than the mighty empire of Da Xia!

He had never directly crossed swords with Da Qi, but the hatred of both sides.....is to the death!

Chu Mo also didn't feel he could keep hiding his status. Da Qi would know one day that he destroyed the plans they set up for twenty years.....and the main linchpin is the grandson of a Da Xia general.

Would they let him go at that time?

Chu Mo wasn't the kind of person to take a beating while sitting down. There was pride and stubbornness in his bones that ordinary people couldn't comprehend.

"I think, it is feasible!" Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, then she looked at Xu 2Fu: "You two young masters sit tight. I believe.....it

won't be difficult!"

"I will have one-armed uncle come find you for specific matters. He has several elite soldiers that have retired in his hand. The degree of loyalty for those soldiers doesn't need to be stated. Their personal skills are all extraordinary. They can form the initial foundation for our power."

Miao Yiniang nodded: "Very good!"

Xu 2Fu suddenly said: "If it is like this, I think our Gluttonous Ogre should start a wide scale expansion! It will not only give us money, but it will also provide a prime shelter!"

"Not bad, only.....is there enough money?" Chu Mo thought of his Yuan stones and felt very painful.

"There is enough money in the accounts to open up ten branches with some leftover." Miao Yiniang said with a smile: "You two bosses don't even do anything. Let me take care of the business. There's no need to question me. If I had a mind, I would already be one of the richest women in Da Xia!"

"Ha ha, we are all family. Why do you cause a divide?" Xu 2Fu was the kind of person to take advantage even in death.

Miao Yiniang stared at Xu 2Fu and said: "Shut your mouth! Otherwise this girl will throw you out the window!"

“So violent. I didn’t mean it like that.....” Xu 2Fu weakly explained.

Miao Yiniang grabbed a pot of wine. She first gave it to Chu Mo to drink, then to Xu 2Fu, and finally she took a large drink herself. She looked at the two after finishing, and she said with emotion: “I will speak honestly. I am much older than you two masters, but this life is still yours! Therefore, your business is my business! Don’t worry two young masters, Yiniang will do her best!”

Miao Yiniang took a cup and toasted.

Chu Mo and Xu 2Fu looked at each other, and then they both took a drink.

Xu 2Fu said: “Little black brother is right. We were only in the right place at the right time when we saved you. There is no reason to keep this promise.”

Chu Mo nodded.

Then Xu 2Fu said: “And big sister is so beautiful!”

“.....” Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang were both completely stunned. They speechlessly stared at Xu 2Fu.

“Cough cough.....my meaning is, even if other people encounter this kind of thing, they could not sit back and idly watch.’ Xu 2Fu lacked confidence as he explained.

Chu Mo saw the reddish eyes of Miao Yiniang, and he remembered what happened at that time.

One must speak about the time four years ago when talking about Miao Yiniang.

Chu Mo and Xu 2Fu were only nine years old at that time.

They would just be snot-nosed babies if they were in an ordinary house, but these two had done many things that far surpassed the adults by the time they were nine.

Right, that was the year Xu 2Fu paid the debt for the most popular hostess at Yellow Flame City's largest brothel.

Xu 2Fu suffered a lot of pressure because of this. He not only received pressure from his family, but also pressure from different social circles. There was obviously a lot of strong support behind the largest brothel in Yellow Flame City. There was even a rumor going around. People said the hidden boss was prince Xia Jing.

But everyone knew the part about Chu Mo and Xu 2Fu was no rumor.

It takes at least seven or eight years for a brothel to raise a proper hostess. It could even take ten years. This process requires a lot of resources and meticulous care to train an excellent hostess.

It doesn't need to be stated how much resources and energy the most popular hostess consumed.

Even the best brothel couldn't afford to lose their most popular hostess.

The so-called most popular one was snatched away by Xu 2Fu, the important son of a top-level official. The brothel was miserable.

They would probably go bankrupt within a few years.

The brothel tried every possible way. They used the carrot and the stick, called on several relations, and requested Xu 2Fu give up the hostess.

But this time, the person supporting Xu 2Fu to take away the hostess.....was Chu Mo!

The girl would have an extremely miserable fate if Xu 2Fu didn't take her away!

In theory, brothel hostesses are skilled talents that don't sell their bodies. Each one of them possesses unordinary skills. They could play instruments, play [Go](#), read, paint, embroider, etc.

The most popular was naturally the most skilled.

But the part about not selling the body.....really exists only in theory. The idea of these girls only selling artistic skill was a thin piece of paper. It was easily poked through by people of power!

The person who had their eyes on the hostess was none other than the cabinet's Grand Secretary. The man with the most power in Da Xia——Xia Jing!

Chapter 62: Those Former Events

Ordinarily this would be no big deal. Scholars visit brothels. It is an elegant thing.

Xia Jing was nearing sixty years old, but he took extremely good care of himself. He had a scholarly aura and a temperament of someone with high status and authority. It was enough to attract countless women.

When a man like him, a prince and Grand Secretary, patronizes a brothel hostess, it is normally be considered a great fortune to her.

This type of thing would fail to make Xu 2Fu and Chu Mo meddle in another person's business.

But a rumor circulated in the upper circles of Da Xia. Although Xia Jing is the prince and the Grand Secretary, he has a significantly perverted habit! That is, he likes to torture pretty young girls to death!

This rumor was actually already a fact.....a tragic fact!

Because over the years, several popular hostesses from the top level brothels disappeared without a trace. There was never any questions, as if they never existed at all.

Many people thought a grand person was buying them out when it first started. They were becoming outer workers or concubines.

But in this world, there is no wall that gossip cannot penetrate. Gradually, a shocking rumor began to spread: The prince Xia Jing engaged in excessive amounts of debauchery when he was younger. Some time after giving birth to his son Xia Jie, he lost the ability to have sex.

What does an overflowingly powerful adult that can have any woman lack? Several hundred women had been conquered in the prince's mansion. Not being able to have sex.....is simply the greatest punishment from the heavens!

This is a the greatest disgrace as a man! Don't even mention that he is a prince.

Xia Jing searched for a medical cure when it first started. Who knows how many top grade medicines and Yuan pills he acquired. But everything.....was completely useless.

Everything was strong from head to toe.....apart from that place.

It is an enormous torment and disgrace for a man. A person might not suffer over a short period, but who could bear it over a long period of time?

As a result, the psychology of Da Xia's incomparably dignified man started to change.

He started to persecute the women in his palace in the beginning.

The affair spread after he tormented wildly and killed several.

As a result, Xia Jing changed his target to the most popular hostesses at Yellow Flame City's brothels.

Those women were cut off from the world, talented and good-looking, and they lacked any status. No one would dare come running before Xia Jing and ask for justice if one of them died.

The even more terrifying thing is this. Xia Jing's degree of perversion increased with his age!

Some of the women in his hands would occasionally survive when he first started, but later on, not a single one could live on and return to the world.

Who in Da Xia would dare challenge the prince besides the emperor? And who would dare run to the emperor and accuse his son?

So Xia Jing became reckless and wanton outside the law.

Xia Jing was scared to the heavens the first time he saw that hostess. He thought she was a heavenly fairy, and he began to have feelings for her. But he knew his own defects well. This girl would certainly not live once she fell into his hands.

As a result, he constantly controlled and endured. Because after all, a hostess like her could bring his brothel an enormous profit.

Furthermore, it would be bad practice to touch his own brothels hostess.

Later on.....who would dare be a hostess for this brothel? Even the brothel manager would hold resentment against him.

Anyone would be afraid of his high authority, but at the same time, the people below him need to make money. He cannot commit offenses to the below below him.

But he finally couldn't bear it in the end. He drank too much, and the expression in his eyes was full of desire for the hostess.

Other people didn't notice, but the hostess herself.....she saw it clearly. She thought of the rumors she had heard, and was immediately scared out of her mind.

She went and begged to the boss, but the boss said she was being overly sensitive. He said the prince is the brothel's real owner. How could he cut down his own money tree?

Coincidentally, this was the first time Xu 2Fu snuck away from home to visit the brothel and drink. He mentioned his family name after arriving at the brothel, then said he wanted the most popular hostess.

As a result, he ran into this stunning beauty with red eyes, like she has just finished crying. Xu 2Fu naturally had to ask. Does she not like young master? Does she think young master too young? Is

that why she weeps?

The terrified hostess realised Xu 2Fu wasn't a snot-nosed little child after finding out his real status. She told everything to Xu 2Fu. Then the tears started flowing. She would rather end her own life than be tortured to death.

Xu 2Fu liked the stunning beauty at first glance. How could he watch her certain death? Xu 2Fu slapped his chest on the spot and said he would certainly rescue her.

That is the story that shocked Yellow Flame City. A nine year old noble son redeemed a sixteen year old hostess.

Chu Mo also participated in that story, but it was all kept in the dark. The two noble sons' power and methods combined, and they accomplished the task in the end.

The brothel owner made noise for a long time, and Xia Jing was also secretly enraged. It is said he broke a lot of valuable antiques. But he could only settle the matter by leaving it unsettled in the end. He is the dynasty's Grand Secretary. Is he going to go argue with his assistant's grandson?

Even if he spoke with Xu Zhongliang, nine times out of ten the old man would say: Children act on their own. He's softhearted, and he couldn't watch the girl fall to prostitution.....

What could Xia Jing say to these words?

Xu Shan hurried up from the south and ruthlessly gave Xu 2Fu a beating. So why was Xu Shan then silent about the matter afterwards? He found out the truth from his son, and he began to look down upon prince Xia Jing's perverted hobby!

On the outside he ruthlessly punished his son, but on the depths inside, he yet secretly praised his own son's actions!

He could make that old bastard suffer, and he even stole away his brothel's most popular girl.....this is something to be overjoyed about!

Of course, as a father, he couldn't raise his son that way, so Xu 2Fu got a beating.

Xu 2Fu left home afterwards in a depressed state!

He and Chu Mo decided to head towards the military camp and relax.

Then along the road, they encountered the injured Miao Yiniang!

Miao Yiniang was being hunted down by people at the time. She suffered serious injury and would soon be beyond cure. She saw Chu Mo and Xu Fufu from far away, and she believed them to be saviors. Miao Yiniang saw they were just children when they got close, and she lost all hope, fainting on the spot.

Miao Yiniang wasn't as elegant at that time. She was covered in dirt and blood. Normal children would have turned and ran.

But Chu Mo and Xu Fufu only looked at each other. They lifted Miao Yiniang up and ran off. The two were young, but they both had begun cultivating Yuan power. Lifting up a person was naturally no problem.

They found a secret location and hid Miao Yiniang inside. Then Chu Mo made Xu Fufu stay and watch Miao Yiniang. He tore off a piece of bloody clothes, returned to the original location, and waited there.

Seven or eight men came by after a short time. They looked vicious. They pointed their blades at Chu Mo once they saw him, and they asked if he had seen an injured girl.

Chu Mo acted scared, and he brought the group to a riverbank several miles away. He said a girl jumped in the river here, and she was swept by the water.

The group carefully searched all around, and they finally discovered a piece of bloody cloth in the brush. It was definitely the cloth worn by Miao Yiniang. They completely believed, and they didn't make things difficult for Chu Mo. The men then pursued to lower reaches of the river.

Miao Yiniang avoided being seized!

Xu 2Fu's trip to the military camp never completed, because he carried Miao Yiniang to Yellow Flame City. He found an extremely hidden place to heal her wounds. Miao Yiniang then stayed in Yellow Flame City after her injuries healed.

Chu Mo and Xu Fufu never asked about her history. Miao Yiniang also never said. But just by looking at her talent, Miao Yiniang should be a cultivator from a sect. She never denied this point.

Several people tried to cause trouble when the Gluttonous Ogre opened, but they were practically all taken care of by Miao Yiniang.

The room became quiet. The three seemed to recollect former events.

The event four years ago had a deep influence on the three. Chu Mo kicking Xia Jie into an Eunuch definitely had something to do with those events. He felt the father and son were both animals, and not even death could wipe out their crimes.

"All in the past, I heard Xia Jing fell out of favor. Ha ha, those events are worth a toast." Chu Mo lifted up the pot of wine and poured three glasses. Then he lifted his glass and laughed: "I believe, we will be even better in the future!"

Miao Yiniang radiant pupils flickered. She looked at Chu Mo and said: "Right, this girl also believes the future will be even better!"

Xu Fufu raised a glass and sighed: “Hey, I’m down a wife, it’s really sad! I’ve lost my love. I need to get drunk, you two don’t speak to me!”

“Cut it!” Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang both gave Xu Fufu a dirty look.

“Fool!” Chu Mo said.

“Really stupid.” Miao Yiniang nodded: “I don’t know how Liu Mei’er endures you. She is dead set on you.”

Liu Mei’er was the popular hostess at that time.

Liu Mei’er lived in Yellow Flame City at one of Xu Fufu’s courtyards after being redeemed. He took her out and made her a manager of the Gluttonous Ogre when it opened shop. There was a lot of interaction between her and Miao Yiniang. The two were like sisters. Miao Yiniang was naturally very familiar with Liu Mei’er’s situation.

“Ha ha ha, that is my Mei’er.....of course she is dead set on me!” Xu Fufu said pleased with himself.

“Is big sister Mei still good?” Chu Mo asked.

“She says she really wants to thank you.” Miao Yiniang said smiling.

Xu Fufu immediately got mad. He looked at Chu Mo angry: “Little black Chu.....!”

Chu Mo looked innocent: “What does this have to do with me?”

“How could it not have to do with you? Mei’er still won’t let me touch her. She says I swindled her, and the real savior is you.....” Xu Fufu looked like he would spit blood: “Uncle has such bad luck! I donate money, donate energy, and even get a beating, yet I don’t get the least bit of credit in the end.....”

“Ha ha ha.....” Chu Mo almost passed out laughing. He looked at the fool and said: “Some day, how about I give you a good recommendation when I see sister Mei?”

“Fine fine, but don’t tell her anything. I want to try myself. Little black Chu, everyone says I am the number one playboy in Yellow Flame City, but that is when I’m not with you! Whenever I am with you, all the beautiful women only see you! They must all have eye diseases!” Xu Fufu returned a dirty look and muttered.

A noisy sound suddenly came from down below. The three at the table couldn’t help but wrinkle their brows.

Chapter 63: Provincial Governor's Noble Son

Chu Mo looked at Miao Yiniang: “There are still people causing trouble here?”

Miao Yiniang's face also carried an uncertain color. She said: “It has been a long time since anyone caused trouble.”

Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo and laughed: “Perhaps they came for you!”

Chu Mo curled his lips and coldly said: “It must be said, many more people hate you in Yellow Flame City than hate me!”

“Fine, you two calm down, I'll go down and look.” Miao Yiniang said. She stood up and moved to leave.

Xu Fufu said: “Since the opportunity is here, let's go together. Who is so blind that they would dare run into my territory and cause trouble?”

Miao Yiniang said: “That's enough. Who in Yellow Flame City knows this is your business?”

Xu Fufu laughed: “This is simply seeing injustice on a journey, grabbing a sword, and helping!” He looked with bad intentions at Miao Yiniang's bursting chest: “My blade is very good, do you want to try?”

“Scram!” Miao Yiniang kicked Xu Fufu in the butt, directly sending him out of the room.

The noisy sound below became even more distinct as soon as the door opened. A young man could be heard yelling unsatisfied: “I have really never seen a restaurant like yours, you actually won’t let me go upstairs? Fuck, uncle has plenty of money! Do you know who my father is? Do you want your restaurant shut down?”

“Ha ha, who is your father? I should go ask your mother. How could outsiders like us know? Our little restaurant’s business is really good. You should just accept the situation and move on. Does noble son disagree?” Miao Yiniang talked as she moved downstairs. She gave Chu Mo and Xu Fufu a passing glance along the way.

The noisy group of people were on the third floor.

In fact, the third floor was the most lavishly decorated floor!

This floor was made up of several large and small rooms. Each room was carefully decorated, and had its own unique style. It showed very high quality and taste, but the rooms were not pompous or gaudy.

The richest people in Yellow Flame City likes this floor the most. Even several of the people that could eat on the fourth floor chose to stay on the third.

The fourth floor decorations were reserved. People without self-restraint felt it wasn't good. Furthermore, the entire fourth floor atmosphere was high-class. It was extremely formal, and one would not normally go there unless they were entertaining important people.

The style on the third floor was much more suited for friends and family gatherings.

Miao Yiniang's spoke very vaguely. If the level of her voice was a little less, you couldn't even hear her scolding someone. The young man didn't hear her, and he saw the beautiful Miao Yiniang softly step down the stairs. His eyes immediately locked onto her.

Miao Yiniang wrinkled her brow. She felt the most disgusting is men overflowing with lust, hoping to take a bite of her. Xu Fufu seems very flirty and often hits on her, but in reality, he is very respectful to her.

"Are you the boss here?" The young man saw Miao Yiniang's unwelcoming expression right away. He retracted his cheesy expression and coldly spoke.

He comes with evil intent!

The closely following Chu Mo and Xu Fufu looked at each other. They both understood the opponent's intent.

"Not bad, noble son appears to be a person of status at first look.

Making noise here, do you wish your status to fall?” Miao Yiniang dully said.

“Ha.....a small restaurant owner speaking such words. Looks like you are able bully people.” A thirty year old man stood next to the young noble son. His face looked violent. He wore splendid clothing, and he appeared to have some skill. He coldly said to Miao Yiniang: “Is a supporter behind the scenes? Is that why you don’t place anyone in your eyes?”

Miao Yiniang plainly smiled: “You speak serious words. We are only a restaurant here, that’s it. We open our doors wide and welcome anyone to eat. But if there is trouble.....it is best to do without.”

“Ha ha ha ha, this is the first time noble son has seen someone more arrogant than myself. And it is a female restaurant owner, really interesting.....really interesting!” The young man’s facial color became cold as he spoke: “Zhang Mo, tell her who I am!”

The violent looking man coldly said: “He is the Qing province governor Zhang Chong’s noble son, Zhang Qingyu!”

Chu Mo and Xu Fufu heard the three words Qing province governor, and they were immediately a little startled. They looked at each other, and Xu Fufu’s mouth slightly opened. He barely whispered: “Xia Jing!”

The Qing province is the closest province to Yellow Flame City. It is also the largest province among Da Xia’s nine. The Qing

province's governor Zhang Chong obviously has great authority. He is a truly powerful official. And this Zhang Chong is a zealous follower of Xia Jing.

Xu Fufu winked at Chu Mo when he spoke: Look, didn't they obviously rush here for you?

Chu Mo was a bit helpless. He knew that Xia Jing and Xia Jia would come for revenge sooner or later, but he never thought they would come this fast. He just returned to Yellow Flame City, and they have already started. But isn't this method a little low in level?

Chu Mo was a little vexed at the same time. Does the prince of Da Xia not have any brains? He shouldn't use this kind of method to find trouble. The best method for a person of Xia Jing's status to get revenge, it is simply to make the person disappear from the world!

Xia Jie also extremely hated Chu Mo. He hated being unable to tear Chu Mo to pieces, but he also wouldn't use this brainless method.

'Could this provincial level noble son be acting on his own?' Chu Mo thought to himself.

Zhang Qingyu's father is the close follower of prince Xia Jing. This is no secret in Da Xia.

Prince Xia Jing losing favor was a huge blow to Zhang Chong. His supporting mountain directly collapsed. How long he can maintain his reign as a provincial governor.....is really hard to say.

So Zhang Qingyu naturally hated Chu Mo. He believed Chu Mo is the origin for Xia Jing's downfall. After all, this is what the rumors say.

Chu Mo felt that Zhang Qingyu heard he was in the Gluttonous Ogre, and he directly rushed here to find trouble.

But Zhang Qingyu never imagined that he wouldn't even get to see Chu Mo. He was unexpectedly blocked off by the restaurant workers before he could go upstairs!

A person with Zhang Qingyu's status would normally have the qualifications to eat on the fifth floor. The problem is the Gluttonous Ogre personnel had never seen him before.

Zhang Qingyu was naturally in a rage. If he wasn't hiding his status to cause Chu Mo trouble, he would have smashed this place a long time ago.

Miao Yiniang is extremely clever. How could she not understand what is going on after seeing the situation? She turned around and told Chu Mo and Xu Fufu to return. She would settle this.

Her intentions immediately made Zhang Qingyu even more angry. He coldly said: "What? Is the provincial governor not

worthy of this restaurant's boss?"

Miao Yiniang was just about to speak, but Xu Fufu came down from the stairs. He stopped on the last step. Because from there, he was higher up than Zhang Qingyu. He looked down upon Zhang Qingyu and laughed loudly: "A provincial governor really isn't bad, a high level official!"

Zhang Qingyu had naturally done his homework before coming to seek trouble. He knew who this handsome young man was. His face revealed a slight smile when he heard Xu Fufu speak flatteringly. He even pretended not to notice Xu Fufu stood on the step to become a head taller.

But Xu Fufu continued on: "But a provincial governor's son.....what is he?"

Zhang Qingyu's face immediately changed.

Xu Fufu provoked him: "This is Yellow Flame City! Not the Qing province! Do you want to cause trouble here, or leave? Your master hides at home all day with his tail between his legs. He doesn't dare come outside and face reality. What have you come out all cocky for?"

"You.....on what basis do you speak this way to me?" Zhang Qingyu wanted to punch the young man on the steps right in the face, but he sized up the situation inside, and didn't dare.

This young man's status was much more impressive than a provincial level noble son like himself. If he really did this, his father and even Xia Jing probably couldn't protect him.

"I'll give you three words." Xu Fufu pupil's coldly flashed as he looked at Zhang Qingyu: "Scram!"

"That's only one word." Chu Mo pointed out.

"Ah, I still have two words huh?" Xu Fufu's mouth twitched: "My math isn't too good, see forgiveness. Then how about I add two words."

"Leave now!"

A harsh bark.

It actually made Zhang Qingyu's body slightly quiver.

Xu Fufu disappointedly shook his head. He turned to Chu Mo and said: "Really embarrassing.....do you see? This terrified little thing came running here to find trouble. Ah.....not enough to make me lose face."

Zhang Qingyu's face became bright red. His blood began to boil, then he faced Chu Mo and yelled: "The bastard named Chu.....he only has the ability to hide behind a woman and a brother. This boss came to bring you trouble today!"

This voice made Miao Yiniang and Xu Fufu's faces greatly change, and become extremely agitated.

As for Chu Mo——

Smack!

The clear noise of someone being slapped in the face resounded.

Noble son Zhang Qingyu spun around in place more than a dozen times by the strike.

He cried like a baby, and spat out a mouthful of blood. There were also over a dozen teeth mixed in with the spit. Finally he splashed onto his butt on the floor. His face looked completely ignorant, with dull eyes. Chu Mo actually slapped him silly.

“Uneducated thing, speak to me like that again, and I'll have your life!” Chu Mo stood at Miao Yiniang's side. He coldly stared at Zhang Qingyu sitting on the ground. The thing he hated most since he was a child is people cursing his family name.

Everyone knows the army General Fan Wudi raised an orphan child named Chu Mo.

Because of this, when Chu Mo was present, any mention of his father and mother was taboo. If someone dared curse Chu Mo's

parents, it didn't matter who, Chu Mo would completely lose his mind.

Zhang Qingyu acted recklessly. He felt the son of an army general, not even blood related, could be cursed or hit. What could he do back?

The rumors say prince Xia Jing fell out of grace because of Chu Mo, but that is because there is a young princess in the rumor! Otherwise, why was the emperor indifferent when Chu Mo was being hunted down?

So in the bottom of his heart, Zhang Qingyu never placed Chu Mo in his eyes. He never thought Chu Mo would act without first explaining, or at least cursing him. But rather Chu Mo simply slapped him right away. Chu Mo slapped him silly, and scattered his wits.

“Bold, you actually dare strike the provincial noble son in public!”

“Grab him!”

“Quickly bind him!”

The young man next to Zhang Qingyu commanded in a low voice: “Kill if he resists!”

Several men slightly hesitated, then charged at Chu Mo!

Clang!

Ring!

They each pulled out weapons, and murderous looks emerged.

“Want to kill me?” Chu Mo’s pupils shined a cold light. He raised his hand, blocked Miao Yiniang and Xu Fufu, then said: “You all don’t move!”

He suddenly rushed forward after speaking. His image flickered like a demon, and several people were sent flying out the window.

Chapter 64: Behind The Yellow Bird

The street immediately burst with commotion and shocked cries.

Several people were normally walking on the street. They never thought half a dozen people would fall from the sky, and then ruthlessly smash into the hard limestone ground. Three of them even passed out. Two of them were laid out on the ground whimpering, who knows how many bones they broke.

Chu Mo walked over to Zhang Qingyu, pulled him up by the collar, hauled him to the window, and let his body suspend in the air. He coldly asked: “Noble son Zhang, you want to kill me?”

The fourth floor of the Gluttonous Ogre wasn’t especially high, but it wasn’t low either. This altitude was enough to kill a person if they fell at the right angle.

A cool wind blew past, Zhang Qingyu’s body suddenly trembled, soon after.....he soiled himself. He was actually scared [**!](#)

[TL: ** in raws.]

“Noble son Chu.....noble son Chu, I was wrong. I never wanted to kill you! Boohoo.....I only wanted to teach you a lesson. Get..... get revenge for Xia Jie. I really never thought to kill you ah..... don’t kill me. Don’t kill me. I’m begging you. Please don’t kill me!” Zhang Qingyu’s body suspended outside. Urine and feces dripped down his elegant clothing, stinking to high heaven.

The people below exploded, scattering far away. It was really losing face to the extreme level.

“You didn’t want to kill me? Why did your subordinates want to kill me?” Chu Mo coldly looked at Zhang Qingyu. He was so scared that all the color had left his face. Chu Mo was completely disgusted.

“They.....they aren’t my men.....” Zhang Qingyu whimpered: “They are Xia Jie’s subordinates.....they are all men from the prince’s house! They have nothing to do with me!”

Miao Yiniang was behind Chu Mo, and she was originally worried the situation was getting a little out of hand. She relaxed a breath when she heard those words. Shen then disdainfully laughed, and softly said: “Truly a small-minded toy.”

Xu Fufu couldn’t help but laugh: “Yes, he says his own subordinates acted without permission? What a fool!”

Smack!

Chu Mo tested out his right arm that wasn’t completely healed. He gave Zhang Qingyu a smack, and he still felt a little dull pain. Chu Mo then coldly laughed: “Do I believe what you say? Right, I have a grudge with Xia Jie, but you sully your master’s name in public. My grudge is clear, given that I hate Xia Jie. But I have never seen such shameless behavior!”

The crowd below couldn't help but loudly applaud.

“Noble son Chu is a good person! He is a worthy grandson of the general. His gratitude and grudges are clear!”

“Noble Son Chu distinguishes from right and wrong, even behind closed doors!”

“He even resolves on behalf of his enemies. This kind of attitude.....is worthy of admiration!”

“Absurd.....when did my little black brother become so shameless?” Xu Fufu looked shocked at Chu Mo.

“Really, even though he originally had such intelligence, he wouldn't use it in public like this. Goodness, where did my good hearted young master go?” Miao Yiniang said with a tinge of emotion.

Zhang Qingyu immediately regretted saying those words, but his little life was clutched by the hands of another. His senses had flown away. How could he dare lie? He even lost his ability to think. Zhang Qingyu whimpered: “I'm not deceiving you. I carry a letter from Xia Jie. You will know at first glance!”

“Damn, there's even evidence?” Xu Fufu was startled.

“Pig!” Miao Yiniang had nothing else to say.

Zhang Qingyu struggled, and he fished out a letter from his pocket. He opened it trembling: “Look, look, here is Xia Jie’s seal. This handwriting.....is also his!”

Chu Mo squinted, glanced at it, and coldly smiled. He was just about to say something.

At that time, there was shrill piercing sound in the air

Whoosh!

A feather arrow flew towards Zhang Qingyu’s back!

Not good!

The enemy wanted to kill the witness!

Chu Mo was immediately furious. There wasn’t much he could do, so he threw Zhang Qingyu into a fruit stand below.

Smash!

The arrow violently stuck into the Gluttonous Ogre’s wall, almost entirely sinking in. There was only the feather tail sticking out of the wall, fiercely trembling

This arrow was meant to kill!

Zhang Qingyu wouldn't die from being thrown into the fruit stand, but falling from such a height made him cry like a little baby. Who knows how many bones he broke.

Miao Yiniang's body already became a shadow when Chu Mo threw Zhang Qingyu down. She flew out the fourth story window in the direction the arrow came from.

Xu Fufu's face became ice-cold as he called over several people. He commanded something to them, and then he walked to Chu Mo's side: "Xia Jie.....he seeks death!"

The people below in the street fled in all directions. The recent scene was really too shocking. The events were exciting, but they would rather have their lives.

"Go grab that letter and bring it back. Also, compensate the fruit stand vendor ten times over." Chu Mo stood beside the window, his expression wasn't too good looking. Had it not been for the arrow, it could be said Zhang Qingyu was only a little slow. He just wanted to please his master, and bring Chu Mo trouble.

But this letter and the arrow made Chu Mo have an ice-cold feeling. He was unbelievably angry!

Because he is being framed!

Chu Mo would be put in another inescapable situation had Zhang Qingyu died here today.

Other people couldn't be certain where the arrow flew from, and the blame would be placed on Chu Mo.

As far as the letter? Chu Mo dared come to a conclusion.....given that Zhang Qingyu readily insisted the letter is from Xia Jie, it is absolutely a fake!

As far as Chu Mo goes, beating up a provincial noble son wouldn't be a problem, so long as he didn't die. But it would be a completely different matter if he died!

Even Xu Zhongliang, the recently appointed Grand Secretary, would be implicated!

Because his grandson Xu Fufu is also there.

Including the Gluttonous Ogre and Miao Yiniang, no one could get away!

"Looks like I always underestimated them before." Chu Mo coldly said: "I believe your relationship with the Gluttonous Ogre cannot be hidden much longer."

Xu Fufu's trusted men went down to clear up the destruction and take back the letter. He heard Chu Mo's words, and indifferently laughed: "If it can't be hidden, then it can't be hidden. I built this

restaurant with my own hands. I didn't use family money! All of the funds are clean! Whoever wants to file a complaint against the Xu family has really miscalculated."

"But today's affair is a little unexpected. Looks like, not only is that idiot Xia Jie scheming, but I'm afraid his father Xia Jing cannot escape blame. Damn, this skill is truly fierce. On the surface, it appears to be a clash between noble sons, but it is on a higher level in reality. Killing several birds with one stone, really a good trick."

Xu Fufu and Chu Mo are both extremely clever. These situations are not strange even though they are young. Deceiving them is practically an impossibility.

Xu Fufu's subordinates brought the letter back at this time. Xu Fufu looked it over, and his brow wrinkled.

Chu Mo simply said: "Fake?"

Xu Fufu nodded: "Xia Jie's brains didn't spoil along with his dick. He isn't enough of an idiot to leave evidence in another's hands." Xu Fufu was about to rip apart the letter as he spoke.

"Don't." Chu Mo stopped him.

"Why? We can't use a fake as evidence? Nothing would happen even if it went all the way up to the emperor. We would be branded as false accusers." Xu Fufu strangely looked at Chu Mo: "You can't

be thinking of using this letter to sue them?" Little black brother.....I remember you weren't so foolish?"

"Sue them? I'm not that foolish." Chu Mo coldly smiled: "But, wouldn't it be a pity to tear apart such a good letter? I had to fight my way out and flee Yellow Flame City in the past. I walked alone on the ice-field, narrowly escaping.....I have returned today, and I still haven't settled the score. They have taken the initiative. Do they still believe me to be the same person? The one they could easily bully half a year ago?"

Xu Fufu squinted: "You want to....."

"Ha, this is something I will tell you later. Remember to tidy up everything broken for me!" Chu Mo patted Xu Fufu's shoulder: "Those men I threw outside are certainly not from the prince's mansion! Tie the ones up that haven't died for me to use! In addition, send people to guard that idiot Zhang Qingyu. Don't let him die. Then inform his father to bring people! This is a big favor! We saved his son!"

"My goodness, little black brother, you really aren't that simple youth anymore. You are truly ruthless, and without any shame! But I like it!" Xu Fufu grinned. He hits a man's son, throws him out a window, and then he wants the man to be thankful. This is something the previous Chu Mo definitely couldn't do. At most he would've sat behind the scenes and given Xu Fufu this idea.

"Yes, I will leave this to you." Chu Mo curled his lips and thought: Is this much? I will let you go through the things I have experienced. You would be even more ruthless!

Compared with Seventh Elder of the Immortal Sky and Elder Hao Yue, would I be considered shameless? I am still a pure little snowflake compared to them!

“What are you leaving to do?” Xu Fufu said to Chu Mo. He looked at the letter in his hand, and he said speechlessly: “You wouldn’t be going to the prince’s mansion to cause trouble?”

Chu Mo grinned wide: “Listen to the news!” Chu Mo’s figure flashed as he spoke. He jumped out the window and glided two hundred feet through the air. He landed on the rooftop across the street on his tiptoes, then he leaped up again, disappearing out of sight.

Xu Fufu stood at the fourth floor window feeling anxious. His Yuan power is only at the second realm. He would dare jump out the window, but to do it like Chu Mo is an impossibility.

“He’s going to the prince’s mansion to cause trouble? Why is he leaving behind a sworn brother?” Xu Fufu swore, and he finished taking care of matters there. He was actually a little relieved in his heart. Someone of his status would be unsuited to appear in the prince’s mansion. Xu Fufu would bring his grandfather great trouble without any valid justification.

Miao Yiniang returned at this time, and her facial color was a little unsightly.

Xu Fufu asked: “Didn’t find anyone?”

Miao Yiniang shook her head: “Dead!”

“Dead?” Xu Fufu stared blankly.

“Suicide.” Miao Yiniang gritted her teeth: “I was only one step behind!”

Xu Fufu’s brow wrinkled, and he mumbled: “Looks like.....this will be some fun!”

“And young master?” Miao Yiniang somewhat strangely asked.

“He’s attacking the prince’s mansion.” Xu Fufu’s smile was gloating, yet it held some regret.

Chapter 65: Angrily Smashing Prince Mansion

Miao Yiniang was startled. Her eyes revealed a worried color: “Why didn’t you stop him?”

Xu Fufu laughed: “Could I stop him? His current power is much higher than mine. I already can’t even see him! Besides, it’s good for him to go cause some trouble. Otherwise that old son of a bitch Xia Jing will believe everyone in Da Xia is afraid of him.”

“You.....you could have persuaded him!” Miao Yiniang stomped her foot, then said: “Do you believe the Prince Mansion is filled with ordinary people? Is it that easy to break into?”

“You ah, you’re in such a concerned state of chaos.” Xu Fufu looked at Miao Yiniang, then he muttered: “Isn’t it a good thing when [an old cow eats young grass](#)? I am also young grass!”

[TL: An old cow eating young grass is a saying for an older man in a relationship with a much younger woman. Xu Fufu is saying ‘I can be your young grass instead of Chu Mo.’]

“Xu 2Fu!” Miao Yiniang’s pupils revealed and ice-cold light. She was truly angry.

“Ha ha ha, don’t catch fire. I’m just teasing you.” Xu Fufu softly said: “You really don’t need to worry. Your young master may be a hundred percent bloody, but he isn’t a blockhead without brains. He has quite a lot inside. Take it easy this time. Xia Jing and Xia

Jie, those sons of bitches will certainly suffer.”

“How do you know? Is it because of the letter? Do you take Xia Jie for a fool? Do you think he would personally write a letter and give it to someone else?” Miao Yiniang’s stare wasn’t kind, and she spoke in a huff.

“Ha ha, don’t worry. Little black Chu isn’t that stupid. He certainly has a plan!” Xu Fufu said completely unfazed.

“How do you know?” Miao Yiniang asked.

“I believe him!” Xu Fufu dully said: “Big sister, I’ve been with him since we were in diapers. If he was truly an impulsive person, he wouldn’t have left Yellow Flame City at that time!”

“So it’s merely because you trust him?” Miao Yiniang looked at Xu Fufu in disbelief: “You don’t even know his plan.....”

“Ha ha, sister, do you dare make a bet with me?” Xu Fufu’s face revealed a dirty expression.

“This girl can’t be gambled for so cheaply.” Miao Yiniang coldly smiled.

“No no no, I have respect for sister. How could I gamble for you?” Xu Fufu’s face looked innocent.

Miao Yiniang looked at Xufufu with distrust: “Speak.”

“I bet, Little black brother will certainly bring the prince’s house to ruins, and he will return back intact! Xu Fufu said. He remembered the relaxed smile Chu Mo carried when he left: “If you win, I guarantee, if I make another move at big sister, you can have all my shares of the Gluttonous Ogre!”

Miao Yiniang coldly smiled, but she still asked: “What happens if I lose?”

“If you lose, you have to give little black brother a kiss in front of everyone. And not on the cheek! Remember ah, in front of everyone!” Xu Fufu could not help but laugh as he thought of the scene.

“You.....” Miao Yiniang’s face became red. She nibbled her teeth and grunted: “A kiss is a kiss, what’s so special? I’ll bet with you! I also want him to return unharmed, but I’m not as optimistic as you! I’m personally going to the Prince Mansion to watch myself!”

Xu Fufu chuckled: “Okay, wait for me to take care of things here. We will go together!”

.....

Gluttonous Ogre was located in the heart of Yellow Flame City. It wasn’t too far way from the Prince Mansion.

Because of this, Chu Mo appeared in front of the Prince Mansion after not much time had passed.

Xia Jing's mansion, as the prince of Da Xia, was considerably extravagant.

The area was extremely vast. In addition to the numerous yardage, there was a huge garden, a lake, a rock garden..... waterside pavilions, basically everything.

It was simply a royal garden duplicate! There were even precious flowers and trees the royal gardens didn't have!

The mansion's gate is majestically towering. Two tall stone [Qilin](#) statues stood atop the gates.

[TL: A Qilin is a mythical Chinese animal. It reminds me of a half dragon half unicorn. You can [read more about it here](#)]

The vermillion colored entrance was lofty and thick. There were also two strong guards stationed at the gates. Their appearance was solemn and their posture straight.

There was a sign with two bold letters hung on the gate. It said 'Prince Mansion'!

Chu Mo hadn't yet arrived at the gate when a guard yelled out: "The Prince Mansion is an important place. Unauthorized persons must leave!"

Chu Mo chuckled, and he moved unfazed towards the Prince Mansion gate.

“Stop!” The guard immediately pulled the sword out of the sheath, then moved towards Chu Mo: “What are you doing?”

“Causing trouble!” Chu Mo started his footwork skill after responding. His image flashed. He arrived before the guard lifting a raised fist.

Boom!

The bodyguard was sent flying by Chu Mo’s fist.

If Chu Mo didn’t control his power, then this fist.....would have struck him dead!

Even though he held back, the bodyguard was still sent flying quite a few feet. He heavily crashed into the ground and started to moan.

The other bodyguard immediately rang a bell next to the gate, and he shouted: “Enemy attack!”

“Get lost!” Chu Mo rushed forward, lifted the bodyguard by the collar, and threw him far away.

Soon after, Chu Mo raised his foot and kicked towards the

vermillion colored gate!

The Prince Mansion gate normally didn't open. Prince Xia Jing rarely went outside. Normally the small gate on the side was used. It was usually only opened for important celebrations or festivals.

Because of this, there were several bolts on the inside!

The wooden gate door was more than a foot thick. The outside was also wrapped in copper plating, and it was painted a vermillion color. There were also the pure copper bolts inside. It could only be smashed open by a battering ram that could explode with thousands of pounds of force. Using bare hands.....it is practically an impossibility to smash open.

But Chu Mo only used a kick!

Boom!

The copper bolts inside immediately bent out of shape, who knows how far they flew.

A powerful force, even the hinges and walls on both sides shattered into small pieces.

Collapsing with a loud rumble!

The thick heavy gate tower above immediately lost support, and

it collapsed down with a rumble. The sign saying ‘Prince Mansion’ was directly crushed by the pressure, breaking apart!

The wealthy aristocrats of Da Xia all lived around the Prince Mansion. The street was peaceful, but there were still people walking around.

They all lost the ability to think after seeing this scene. Dumbstruck, they foolishly stared. The Prince Mansion gate fumed smoke and dust everywhere, a complete mess!

Then the people made a mad dash back to their homes after returning to their senses. They wanted to pass on the shocking news.

The street quickly became lively.

“Heavens, there is actually a person that dares cause trouble at the Prince Mansion. Is this madness?”

“Why does that youngster look a little familiar?”

“It looks like old General Fan’s grandson ah.....”

“Half a year ago.....didn’t he make Xia Jie a eunuch? Why has he returned? Didn’t prince Xia Jing give the order to have him killed?

“He actually dares come striking back? He truly has courage!

Hahaha, interesting!”

Every person that could live here had high authority. They were all the wealthy aristocrats of Da Xia. They all stood from far away and watched the activity at this time. But now they looked like a group of common people at the marketplace. Their faces were all glowing with excitement.

Today’s excitement.....is truly too big!

Chu Mo completely smashed the Prince Mansion gate with one kick. The resentment inside leaked out a little. Kicking down a large gate like this is no challenge for a Yuan cultivator on the verge of breaking into the fourth realm.

Practically everyone living on the edges of the Prince Mansion property were guards and subordinates. Because of this, a large amount of guards charged towards Chu Mo after the dust settled.

Chu Mo thundered loudly: “Da Jie, you son of a bitch! Come out for me! I spared you in vain before. I never thought you would actually send men to assassinate me!”

“Xia Jing! Xia Jing.....you old thief, you also come out! If you don’t give me an explanation for today, I’ll smash your Prince Mansion!”

The crowd watching outside clearly heard everything. They were all left speechless.

This youngster.....isn't he too fierce? He actually dares call prince Xia Jing an old thief!

Chu Mo directly face the group of approaching guards.

The most powerful of these guards didn't exceed the yellow rank two realm. Could they be Chu Mo's match? Chu Mo took care of them in the blink of an eye. Although Chu Mo held back, the group of guards lost their entire ability to fight, and they had difficulty just climbing up from the ground.

"Xia Jie..... get out here!"

"You have the courage to use the Qing prefecture governor's son to kill me. You don't have the courage to come fight me directly?"

"Xia Jing, you are the prince of Da Xia. Did you teach your child to be this way? No wonder the emperor took away your Grand Secretary position. His majesty is truly wise! You can't even teach your child, how could you rule a nation?"

"Both of you come out! Today we will have a good talk! The matter six months ago still isn't finished. You both still want to kill me? Do you really think you can bully uncle Chu Mo?"

Chu Mo moved into the Prince Mansion interior while yelling. At the same time, he destroyed everything inside the Prince Mansion.

“This flower isn’t bad, do you want it? You don’t like it? You don’t want it? Okay, I also don’t want it. It’s a little unsightly. I’ll smash it!”

“What about this tree? What? Still no response? Hasn’t it grown a little tall? Cut it down!”

“The rock garden is an eyesore here. They would be better filling the lake!”

Boom rumble rumble!

Splash splash!

The whole Prince Mansion was in ruins after a short time.

Chu Mo’s voice spread far away, everyone outside could hear him clearly.

Each and every one was entirely speechless. Has the Fan General’s grandson gone crazy? He actually dares cause such a disturbance at the Prince Mansion. Is he not afraid of death?

Everyone who has entered the Prince Mansion knows that the flowers and trees inside.....not a single one is ordinary!

They were all extremely rare and valuable species. Some would even quickly become extinct!

The Prince Mansion was like a duplicate of the royal gardens. For it to be smashed by someone, it made the crowd of people that rushed over to watch extremely happy.

Xia Jing naturally has his own faction, but it is not without enemies. Because he has been too overbearing over the years, he has forged a lot of enemies. These people had a lot of support inside for Chu Mo's actions. They eagerly wished he became even more violent. They wanted him to smash the entire Prince Mansion.

And Chu Mo is doing just that!

He just now entered the vast gardens of the Prince Mansion. They actually raised lions, tigers, and other fierce beasts there. He kicked open the cages and laughed: "You were originally kings of the mountains and grasslands. How can you be locked up like cats? Go out and play!"

Roar!

The lions and tigers immediately gushed out, passing by Chu Mo's side.

Chu Mo's aura made the group of beasts not dare attack him. But that didn't mean they were afraid to attack others!

Quickly, there were roars and shrieks all throughout the Prince

Mansion.

“Xia Jing.....prince, you orchestrate a crime, then you want to kill the witness. Do you not feel ashamed?”

“Xia Jie, you shameless thing. Cowardly little rat.....do you not deserve it?”

Boom rumble rumble!

Two elegant buildings collapsed into dust.

A large amount of guards already started to circle around at this time. But they were well behaved. They didn't attack like the first time. They all knew they weren't Chu Mo's match.

An indignant voice passed through the air: “Little thing, you are an outlaw, do you want to die?”

Chu Mo laughed: “Finally someone decent comes? Don't waste words, quickly come out and play. Young master wants to continue destroying!”

Boom!

Another building collapsed.

The opponent immediately roared: “You seek death!”

Ring!

A sword light flashed. A man stabbed towards Chu Mo.

Chapter 66: Maverick Youngster

“Go away!” Chu Mo roared: “You bullying dog! The most fierce person trying to kill me at that time was you!”

Qing!

An enormous sound.

The opponents long sword snapped. Chu Mo's blade.....already stuck into the man's neck.

The coming people were scared stupid. The remaining half of the sword in the man's hand clanged to the floor. His face was pale, fearfully looking at Chu Mo.

Of course he knew who Chu Mo was. He really pursued Chu Mo to kill him half a year ago.

But a mysterious woman blocked him at the very end, and she let the young man escape. He dared be certain, this youngster was no match for him half a year ago. Don't speak about one Chu Mo.....but even ten wouldn't be enough to kill the man.

How could he change this much over half a year? Without one landing one strike.....he was defeated?

Is this a dream?

“Why aren’t you speaking? Weren’t you quite forward when you originally chased me?” Chu Mo pressed down with Murdering Heaven onto the thirty-eight-year-old man’s neck.

A wound immediately appeared, and blood flowed out!

“Ah.....don’t.....don’t kill me. I, I was following orders.” The man immediately begged for mercy.

“Little animal, go die!” an old voice came from behind Chu Mo. A shrill piercing noise followed right after.

Chu Mo didn’t even turn to look. He backhanded with Murdering Heaven that was lodged in the thirty-eight year old’s neck.

Qing!

Crack!

“Ah!”

A miserable yell followed after a loud clash.

An old man used his hand to block the blood flowing from his shoulder, and incredible screams came from his mouth.

An arm and a broken sword fell to the ground.

Chu Mo's blade first broke the man's sword, then it continued on, chopping into the his arm. Soon after, the blade moved back to the thirty-eight-year-old man's neck.

Everything moved unbelievably fast!

And the hand holding the blade.....was unexpectedly the left hand!

Chu Mo shifted his body, and he coldly stared at the old man behind him with the cut arm: "Old thing, among the most fierce people trying to kill me, you were the strongest, a yellow rank three Yuan Closure cultivator, a master of the killing blade, and extremely skillful. Do you still remember what you told me at that time?"

The old man astonishingly stared at Chu Mo: "It's you! You..... how could you.....how in such a short time.....become this amazing?"

"You said, you would cut off my skin as punishment if you grabbed me. You said you were an expert in the death of a thousand cuts. You also said your sword skill was exquisite. You could cut me three thousand six hundred times before I died. You said you really enjoyed the process, and you loved to hear the miserable yells of your opponents. At the end when your opponent could no longer scream, you would finally cut off their tongue. Then you would watch your opponent's expression, from hatred to

hopelessness, until they finally lose their senses.....the mood becomes very delightful.” Chu Mo looked at the old man, and he said awed: “You said.....at my time, you would make me feel very satisfied.....is that not right?”

The old man was already scared stiff by Chu Mo. He stood there, and his eyes filled with shock: “Not possible, not possible, in half a year’s time, even a sect genius could not have such large progress.....absolutely impossible!”

“I’m not as weird as you, so, I won’t cut you to pieces slash by slash. There are three scars remaining on my body from you. They aren’t deep because my friend risked her life to save me. I was fortunately able to flee Yellow Flame City.” Chu Mo didn’t take notice of the old man’s words. He plainly said: “But the scar you have left in my soul.....is very deep! I just gave you one cut. There’s three more to go.....are you ready?”

“Ah!” The old man suddenly gave a terrified scream. He turned tail and ran!

Yuan Closure cultivators haven’t completely lost their fighting ability even if they lose an arm. But the fear in his mind already thoroughly penetrated, and there was no way to control himself.

“You want to run?” Chu Mo coldly laughed. Murdering Heaven flew out of his hands, whooshing through the air. It flew into the back of the old man, and it stuck out from his chest.

The old man’s body flew a hundred feet forward due to inertia,

and he crashed to his knees on the ground. He twisted his head, as if wanting to look at Chu Mo, but his head powerlessly dropped. He weakly collapsed to the ground.

Violently killed on the spot!

“You are still short two cuts!” Chu Mo said.

“Ah!” the thirty eight year old man saw Chu Mo lacked a weapon. He suddenly snarled, pulled a dagger from his waist, and ruthlessly struck below Chu Mo’s ribs.

The angle of attack was right at the heart!

This blow.....cunning! ruthless! extinguishing! quick!

Chu Mo stamped with his footwork skill. His image flickered, and then he raised a fist and struck at the man’s chest.

Crack!

A bone-splitting noise.

The thirty-eight year old man spit out a mouthful of blood. He was sent flying, and he ruthlessly struck into a tree. He bounced another ten feet off before crashing into the ground, dead on the spot.

Chu Mo slowly walked towards the old man. He pulled out Murdering Heaven. The silver colored sword wasn't smudged with a drop of blood.

“Xia Jing, have you still not come out? Don't think of gathering more troops. They cannot stop me!” Chu Mo lifted Murdering Heaven, and he advanced towards the Prince Mansion rear courtyard.

The central residence in the rear courtyard was the house of Xia Jing! All of his concubines lived in the rear courtyard.

Chu Mo believed Xia Jing must have received the news by now.

“Chu Mo!” a harsh bark came from the rear courtyard.

The sound of a large group of bodyguards running followed soon after. Prince Xia Jing came out of the rear courtyard while under the protection of a hundred bodyguards. Xia Jing's son, Xia Jie, was at his father's side, giving a poisonous look to Chu Mo.

Chu Mo was immediately happy when he saw Xia Jie: “Yo, little sister Xia Jie. Long time no see. Have you become all the more **glowing?”

“Chu Mo, you seek death” The enemies saw each other, and their eyes became red. Chu Mo would already have died a hundred times if a stare could kill.

Xia Jing's eyes immediately became red after seeing the corpses of the old man missing an arm and the thirty-eight year old. These were two bodyguards that he had spent a lot of money for. They came from sects, and they had been in the Prince Mansion for many years. They had received great trust from Xia Jing.

He never thought the both would fall at the youngster's hand today. This made Xia Jing both scared and furious, and his abhorrence towards Chu Mo reached the highest level.

“Chu Mo you little animal, you actually dare return? Prince still hasn't settled the score with you. You unexpectedly come slaughtering in my Prince Mansion? Do you take Da Xia's laws for mere decorations? Do you think no one in Da Xia can control you? Don't think you can be an outlaw just because you are a General's son! This is the land of Da Xia.....” Xia Jing was so angry that his hair stood on end and knocked off his hat.

But Chu Mo didn't let him finish speaking. He coldly smiled and interrupted Xia Jing: “This is Da Xia's land, not your land prince Xia Jing! It is the current emperors!”

Chu Mo disdainfully looked at Xia Jie who was beside Xia Jing: “You both just used the foolish son of the Qing province governor. You tried to kill him and frame me. Is this how you settle the score?”

“You speak nonsense! A whole pile of bullshit!” Xia Jing roared.

“You know whether or not it is true. Da Xia's laws naturally

aren't decorations, but I must ask the prince. When your son tried to snatch a common girl in the streets, where did Da Xia's laws go? Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing, then coldly said: "Then you sent out two men to kill me, the very same two men I just killed. Da Xia's laws.....where were they?"

"You venomously slander!" Xia Jie shrieked. His voice resembled a little girl.

Chu Mo couldn't help but laugh: "Ha ha, miss Xia.....how am I slandering you? Do you have evidence or testimony?"

"Chu Mo.....I will kill you!" Xia Jie's expression was incomparably wild. His family jewels had been trampled, and he had been stomped into a eunuch. Now he was being made a mockery, so Xia Jie immediately went wild. He commanded: "Shower him with arrows! Kill him!"

The group of guards naturally didn't listen to his orders, and they all looked at Xia Jing. Xia Jing also hated Chu Mo to the extreme at this moment. He regretted not sending more men back then to cut this little animal to pieces.

Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing and plainly said: "Old thief Xia Jing. Do you have the stones to talk one on one?"

"Outrageous, you actually dare address the prince by the taboo name!" The guard at Xia Jing's side snarled.

Chu Mo couldn't help but laugh: "You also know his taboo name?"

"Father, don't listen to the animal. Shoot him to death!" Xia Jie gnashed his teeth.

Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo, and he coldly said: "Little animal, don't think you can leave the Prince Mansion alive today! I not only will kill you, but I won't let your grandfather go either! And that Gluttonous Ogre restaurant? Do you think I don't know that is the business you and that Xu family scoundrel set up? Prince will personally burn down everything of yours!"

"Old thief, you speak slanderous words. The Gluttonous Ogre's business is indeed good. It could even catch the discerning eye of an old thief. So, you want to plunder another person's business. All you have to do is speak, no one would dare oppose you in Da Xia right? Don't lump Gluttonous Ogre in with me. You speak such remarks without any evidence." Chu Mo plainly said: "But it looks like the prince doesn't want to let this one go."

"You! Chu Mo! Prince will hack you into pieces!" Xia Jing completely went insane as soon as he heard these words. What did he hate the most? It was exactly these words!

Xia Jing is the grand prince of Da Xia. Apart from the emperor, he is the most powerful man in Da Xia!

No one could change this fact, even if the Grand Secretary position was removed!

But his only son had the family jewels stomped out by this youth. He is useless eunuch now. If he had the ability to have children, then it would be no problem. The beautiful women at his sides are like clouds, he could easily have another three boys and five girls.

But he can't get it up!

Xia Jing.....already lost that ability!

The main culprit behind ending his family line is right before him!

How could he not hate?

Chu Mo slightly smiled. He looked at Xia Jing prepare to give the command, ready to turn Chu Mo into a hedgehog. Chu Mo simply said: "Isn't it strange? In such a short period of time, I Chu Mo.....how could I turn from someone chased out of Yellow Flame City by you into the present me. I can now single-handedly attack your Prince Mansion. How could I kill your two powerful guards? You.....don't you feel curious?"

"Prince isn't curious at all. In any case, you need to die." Xia Jing's was so entirely mad that he was about to spit blood. He lacked any interest to talk.

Xia Jie shrieked from the side: "Quick.....kill him! Kill him!"

Chu Mo looked at Xia Jie: “Adults are speaking. Little girls step aside, don’t interrupt!”

“Chu Mo.....” Xia Jie’s voice was indeed very high pitched, especially when angered. It made him sound even more like a girl.

Chu Mo didn’t pay Xia Jie any heed, and he fixed his eyes upon Xia Jing: “You should know, I was a genius in Yellow Flame City. I was called the master of miscellaneous knowledge! I never stopped studying various things, even after entering the sect. I found an ancient record in master’s library. There was a kind of prescription.....”

Chapter 67: That Prescription

Chu Mo spoke to her, then he paused. Chu Mo discovered Xia Jing's eyes suddenly light up when he spoke these words.

The bright rays of light in his eyes flickered passed very quickly, concealing his intent quite well, but Chu Mo knew he won.

Chu Mo already knew the root cause of Xia Jing's rage before coming here. It was because Chu Mo crippled his only son!

Even if you have authority at all levels, even if you are a prince, even if you have wealth to match a country.....and can enjoy all the splendors of the world!

But, if your family line ends, that is equivalent to lacking any hope!

What if.....there is hope, to have another son or daughter?

Chu Mo could be certain. Xia Jing's fury would have a complete change!

Da Xia and Da Qi both historically paid attention to succession through patrilineality. This was an entirely different custom than the grasslands. A queen could appear on the grasslands, but Da Xia and Da Qi have never had such an occurrence. It was practically an impossibility.

Therefore, He could dare recklessly cause havoc at the Prince Mansion. Chu Mo believed Xia Jing wasn't an idiot like Xia Jie. Things like hatred are sometimes dispensable, especially for people at the higher levels.

“Now, are you able to talk?” Chu Mo became serene inside. His whole body emitted a graceful aura.

Even if Xia Jing was still furious at the youngster, he couldn't help but admit inside, that old fellow Fan Wudi sure picked a nice grandson!

‘If my son.....could be like him, wouldn't that be good?’ Xia Jing couldn't help but sigh inside.

Xia Jie shrieked from the side at this time: “Father, kill him..... get revenge for your son, kill him! Why haven't you given the command?” As he spoke, Xia Jie surprisingly went to a guard at his side and grabbed a bow: “You all are afraid to kill.....I'm not afraid of him.....”

Smack!

A crisp sound, Xia Jing ruthlessly slapped Xia Jie in the face: “Go scurry back!”

“Ah.....father.....you.....you actually hit me.....you actually hit me?” Xia Jie rubbed his face and started crying.

Xia Jing's heart couldn't help but weaken, but when thinking of the things said by Chu Mo, he steeled himself: "Grab that spoiled thing. Watch him! Don't let him cause trouble!"

"Yes!" Two guards carried Xia Jie away.

"You actually hit me.....you didn't kill my enemy, actually hit me.....boohoo....." Xia Jie actually began to weep while being carried away. The crying noise was distinct even though he was carried out of sight.

Xia Jing's face was somber. He waved a hand: "You all withdraw!"

The group of guards hesitantly withdrew. They were very afraid Chu Mo would suddenly violently attack Xia Jing. Two men were already sacrificed..... this wasn't important to them, but if Xia Jing died.....they feared their entire families would suffer.

Xia Jing coldly spoke: "Withdraw, we couldn't stop him if he wanted to injure us!" The strength of those two sacrifices was much stronger than the hundred guards present. Xia Jing clearly knew this.

Both those two men died in an instant at Chu Mo's hands! There was a true mighty power at the Prince Mansion, but this person had an odd temperament. He only promised to protect Xia Jing's life. He didn't care about anything else. Xia Jing had once witnessed this person's methods, and he had complete confidence. Because of this, in the depths of his heart, he wasn't actually afraid

of Chu Mo.

The group of guards finally retreated.

There was only Xia Jing and Chu Mo remaining. Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo: “If you dare cheat me.....”

“I’m not inclined to cheat you.” Chu Mo simply said: “The hatred between you and me, you clearly know yourself, it is because of Xia Jie.”

“He did something wrong. I’m not opposed to you teaching a lesson, but you were too ruthless. You actually trampled his family jewels.....Chu Mo, honestly ask yourself, the things you have done.....aren’t they excessive? Am I wrong for chasing you because of this?” Xia Jing solemnly and slowly replied.

Chu Mo laughed and said: “If these words came from another person, I would feel ashamed and responsible. But what morals do you and your son have grand prince? You yourself know best. How about I tell your older brother the hidden things you’ve done..... each and every single one? So don’t say such useless words.”

“You.....” Xia Jing’s face became ashen. He furiously looked at Chu Mo: “What do you want to say to me? Chu Mo, is this your attitude? Do you feel.....I truly have no way to seize you?”

“Don’t get mad.....anger injures the body.” Chu Mo bared a smile: “It’s just your serious expression made you look in a bad

mood. You are really an old clever fox. What's with acting like a kind-hearted elder? I want to see your true shameless colors."

Chu Mo laughed as he watched Xia Jing become infuriated: "Don't catch fire ha ha. I know you have an actual talent here at the Prince Mansion, and I'm a little scared of him. I couldn't even run away if he decided to act. So, let's stop playing around."

Xia Jing was silent. He squinted and carefully sized up Chu Mo. This is the first time Xia Jing seriously observed this youth.

"You are a lot more formidable than I imagined." Xia Jing dully said.

Chu Mo smiled. He walked into a cool pavilion and sat down on a bench. He patted the bench and said: "Prince, doesn't standing and talking hurt your waist? Come over and have a seat, don't be so polite!"

Xia Jing ruthlessly stared at Chu Mo. He walked over and sat at the far end of the bench: "Chu Mo, if I knew earlier that you were such a troublesome little bastard, I never would have let you escape alive!"

"Originally you didn't want to let me escape alive. Only I am lucky! Look, now we are speaking open and honest. Isn't the communication much more cheerful?" Chu Mo sat there and sucked in a deep breath: "The Prince Mansion is really special. The air is so fresh."

“I’m not happy! You little bastard! You have turned the Prince Mansion to a pile of rubble! Those rare and precious flowers, I couldn’t even cover the cost if I sold you!” Xia Jing’s anger still lingered, and he stared Chu Mo down.

“How trivial. This little loss is nothing for the prince whose wealth rival’s a nation.” Cu Mo plainly smiled.

“You killed two of my followers. They both came from sects!” Xia Jing coldly stared at Chu Mo: “This matter, nothing I say could make you burdened!”

“Ha ha, I never counted on the prince being so kind.” Chu Mo laughed: “You only need to give condolences to their families. They will naturally seek revenge upon me.”

Xia Jing’s pupils flickered at Chu Mo, and some uncertainty emerged inside. In just a little over six months, how much did this youth experience? He was actually able to have such a large change. No only has his strength improved to this kind of Realm, but he has even gained courage and insight.....it is shocking.

Xia Jing is the prince, and he had been in a high position for many years. His anger was no joke. Ordinary people wouldn’t dare say provoking words to him. Even people from sects are very polite to him.

This youth is yet unrestrained in his presence. Chu Mo clearly knows a true talent resides in the house, yet his attitude doesn’t change. He even talks cheerfully. This amount of courage alone

was enough to stir Xia Jing.

‘And he.....is merely thirteen or fourteen.....if I let him become an adult, what kind of monster will he become?’ Xia Jing’s eyes narrowed. If it were not for Chu Mo’s earlier remark, he would pay any price to have his talent come and exterminate this little thing!

These two are currently sitting here peacefully talking, but don’t forget, this guy killed his two followers. Chu Mo put the whole Prince Mansion into ruins. Chu Mo said the loss of property was nothing, but in reality, it is an enormous figure!

Even Xia Jing feels the pain. Don’t mention that the hatred has not relieved in the slightest. It is deep! He really didn’t dare believe that Chu Mo has peaceful intentions.

“The remark you just made earlier. What do you actually mean?” Xia Jing finally couldn’t help it, and he started the question. It’s not that his shrewdness is shallow, but rather this little thing is too shameless and cunning. Chu Mo prattles on about nothing, and he doesn’t get to the point.

“That remark? What did I say?” Chu Mo looked slightly startled, his face confused. He saw the face of Xia Jing immediately darken, and he laughed: “Ah, you are talking about the prescription..... okay, I’ll tell you about it.”

“Hmm” Xia Jing was just short of calling out his great talent to kill Chu Mo. This boy is really too angering.

“I just said, the reason for the hatred between us is because of Xia Jie. You hate me because Xia Jie is your only son. Am I right?” Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing and plainly asked.

“Not wrong.” Xia Jing stiffly replied.

“Very good.” Chu Mo nodded: “Your son is a thing we won’t speak about. If we make his shameless actions public, I can’t guarantee the emperor would protect him! Those things are enough for him to die a hundred times! Am I wrong?”

Xia Jing’s face became unsightly. His chest heaved up and down. Who could listen to their son be criticised like this? Their actions would be even stronger than Xia Jing’s.

But Xia Jing is a big man in high authority. He is incomparably angry, but he still nodded: “It could be considered so.”

Chu Mo didn’t bicker over the wording of the questions. He simply said: “Then the smashing of his genitals. First, it could be considered removing a public hazard; Second, it could be considered saving his life! Because if he hadn’t encountered me, sooner or later he would have encountered someone else! Even though the road appears uneven.....Da Xia still has justice in the end! I don’t believe the current emperor would continue indulging Xia Jie after discovering his deeds. Is what I said right or not?”

Xia Jing recalled the night he was removed from the Grand Secretary position. He had never seen the emperor in such a fury.

The emperor's face showed a type of anger and disappointment. The scene of him scolding Xia Jie.....was burned in his eyes. Xia Jing couldn't help but tremble all over. He nodded his head: "Not wrong."

"So, you all making me an enemy is fundamentally wrong! You have taken grace and returned with hate!" Chu Mo said with a tranquil face: "I saved your son's life! You all sent men to kill me. You caused me to leave my homeland. I sadly left Yellow Flame City, and on the outside, I narrowly escaped countless deaths."

Xia Jing dropped his eyes and controlled himself. He was so angry that he didn't know what to say. Clearly Chu Mo crippled his son, and now Chu Mo declares himself Xia Jie's greatest benefactor.

"I am a generous man, my heart is vast!" Chu Mo said.

"Then why have you come to the Prince Mansion?" Xia Jing coldly asked.

"Just because my heart is vast, it doesn't mean I'm happy about the things you've done! I am very saddened! Naturally I need to let off some steam! I originally didn't wish to cause trouble. You all keep making the same mistakes, but I am a kind and honest person. I don't wish to lower myself to your level, but you all are incessant! You provoked me again and again!" Chu Mo slapped the bench, and he made an enormous noise. He looked at Xia Jing with rage: "Old thief, you dare claim today's events aren't your fault?"

Xia Jing snorted, and he didn't speak. His eyes flickered with intense light. This little animal calling him and old thief was really annoying. He is Xia Jing.....has he ever been embarrassed like this before?

Chu Mo coldly smiled: "You all never wanted to leave me be from the beginning. You wanted to kill me. Is it excessive when I come to the Prince Mansion and cause trouble?"

"That prescription..... Xia Jing's face was dark. He looked at Chu Mo in shock: "Can we talk about it now?"

Chapter 68: Rather Complicated

“The prescription ah.....” Chu Mo dragged out the words. He saw Xia Jing was about to burst, and he dully said: “Very simple, it can cure your defect! Not only will the prince return to his former glory, but it will also give him little princes and princesses.....it will be no problem. But if they are all princesses, then you can’t cause me trouble. That is a personal problem.”

Xia Jing soared out of his seat. His eyes were red, and he stared into Chu Mo: “You aren’t cheating me?”

“Must I be cheating you?” Chu Mo plainly looked at Xia Jing: “What good would deceiving you do for me?”

“What do you want?” Xia Ying still fixated upon Chu Mo, and asked in a deep voice.

This problem is his greatest pain! If it can be cured, then not only would it resolve resentment for Chu Mo, Xia Jing wouldn’t hesitate to kneel down and bow his head to Chu Mo!

“What I want is very simple.” Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing: “First, the resentment between you and I is wiped away starting today! You don’t seek men to kill me, and you no longer oppose me. As soon as I discover something like this, our agreement is cancelled. Because this medicine.....you need to take over a long period of time! So, don’t have any dark ideas towards this young master. In addition, watch after your scumbag son Xia Jie. Don’t let him be the same as you, going out and harming people.”

Xia Jing was absolutely shocked, he raged: “Those are rumors!”

“Whether they are rumors or not, you know inside.” Chu Mo coldly smiled: “The second, once you recover to normal. You must become a normal man again. You have several beautiful women here in the Prince Mansion, don’t go out harming people!”

“After being able to return to normal, who would do such things?” Xia Jing’s face was extremely dark. He said it through clenched teeth, and he no longer stated it was a rumor.

“Third, grand prince, I know you are no longer the Grand Secretary, but you still have mighty power in your hands. At a crucial moment, you must help me when I need it.”

Xia Jing’s pupils suddenly flashed a cold light, and he focused onto Chu Mo: “Young man, what are you thinking of doing?”

“Don’t misunderstand. Be at ease. I’m not going to revolt. I’m not that foolish. I just want to live many years.” Chu Mo said.

“Good, so long as you aren’t thinking to revolt, I will use my power to help you at a crucial time!” Xia Jing promised extremely straight-forward. He at last revealed the slight manner of a powerful person.

Before, he was practically completely suppressed by the young Chu Mo. This was actually a very unimaginable thing. This also

clearly states one thing. That aspect not working.....is an incalculable blow to a man.

“Anything else?” Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo, and he asked in a deep voice.

“Nothing else. Prince Xia Jing, I am young, but I am not a greedy like the peers of my generation. I am a man clear in my grudges! When I have hatred, I must announce it! When I have gratitude, I must repay!” Chu Mo stood up as he spoke. He looked at Xia Jing and simply said: “I can start refining medicine for you right now to prove I’m not lying. But.....your illness has already sunken in very deep, so you require a large quantity of medicine. You must be mentally prepared for this. You must prepare a stand-alone room at your Prince Mansion for me to refine medicine, and you must not disturb me.”

Xia Jing nodded then said: “That is no trouble, just tell me whatever ingredients you need! I will send people to make preparations! In addition, I will not conceal this from you. In order to cure my illness, I have accumulated many drug ingredients in the Prince Mansion over the years. The Prince Mansion has an enormous stockpile of ingredients! I have even secretly requested help from several sects, but.....there has never been any hope.”

When it comes to Xia Jing, what is a large amount of medicine to him? Given his high position, so long as it exists in the world.....he can certainly acquire it.

Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing: “Good, I am tired today. I will pay you a visit early tomorrow morning. I will write down a list of all

the medicines needed.” Chu Mo secretly thought: I hope you won’t be frightened at that time.

Xia Jing nodded, then he said in a deep voice: “Then, I won’t be seeing you off. You should know the way out.”

Chu Mo smiled, stood up, waved his hand, and then turned to leave. He simply followed his path of destruction out, naturally he couldn’t get lost.

Xia Jing’s eyes flickered as he watched Chu Mo’s figure disappear out of sight. His eyes were filled with complexity, and he finally sighed after a long time: “Mister Wei Chi, do you feel.....this young man’s words are reliable?”

A flat voice passed through the air: “Rather complicated.” then it no longer stirred.

It was an irrelevant answer, and only two words, but Xia Jing’s eyes suddenly shined. His dark face was like a riverbed that was dry for many years. It was suddenly drenched with large amount of water, and an incomparable life force once again resumed.

Rather complicated!

Mister Wei Chi said the young man is rather complicated!

Does that mean the young man isn’t cheating him?

Xia Jing couldn't state clearly his feelings for Chu Mo at this time.

To say hatred.....really hatred, after all this young man crippled his only son. In addition, he came smashing in with such noise. Not only did he turn the Prince Mansion to ruins, but he also said such nasty words, making him want to tear Chu Mo to pieces.

But ever since he heard the prescription, Xia Jing felt.....he actually doesn't hate Chu Mo that much!

"If.....I can truly recover, even at my age I could have another ten children without problem! " Xia Jing's eyes splashed with a rare light of hope. He mumbled: "Hope.....is real! If you dare cheat me, I will exhaust all my wealth, exhaust all my means, I will fight to the death before letting you go!"

Hopelessness isn't terrifying, because one has already come to the end of the road. There is nothing else to be expected. What is terrifying is to come back from death's door, only to discover yourself at another impasse!

That is something that truly causes a person to collapse.

Chu Mo strolled away like he was on a walk, right out of the Prince Mansion ruins. The guards along the way already received orders, but each one stared at Chu Mo like an enemy.

They wanted to break his skull, and they couldn't understand why the boss let him go.

The boss's only son was ruined by him. He ran away half a year ago, and now he comes swaggering back. He even brazenly broke his way inside. Two of the Prince Mansion's great followers died at his hands. The whole Prince Mansion was torn down by him..... even the Prince Mansion gate was smashed to ruins.

This is simply a slap in the face!

But the Prince actually let him go.....

Since when has the prince been this restrained? A person comes attacking his some, and he actually just endures?

The family members of the cabinet members formed a group to watch the lively activity.....they saw Chu Mo swagger out of the destroyed Prince Mansion gate, and they all stared foolishly. They were completely puzzled!

Chu Mo saw the large group of people gathered outside when he left the gates. Xu Fufu and Miao Yiniang were also in the crowd of people.

Xu Fufu smiled when he saw Chu Mo. Pleased with himself, he looked over at Miao Yiniang: "Ha ha ha ha."

Miao Yiniang was thoroughly shocked. She had actually already

arrived some time ago, and she was just about to charge inside. She had come from a sect, but she lived in Yellow Flame City for many years after all. How could she not know the significance of the Prince Mansion?

It is truly a place of great dangers!

Chu Mo broke in all alone, even the Prince Mansion gate was smashed down. The owner Xia Jing holds old grudges and is given new anger. How could he just let Chu Mo go? She was held in place by Xu Fufu. He said Chu Mo certainly wouldn't have trouble.

As a result, she didn't have to wait long before Chu Mo actually emerged!

There wasn't even a speck of dust on his body. His hands were empty, and his face was peaceful. It looked like he had just eaten a meal and gone for a stroll.

Everyone was filled with shock towards this outcome. They practically all stared foolishly.

“How is this possible? Could it be prince Xia Jing isn't home?”

“Xia Jing practically never comes outside!”

“The gate was turned to rubble by him. Isn't this a smack in the face? And the offender strolls outside as a result?”

“I heard some people died inside.....I really didn’t believe Fan Wudi’s grandson could come out alive.”

“Incredible.....could noble son Chu Mo be carrying an imperial edict from the emperor?”

“That’s a real possibility. Do you all remember that rumor? I cannot say, perhaps this time noble son Chu Mo received an imperial decree to come make trouble!”

“Don’t carelessly talk about royal business. I’m going home. I have to tell my family not to mess with that little bastard Chu Mo. That boy is too complicated!”

There was not a person of simple status in the crowd. Their eyes all carried terror as they looked at Chu Mo and murmured.

Who has the courage to break into the Prince Mansion and cause trouble? And then when it’s all done, they come out intact. The only person who would dare do this in all of Da Xia is the emperor. And now.....another has appeared.

Soon after, the personnel in the Prince Mansion silently cleaned up the wreckage. None of them looked outside, and it added another layer of mystery to this event. Chu Mo smashing down the Prince Mansion was the talk of Yellow Flame City even after several years.

“You, you aren’t hurt?” Miao Yiniang quickly walked over to Chu Mo. She appeared deeply concerned. She wore a veil that covered up her extremely gorgeous face, but her slender waist was slightly discernable under her garment, and she made several men hot and bothered.

The great majority of men here had eaten at the Gluttonous Ogre. They didn’t have many opportunities to meet the owner, but several of them still knew Miao Yiniang. They all felt a little startled seeing her appear here.

“Why has Miao Yiniang also joined the crowd?”

“Do they still not know? The Qing province’s noble son, Zhang Qingyu, caused trouble at Gluttonous Ogre just now. He was taught a lesson by Chu Mo. Then that provincial governor’s noble son gave away Xia Jie’s name. Otherwise noble son Chu Mo wouldn’t have come and caused trouble at Prince Mansion in a fury.”

“So it is like this. But what does this have to do with Miao Yiniang?”

“That I don’t know.”

The comments of others didn’t enter Miao Yiniang’s ears. She only looked at Chu Mo, deeply concerned.

Chu Mo smiled: “No problem, why have you come? Didn’t 2Fu tell you I would be fine?”

“I.....how could I know that young master Chu possesses such magical ability? You cause trouble at the Prince Mansion, then you can leave free and easy?” Miao Yiniang couldn’t help but say annoyed.

Xu Fufu smiled from the side: “Big sister, your words can be trusted. If you agree to bet, you must accept losing!”

Chapter 69: A Kiss

A large majority of people in the crowd knew Xu Fufu. A couple people curiously asked when they saw him: “Noble son Xu, what do you mean by ‘If you make a bet, you must accept losing’?”

“Ha ha.....I made a bet with boss Miao Yiniang. I said my brother Chu Mo would return from the Prince Mansion safe and sound. She didn’t believe, you all will see the result. She lost.” Xu Fufu spoke completely pleased with himself.

Miao Yiniang’s face became scarlet red and endlessly bashful. People could still feel her shyness even if her face was covered in a veil.

“Ha ha, so it’s something like that? Quickly speak, what are the stakes?” The person asking was also a son of a cabinet member. He wasn’t very old, and he was well acquainted with Xu Fufu. He couldn’t help but smile after hearing Xu Fufu’s words.

The other people all looked curiously at Xu Fufu. The wealthy aristocrats in the upper circles were actually very bored all day long. They flocked in the direction of activity. Of course, exciting oneself is a job in itself.

Xu Fufu said pleased with himself: “The stakes ah.....simply if sister Miao loses, she must give my brother a kiss. Furthermore.....it cannot be on the cheek!”

Rumble!

The surrounding crowd burst out in laughter, exploding upward. Even confused little children in the crowd started to whistle and cheer.

Someone couldn't help but laugh: "Has noble son Xu changed gender? Why doesn't he act for his own benefit?"

Xu Fufu's face collapsed: "This uncle wants to keep living." He looked over at Miao Yiniang: "If you agree to bet, you must accept losing! Quickly kiss!"

The surrounding people lacked fear within a big crowd. They roared: "Quickly kiss! Quickly kiss!"

"Kiss once!"

"Don't kiss the cheek!"

"Right right right, don't kiss the cheek, don't deceive!"

"Kiss!"

"Don't pretend to make contact!"

Chu Mo's mouth twitched. He stared dumbstruck at the excited crowd of people. But he soon ruthlessly looked at Xu Fufu and roared: "Xu 2Fu!"

Xu Fufu started to withdraw, and he returned a silly look: “Brother, this is good fortune I have given you. No need to thank me!”

Chu Mo angrily said: “You just wait!”

The people relatively familiar with Chu Mo shouted: “Little brother Chu, you must comply!”

“Ha ha ha, yes, little brother Chu. You must agree. Look how pretty she is. Are you willing to refuse?”

“It is truly good luck with women, I want it but I cannot have!”

Miao Yiniang’s beautiful eyes fell on to Chu Mo’s face as the crowd of people talked, then she walked forward with a large smile. Under Chu Mo’s dazed vision, She faced his forehead——

With a lip-smacking sound, she laid down a heavy kiss.

The surrounding people were all stunned.

Chu Mo was also stupefied. Although it was only on the forehead, Miao Yiniang’s soft cold lips still gave him an indescribable feeling. He went numb from head to toe.....hard to say the feeling.

But the surrounding crowd bustled with activity.

“Cheating!”

“That is refusing to keep a promise!”

“Too much, we want to see you kiss the mouth! The mouth!”

Miao Yiniang bitterly smiled at the surrounding onlookers. Then she looked at Xu Fufu hiding in the crowd, afraid of being beaten up: “Our original bet was to not kiss the cheek. Right?”

Xu Fufu’s mouth violently twitched. He didn’t know what hit him. He is an expert playboy, and he always plays tricks on other people, but they never backfire. He now ended up in Miao Yiniang’s clever hands.

Faced with Miao Yiniang’s interrogation, Xu Fufu could only bite the bullet and say: “You really are a liar.....”

“How did I lie?” Miao Yiniang’s coldly smiled: “The rules were to only not kiss the cheek. You didn’t say must kiss the mouth. It is a loophole in the stakes you set. Your IQ is lacking.....”

She then looked at Chu Mo with a captivating smile: “Young master, let us go!”

Chu Mo faced Xu Fufu and he revealed a dangerously cold smile: “Good, let’s go!”

Xu Fufu trembled. He knew he went a little too far this time. He not only was outsmarted by Miao Yiniang, but now Chu Mo was also provoked. He truly wanted to cut off his own two hands, but that would not be enough.....he must apologize as soon as possible!

“Hey, big sister, little black brother.....wait for me!” Xu Fufu shouted out, then he chased after Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang.

The group of people gathered at the prince mansion gate began to scatter at this time. They all thought inside: Today's activity was truly amazing. Wouldn't it be good to see such colorful activity every day?

The three people already walked very far away.

Xu Fufu followed behind with a pleading face. Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang coldly ignored him.

“Ah, little black brother, are you still not over it? Talk to me, what did you do in the Prince Mansion? Why did that old son of a bitch let you go?” Xu Fufu also pleaded at Miao Yiniang for help while he spoke to Chu Mo.

Miao Yiniang was also curious, but she didn't feel like helping Xu Fufu. She coldly ignored him.

“I say sister Miao. You really aren't right like this. My brother being mad at me is normal, but why are you mad at me? You were

very willing to make the bet with me!” Xu Fufu spoke and smiled: “Aren’t women’s faces soft? On the outside they say they don’t want it, but don’t they wholeheartedly agree inside?”

Bang!

Miao Yiniang kicked Xu Fufu’s butt: “Scram!”

“Deserved to be kicked!” Chu Mo said from the side.

“Ai ai ai, you two.....uh, I won’t speak. Is it okay if I don’t speak?” Xu Fufu felt wronged, like a doormat, he followed behind the two.

Miao Yiniang couldn’t stop her curiosity. She looked at Chu Mo and asked: “What happened in the end?”

Chu Mo said: “We will speak when we get back. We can eat a good meal. I don’t want to spoil it, I am very hungry right now.”

Miao Yiniang captivatingly smiled: “Good, I will have the chef make something for you when we get back!”

“I want to eat deep sea king crab.....I also want to eat.....” Xu Fufu immediately became happy as soon as he heard the words eat.

“Go away.” Miao Yiniang coldly smiled.

“Too much, you all can’t be like this to me!” Xu Fufu sadly rushed up: “Is my mistake still not good? Don’t I tease everyone? How could something so little stick, bothering your whole body.....uncle Xu is the legendary playboy of this generation.....”

Chu Mo’s slowly turned with a dark expression, and he said to Xu Fufu with all earnestness: “2Fu, we are brothers. Yiniang is our big sister. The relationship is very clear between us. But is that relationship clear to outsiders?”

Xu Fufu immediately stared distracted. To say the truth, he was most afraid of seeing Chu Mo’s solemn expression. Because Chu Mo is truly angry every time that happens.

Faced with Chu Mo’s question, Xu Fufu could only lower his head and softly say: “It’s my fault.”

Miao Yiniang’s eyes became misty. Her pretty face softly looked at Chu Mo through the veil.

Chu Mo continued on: “We are noble sons of Yellow Flame City. In the eyes of those other elites, we are just the wild playboys of noble parents.....we don’t have any reputation. Just like today, I smashed the Prince Mansion gate, and they only stood and watched the noise. But sister Miao Yiniang isn’t the same! She is a girl, and she appeared in the spotlight as your restaurant manager.....”

“Our.....” Xu Fufu weakly added.

“This already isn’t very easy.” Chu Mo didn’t feel like bickering with him, and he continued: “Your actions today, there would be no harm if it were only us. If it was like your normal jokes with Yiniang, she wouldn’t really get mad at you. But this time, you went too far! Do you know what those people will say when they return? Won’t they say the Gluttonous Ogre’s boss seems calm and mysterious, but actually... Do you think this will be good for her reputation? Big sister still has to find someone to marry!”

Xu Fufu’s face was a little pale. He was silent a moment, nodded, and then he looked at Miao Yiniang: “Sister, I was wrong. Really wrong. I’ll give you an apology. I was thoughtless today.....”

Miao Yiniang’s eyes became misty, yet the face behind the veil was happy: “Good, my young master knows you worry about me. It is not a problem. I do not wish to marry! Look, you shut Fufu up. Okay Fufu.....older sister isn’t mad at you. Really, your gamble included sister’s desire over the years. If it wasn’t for the crowd, sister’s kiss wouldn’t have been on his forehead.....”

“.....” Chu Mo looked at Miao Yiniang completely shocked.

Xu Fufu scratched his head and said: “Actually I know, sister isn’t mad, but I really didn’t think this matter over. I should be a little punished.....I will punish myself by only eating the deep sea king crab! I will try my best!”

“Get out!” Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang both scolded.

Xu Fufu ultimately couldn’t eat all the deep sea king crab. He

didn't even have enough time to hear all of Chu Mo's story because a man sent by his grandfather came and snatched Xu Fufu away.

How could the Grand Secretary Xu Zhongliang not hear about the activity at the Prince Mansion? The person who came to get Xu Fufu also had a message for Chu Mo. He said master Xu wanted Chu Mo to drop by for a visit when he had time.

Chu Mo naturally promised. He said he would have time in the next couple of days. Xu mansion.....it had definitely been a long time since he visited.

In the end, Chu Mo and Miao Yiniang both returned to the room in the Gluttonous Ogre.

Miao Yiniang sat opposite of Chu Mo, and she listened to Chu Mo's story. She asked somewhat startled: "So it is like that?"

"Yes ah, just like that." Chu Mo set down the wine cup and said: "This is the weak spot of that old bastard Xia Jing. Otherwise, would I have the nerve to cause trouble in the Prince Mansion?"

"You ah, it is still too risky." Miao Yiniang softly said, then she asked: "Do you really plan.....to cure that old thief's illness? He is really cheap!"

"We must establish a power. It won't be good if there is no adult help at the crucial time. My family and 2Fu's family cannot easily help. Furthermore, I selected Xia Jing.....for an even more

important reason!” Chu Mo said in a low voice.

“What reason?” Miao Yiniang’s beautiful eyes gazed at Chu Mo. This young man, his temperament is truly charming! To tell the truth, she really wasn’t mad about Xu Fufu’s gamble.

Miao Yiniang’s heart jumped as she remembered the recent kiss, even though it was only on the forehead. She became completely bashful. I shouldn’t.....do I really like this young man? How could it be? I am much older! Ah.....I really have no face!

Chu Mo couldn’t hear Miao Yiniang’s inner voice. He also didn’t carefully observe her expression, because he was also hesitating. Should he talk about his master’s condition?

But he had to let Miao Yiniang know sooner or later. Because one of the main reasons Chu Mo is establishing this power is to seek herbs for the Demon Lord.

Chapter 70: History Of Miao Yiniang

Chu Mo also thought to tell his master, then master and disciple could work together with all their might, but he decided against it in the end.

Let's say the Demon Lord believes his words without needing to explain anything. That amount of medicine is definitely not a quantity one or two people could harvest! Could it be Chu Mo would let this world-ending cultivator go everywhere and plunder?

Apart from that, how could he make the medicine for him? Should he go in the mountains and dig a cave? A master cultivator doesn't necessarily have the skills to make medicine!

Chu Mo already knew his master wasn't a person from this world. Then without exaggerating, the Demon Lord is no equal to Chu Mo when it comes to finding things in Da Xia!

He ought to be worried about his master as a disciple.

So Chu Mo decided to temporarily not tell his master about the medicine. After all, Master said he wouldn't leave anytime soon. But when he sees master tomorrow, should he ask him how he is doing?

He remembered the time master drove him away, his condition seemed very bad. But he was much better this time meeting him. Chu Mo didn't know the reason for this.

If it weren't for the jade clearly analyzing the Demon Lord's present condition, Chu Mo would even believe his master's poison had been cured.

"This matter will take a long time to talk about. I originally left Yellow Flame City intending to cross the icefield, and seek a master at the Immortal Sky....." Chu Mo recollected those short times. There was still a bitter feeling inside. A teenage youngster, traveling all alone on the snowy icefield. People who had not experienced it could never understand that feeling.

"Immortal Sky? You actually wanted to enter that place?" Miao Yinian's pupils flashed with disdain. Yet she still said: "But with your talent, entering the Immortal Sky.....should be no pressure."

"Ha ha, I was denied!" Chu Mo bitterly laughed, then he told of meeting the Demon Lord, and the disgrace suffered at the Immortal Sky.

Miao Yiniang listened stupefied, then she lovingly looked at Chu Mo: "Young master, I know you suffered many hardships over the past half year, but I never thought you would experience so many things."

She then muttered: "Demon Lord.....I have never heard that name." Miao Yiniang's beautiful eyes flickered: "He said he wasn't of this world, don't tell me it is the Spirit World?"

"Spirit World? What place is that?" This is the first time Chu Mo

had heard of this place. He also hid an idea in his heart: Could Xiaoyu be in that place? Therefore he eagerly looked at Miao Yiniang: “Sister, quickly tell me!”

“The Spirit World ah.....I only heard it mentioned. My sect actually wasn’t that powerful, at least not in my generation. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have been miserably chased by those people.” Miao Yiniang softly smiled. That smile carried much bitterness inside: “But my master’s sect, it was actually one of the top sects in the Vermilion Bird continent several hundred years ago.”

“Big sister actually comes from the Vermilion Bird continent?” Chu Mo immediately stared with big eyes, his face shocked. According to Chu Mo, the Azure Dragon continent is already very large. He had known Miao Yiniang for four years, but Chu Mo never thought she was someone from another continent.

“Yes ah, that is a sad past. I never wish to remember.” Miao Yiniang softly sighed. The space on her brow became very serious.

“If you don’t wish to remember, then do not tell.” Chu Mo also had things he didn’t wish to remember. He knew that kind of suffering.

“Ha ha, it’s actually nothing. It all happened a long time ago.” Miao Yiniang softly spoke: “My sect was called Misty Palace. It was a name that shook the Vermilion Bird continent in the past. The sect was considered on the same level as the Azure Dragon continent’s Immortal Sky.”

“Four hundred years ago, Misty Palace reached a flourishing period. An ancestor inside the palace succeeded at breaking through the innate state, smashing the void and leaving. It is said the place he went to is the Spirit World!” Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo: “Legends say, that is a place filled with Spirit Qi. It is completely different that this world that only has Yuan Qi!”

“Then.....our world, how many cultivation ranks are there in total?” The strongest cultivation rank Chu Mo actually knew was his grandfather’s. A peak yellow rank four cultivator, on the cusp of breaking into the fifth rank.

The strongest he had heard of was Da Xia’s current military Marshal, Fang Mingtong. But Chu Mo didn’t know what realm Marshal Fang had reached.

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo: “You have already stepped into the cultivation path. I will explain to you.”

Miao Yiniang softly spoke: “This world’s realms are split into nine ranks. The first and second ranks are considered idle. The third and fourth are stepping into the Yuan Closure. The fifth rank can kill a thousand men. The sixth rank can move unhindered through the secular world. Only at the seventh rank is it seen that climbing the mountain is actually very difficult. The eighth rank can see the door. The ninth rank is the boundless innate road, only to realize there is a clear blue sky outside!’

“Ninth rank boundless innate road.....to realize there is a clear

blue sky outside.” Chu Mo mumbled, then he somewhat bitterly said: “Looks like.....my current realm is actually very weak. I wish to reach the ninth realm.....how much time does that take?”

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo, somewhat speechless: “To speak in such a way, do you wish to make sister feel ashamed?”

Chu Mo raised his head and looked at Miao Yiniang.

Miao Yiniang said: “You should know, big sister is already twenty three years old. I’m ten whole years older than you! My current realm isn’t past yellow rank three. Like this, big sister was called a rare talent within the sect. And now you.....are only thirteen years old. Your realm already exceeds big sister! Do you believe your cultivation slow? Half a year ago, you were only a yellow rank two. Do you know how hard it is to break the Yuan Closure?”

Chu Mo’s mouth twitched, actually somewhat speechless.

Miao Yiniang continued: “First, second, and third ranks correspond to the strength of oxen and horses, tigers and leopards, and finally dragon-like power. So a yellow rank three’s power could already be considered very powerful! They have broken through the Yuan Closure, and reached the peak cultivation of the body refinement stage. Rank four, five, and six realms separate into the Iron Bone state, Iron Blood state, and the Golden Stone state. At the Golden Stone state, one could practically be considered the strongest warrior in the secular world! Da Xia’s military Marshal is rank six at most!”

Chu Mo said: “Rank six can move unhindered through the secular world.....”

Miao Yiniang nodded: “Right, at this rank, one can truly move through the secular world without any hindrance. The old devil in the Prince Mansion ought to be a peak yellow rank six cultivator!”

Hiss!

Chu Mo couldn't help but suck in cool air. At the same time, he began to sweat about his behavior today. He bitterly laughed: “I really am ignorant and fearless.”

“You think? Otherwise why was I so worried about you?” Miao Yiniang gave a haughty look to Chu Mo: “Rank seven, eight, and nine are considered the Intent refinement phase. They are divided into the Understanding Intent state, Comprehending Intent state, and the Intent of Heaven state. At the Intent of Heaven state, the rank nine experts are the large sect masters! This level of expert, there aren't many under the heavens!”

Chu Mo let out a long sigh. He said: “It appears that I am [a frog at the bottom of a well](#).”

[TL: A frog at the bottom of a well is an ignorant person. Read about [the story here](#)]

“There's no use being discouraged. You have a master from the Spirit World. The cultivation method is certainly countless times better than one from this world! Your rank up speed is certainly faster than we could even imagine.” Miao Yiniang somewhat

enviously spoke.

Chu Mo thought of the words said when master gave him Heaven's Will My Will——

“This is Heaven's Will My Will. It is said to be the most powerful scripture on the earth!”

“Not one of!”

“Although there are only two two incomplete chapters, but if you can thoroughly comprehend the two incomplete chapters, it will guarantee you, will be unrivaled throughout the world!”

“The cultivation speed of the top scriptures on these four continents aren't even one tenth of this one!”

Chu Mo at last understood why master spoke that way. Heaven's Will My Will originally didn't belong to this world!

“No wonder my cultivation speed is that fast.” Chu Mo secretly thought. Then he asked Miao Yiniang: “So big sister's master, what unforeseen event happened to your master?”

“Misty Palace was glorious in those years. Only it is a pity..... after ancestor ascended, Misty Palace lacked a mighty person in charge. Ancestor's mighty name yet lived on for another two hundred years. But after a long time, at my generation, hundreds of years had passed. Several Misty Palace elders lacked hope at

breaking through, and they successively passed away. This caused the successors to increasingly decline.”

Miao Yiniang’s carried a bitter expression: “Contrary to what you might expect, the Misty Palace still has several of the world’s top scriptures and skills. These things caused too many people to covet.....”

Chu Mo looked at Miao Yiniang. He didn’t know what to say to comfort her. He could only quietly listen.

“Ten sects allied and broke through the defense array of the Misty Palace. The elders all went out to welcome the fight. Not a single one escaped. That day.....battle cries shook the heavens!”

“Master brought a dozen of us outstanding sisters together. Master said we couldn’t stop the attack.....and we could fight to the death, but the bloodline of the Misty Palace couldn’t be cut off! As a result, those elders divided up the possessions of the older generations. They passed out their storage rings to us twelve sisters. Each person received one ring. All the scriptures and skills of the Misty Palace were divided into twelve parts.....”

“I was sent away by a transfer spell by several masters, directly to the Azure Dragon continent. The other sisters were all sent out.”

“Master told us twelve sisters at that time, whoever seeks revenge must wait until they reach the innate realm. But master knew the possibility was slight, practically impossible. They let us have a chance to pass down the scriptures and methods of the

Misty Palace. They didn't wish for the Misty Palace heritage to break off. I am a representative of the Misty Palace."

Miao Yiniang's tears could no longer be held back. She softly said: "Big sister is very powerless, all these years, I haven't even dared expose the slightest rumor, much less pass on scripture or skills.....because the people of the Vermilion Bird continent, they are always seeking me and my sisters. They cannot find us on the Vermilion Bird continent. They will certainly come seeking on other continents. Big sister's power is too weak, I never dare....."

Chu Mo looked at Miao Yiniang's face full of tears, and he softly comforted: "Don't worry big sister. Our future will certainly be better and better! This power being set up is not just mine, it is the three of ours!"

"Yes, big sister is truly too happy seeing you return!" Miao Yiniang lifted her head and looked at Chu Mo: "Especially the moment I can't surpass you. You don't know how happy I am! It makes me even happier than my own breakthrough!"

"Right, how exactly did you end up being pursued back then? Were those men from the Vermilion Bird continent?" Chu Mo asked.

"No, I was transported to the Azure Dragon Continent. My entire being was ignorant, not knowing where I was going or where to go. As a result, I caught the eye of several disciples that emerged from a sect. Their strength was a little less than my own, but not much less. I wasn't a match for all of them solo. I went on the run after killing two of them, until I met you and Xu Fufu." Miao Yiniang

said: “As a result, big sister must use her life to repay your kindness!”

Chapter 71: Wishful Thinking?

Chu Mo looked at Miao Yiniang, then shook his head: “Look, why bring this matter up again?”

Miao Yiniang regretfully faced Chu Mo: “Okay, I won’t bring it up later. You just said establishing this power has something to do with your master. We were torn away from the topic.”

Chu Mo smiled: “Not torn away, I now have the knowledge of big sister, at least.....I now know I am very weak. I still have a long road to walk!”

Chu Mo softly sighed. His eyes revealed a firm and persistent color: “My master is severely poisoned, and I want to cure him. I need a large amount of drug ingredients. The amount is beyond enormous. If you knew how much, it would certainly scare you to death. So, I must have a formidable power to help us. And undertake this matter.”

“So it is like that. Don’t worry, your problems are my problems.” Miao Yiniang earnestly spoke, staring at Chu Mo’s distinct black and white eyes.

“Big sister’s problems are also my problems. Wait until the day. I will step into the Innate state, go to the Vermillion Bird continent, and completely wipe away big sister’s enemies!” Chu Mo smiled.

Miao Yiniang wiped the tears from the corners of her eyes. She sweetly smiled: “Big sister believes you will certainly do it! Big

Sister will certainly see that day!”

“Yes, who do you think I am ah!” Chu Mo said. Although he hurt a little inside, because.....this is not his way of acting.

Miao Yiniang smiled: “You are this world’s most outstanding..... little man!”

Chu Mo endured the pain in his innermost depths. He looked at Miao Yiniang and thought: Men are men, why must she add on the word little? I’m already thirteen! I’m not little!

Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo: “So, are you really going to cure Xia Jing’s defect?”

Chu Mo smiled: “If he is really able to obey and listen, curing him.....will be no problem.”

Miao Yiniang said: “The things he has done over the past few years are deserving of death. Helping cure him.....it is letting him off too easy. But generally speaking, none of those big characters are completely clean!”

Chu Mo nodded: “Yes ah, I said cure him, but there is actually more. I plan on obtaining a large amount of medicine from him. I am also no good person.....”

“How can that be the same?” Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo: “Don’t compare yourself with that filthy person. In your heart,

you are the best person in the world!”

Chu Mo softly said: “I feel I am the most ordinary person in the world. There is goodness, and also selfishness. I am not good or evil, only pieces of each.”

“Who would say they aren’t selfish in this world? Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo: “Big sister is no good, she shouldn’t ask you about the prince. Only she feels that old thief is getting off easy.”

“This matter, you should actually watch him yourself.” Chu Mo said: “I still will help cure his illness, and naturally I will have his life!”

Miao Yiniang’s pupils flashed. She smiled: “As it ought to be!” She still worried Chu Mo would come out at a loss from that old thief. She didn’t care about anything so long as Chu Mo wasn’t hurt.

Just like Chu Mo said, sometimes, people aren’t separated into good and evil, only pieces of each! To live in this world, everyone must eat, everyone has emotions and desires. Who is not the least bit selfish?

Chu Mo returned alone to the General’s mansion after the meal.

He didn’t see one-armed uncle. Chu Mo reckoned he was busy with the Yuan Beast goods.

Chu Mo started to think over the events today after returning to his room, summarizing the successes and failures.

This is a habit acquired by Chu Mo over the past half year. Only like this could he become even better and progress faster.

“I already knew the Prince Mansion housed a terrifying power, but I never thought that person would actually be that powerful. Sister Yiniang said he should be at the peak of the sixth realm..... couldn’t he easily strike me dead?” Chu Mo muttered to himself. He felt somewhat afraid inside.

“It looks like I need to think about the totality of things before I do them.....for instance, what kind of method will I use to block that incredibly strong man at the Prince Mansion?”

Chu Mo squinted then muttered: “Medicine!”

“Xia Jing suffered my curses with great difficulty, all so that I would cure his sickness!”

“Then.....a strength that has already reached the peak of the sixth realm, a Golden Stone cultivator that can move unhindered through the world. Why does he want to hide in the prince mansion of the secular world? He wants resources!”

The current Chu Mo was no longer that helpless youth fleeing from Yellow Flame City half a year ago. Chu Mo far exceeded his peers after going through so many experiences. He now

understood the importance of resources.

Exceedingly high level cultivators need an alarming amount of resources. They must continuously cultivate every day. Where would they find the time to gather resources?

So, staying at the Prince Mansion is the best choice!

“I caused a lot of trouble inside the Prince Mansion, and he didn’t act. So the contract between him and Xia Jing must be to only protect Xia Jing!” Chu Mo closed his eyes and thought: Otherwise, Xia Jing only needed to make him act in the beginning. How would I even be standing here today?

“It must be like that!” Chu Mo’s eyes flashed bright crystal rays of light. He muttered: “In other words, I only need to know what he wants. Then I can use him the same!”

Chu Mo’s heart finally settled down after thinking these things, and he started to cultivate.

He is only a little bit away from reaching the fourth rank. According to Chu Mo’s calculations, after about ten days, on approximately the new year, he should be able to break into the fourth rank!

He is in the Yuan Closure realm, but the fourth realm is equivalent to stepping from the body refinement stage into the bone refinement period. It is stepping into a completely new

domain. Each aspect of strength will certainly increase a large amount.

“Would grandfather be shocked into disbelief if he knew I used half a year’s time to break into the fourth realm?”

Chu Mo thought as he started Heaven’s Will My Will.

Like dark colored water, a large amount of Yuan Qi from within Yellow Flame City started to advance towards the General’s house, madly gathering together.

As soon as it started, several people in the Prince Mansion, the Emperor’s Palace, and the Marshal’s Mansion.....their eyes all opened, and their faces revealed a shocked color.

“Yellow Flame City.....when did suck a cultivator come?” Several people had the same thought occur at different places.

Because the rate that Heaven’s Will My Will sucks in Yuan Qi is beyond terrifying. It completely smashed the balance in Yellow Flame City. Therefore, those people all felt it within the first instance. But they had no means to find out who the person was. They still were not at that level!

Chu Mo had no clue that his cultivation actually shocked the strongest characters within Yellow Flame City.

He already entered into a meditative state. His whole body

appeared to be asleep. A large amount of Yuan Qi followed his meridians and madly rushed inside. Yuan Qi accumulated in Chu Mo's dantian, increasing in size and becoming more dense.

Cultivation is a very long process. Even if one is a world-ending talent, they still must work hard.

Chu Mo woke up from the meditative state early morning the next day. He felt entirely refreshed, and his strength seemed to have a little improvement.

"This type of Yuan Qi accumulation will experience a change after a certain point. It is like water. One drop is very weak, practically doing nothing, but countless drops of water can break dams, topple mountains, and it can ignore any obstacle, pushing open a path!" The Demon Lord sat on a chair in Chu Mo's room. He looked at the joyous Chu Mo who had just opened his eyes: "This type of change, we call it.....a breakthrough!"

"Master, you returned!" Chu Mo's face revealed a happy expression.

"Yes, your recent performance isn't bad, but what you did yesterday was slightly reckless." The Demon Lord plainly said: "There exists a person strong enough to crush you in the Prince Mansion."

"You know what I did?" Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord a little stupefied.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “I wasn’t in Yellow Flame City yesterday, but a Spirit Record is always on your body.”

“Can it be that you know everything I say?” Chu Mo stared with big eyes at the Demon Lord.

“I don’t know everything.” The Demon Lord plainly said: “Wait until you cultivate the Spirit Sense, you will understand. A Spirit Record is on your body. I can feel whenever anything strange happens. For instance, I could sense you at the Prince Mansion. I also felt another Spirit Sense user observing you.”

“The sixth realm has Spirit Sense?” Chu Mo asked.

“They do, but very weak.” Demon Lord nodded.

“Then did he discover master?” Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord, his heart filled with curiosity. What realm is his master in?

“Someone like him? Maybe in the next life!” The Demon Lord plainly said.

Ha!

Chu Mo let out a long breath: “That is good!” At the same time he thought: Doesn’t master seem a little bit different than before? It seems.....he isn’t as cold as before? Chu Mo had spent many entire days with the Demon Lord, and he understood the Demon Lord very well. Chu Mo could feel the change in the Demon Lord’s

nature very clearly.

“Master?”

“Yes.”

“Your body.....is it temporarily unhindered?”

“For a couple years, unhindered.”

“How did you do it?”

“Why do you ask this?”

Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord, then he earnestly said: “I want to seek a cure for you!”

The Demon Lord shook his head: “Don’t, there is none in this world!”

“Do you know the materials needed to cure it?” Chu Mo asked.

“They aren’t in this world.” The Demon Lord shook his head and plainly said.

“Then can’t you temporarily leave?” Chu Mo asked.

“I must stay here for a period.” The Demon Lord said.

“Good!” Chu Mo relaxed a little inside, then he looked at the Demon Lord: “Master, this world’s medicine has some similar properties. There may not be the exact medicine to cure the Seven Demon Poison, but there must certainly be medicine with the same nature!”

The Demon Lord had approval for Chu Mo’s words on the inside, but his face revealed a cold smile: “Do you think I don’t know? Given that you find the medicine, then what? Are you going to take ten thousand kg, or a hundred thousand kg of medicine and place it into one pill? This type of thing would be impossible for the world’s greatest pill refinement master, let alone yourself! So don’t think the heavens will open! Focus on cultivating.”

Chu Mo was scolded, but he was actually very happy inside. He thought: Master, I cannot, but the jade can! Wait until I refine the poison curing pill. What will your expression be then?

Chu Mo felt extremely happy when he thought of that scene.

Chapter 72: Yuan Beast Blood Bath

Soon after, the Demon Lord started to teach Chu Mo the general knowledge of cultivation. The Demon Lord's knowledge was far greater than anyone else Chu Mo had met in the world.

Chu Mo discovered that the Demon Lord's answers were actually on a higher level than the explanations that came from Qi Xiaoyu!

Chu Mo was extremely curious about the Demon Lord's past, but he didn't dare ask at this time. A beating would certainly be unavoidable.

After teaching for two hours, the Demon Lord withdrew a large barrel, and he placed it into the room. A dense bloody smell started to pass over, and a terrifyingly mighty pressure started to spread at the same time.

This mighty pressure made Chu Mo feel like he couldn't breathe. He looked at the barrel of blood, and his mouth twitched. Chu Mo said to the Demon Lord: "Master.....what is this?"

"Giving you a bath!" The Demon Lord spoke simply.

"A bath....." Chu Mo was dumbstruck. His mouth twitched, and he was completely unwilling inside.

"You will soon enter the bone refinement state. Your physique is currently too weak. It is only around the fifth rank, you need to

increase. You will eventually reach the ninth rank physique at some point in time.” The Demon Lord said without any expression.

“Ninth rank physique?” Chu Mo muttered. He was startled inside. He thought of Big Fool.....cough cough, Gao Yingjun. Isn’t that guy at the ninth rank physique?

“Enter!” The Demon Lord commanded.

Chu Mo didn’t dare resist. He was very unwilling, but he knew Master had his best interests.

Chu Mo reluctantly stripped down to his underwear and plunged inside, but he immediately screamed. Chu Mo grabbed the sides wanting to jump out.

The Demon Lord pressed down on his head and pushed Chu Mo’s entire body back inside.

Chu Mo shouted: “I’ll burn to death.....this blood.....how can it be so hot? This isn’t blood.....is it magma? Hiss.....I feel like my entire body will melt.....master.....quick let me go.....just a moment!”

The Demon Lord didn’t pay attention to him. He only pressed down on Chu Mo’s head with his hand. Chu Mo struggled for his life, but he was unable to escape from the barrel.

“It burns to death.....I’m already dead.....” Chu Mo eyelids sunk

down, and he weakly muttered.

“You never said anything when I originally tortured you. Did your courage get eaten by a dog?” The Demon Lord coldly asked.

“You weren’t my master at that time, just a big bastard.....when facing an enemy’s torture, naturally I must grit my teeth and endure. I cannot let my grandfather lose face!” Chu Mo returned a haughty look: “Now you are my master. You are the person in that I am closest to in this world. I naturally must yell when I suffer pain!”

Faced with Chu Mo’s response, the Demon Lord stared blankly. Then he coldly snorted and didn’t say anything else.

Chu Mo felt his whole body had completely fused together with the blood. He already couldn’t feel anything. Only his ability to think let him know he was still alive.

“Master, what kind of blood is this? How is it so dreadful? Chu Mo weakly asked.

“Four kinds of rank seven Yuan beast blood. You can’t handle an higher rank Yuan beast blood with your current physique.” The Demon Lord plainly answered.

“Rank seven Yuan Beast.....one-armed uncle would go crazy if he knew I took a bath in rank seven Yuan beast blood!” Chu Mo muttered: “Do I just have to soak one time?”

The Demon Lord coldly laughed: “Why? Your physique should increase to the seventh rank in two years time. It won’t be perfect, but it is manageable. The materials in this world will only let you reach this degree at most.”

“Ah! Let me die!” Chu Mo grieved. Chu Mo clearly knew that the Demon Lord already blocked the noise in this room from the outside world, so he wasn’t afraid of his miserable cries escaping to the outside.

“Survive the first one, it will be much better later on.” The Demon Lord said.

“The problem is, I feel this time is very hard to endure.” Chu Mo’s head drooped as he spoke.

But there was a clear change after Chu Mo entered. The mighty pressure from the blood completely disappeared. Apart from the bloody stench, Chu Mo didn’t sense anything else.

“You still take me for the evil person that originally tortured you.” The Demon Lord plainly said: “You need to soak three times a month for two years.”

“Not every day?” Chu Mo immediately felt his life had hope. His face revealed a happy color. The needs of people are indeed dependent on the situation.....able to change at any time!

Chu Mo felt like dying after soaking one time. He felt complete despair after finding out he had to soak for two years. But master said he only needed to soak three times per month.....Chu Mo naturally felt very happy.

“Soaking every day.....your body would immediately rot off.” The Demon Lord said: “Besides, do you really think these Yuan beasts are raised by me?”

“Ha ha, master is the best!” Chu Mo remembered to flatter.

“Oh come on! You were just gnashing your teeth at me.” The Demon Lord coldly smiled.

“Master.”

“Yes?”

“What exactly is a physique rank?”

“People [absorb the energy between heaven and earth](#), and they can let their original martial studying manner increase in power. But these things are external martial power. It is extremely limited towards changing the body. Your body cannot bear the strong energy after reaching a new height, so you must increase your physique quality when you wish to increase to a higher realm.

[TL: When he talks about the absorption of energy between heaven and earth, he is talking about cultivating.]

“So it is like that.....” Chu Mo considered it over.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “A person’s physique can go from the first to the ninth rank, and then to the Innate! The Innate physique.....it seems to only exists in legends. I at least have never heard of one. But I have seen a few people with rank nine physiques. They possess unimaginable power using just their muscles!”

Chu Mo thought of Gao Yingjun. He immediately acknowledged the Demon Lord’s words. That giant lacked any cultivation, and he had no realm. He could casually punch with a force of over ten thousand kg with just his muscles. It is truly an astonishing feeling.

“Then.....is a rank nine physique considered incredible in master’s realm?” Chu Mo wanted to know if this physique was the norm in the Demon Lord’s world.

It would be terrible if he could be an overlord in this world, and then he would be sludge in a higher world.

“No matter which world, they are all the same.” The Demon Lord plainly said: “The cultivation realms go higher and higher, but as for the physique.....it only goes from one to nine, and then to the Innate! Your physique would be considered top level even in the Spirit World, but I want to make you even better.”

Chu Mo was immediately filled with gratitude. This was also the first time Chu Mo heard the words Spirit World from master’s

mouth.

The blood from the cask was still hot like a broiling flame, continuously heating his body. That type of feeling was much more difficult to endure than the Demon Lord's prior torture!

So Chu Mo needed to distract his attention. He could finally endure it a little like that. He is a staunch person in the end. He understood master's pain and understood that type of treatment. Few people on the four continents could enjoy the moment.

Yes, enjoy.

“Master, can you tell me about yourself? For instance.....when you were in the Spirit World? Later on.....I wish to go to the Spirit World. It would be better if you told me about it. What kind of place is the Spirit World?” Chu Mo asked.

“I am not of the Spirit World.” The Demon Lord didn't refuse Chu Mo's question this time. He pulled of a chair and sat opposite of Chu Mo: “I come from the Immortal World!”

“Ah?” Chu Mo's eyes couldn't help but grow large upon hearing the Demon Lord's words, even though he was tortured by the rank seven Yuan beast blood until he couldn't feel life or death. His mouth was so wide that you could place an egg inside: “Immortal.....Immortal World?”

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “Have you ever heard the

saying ‘[There are people beyond the people, and there are heavens beyond the heavens.](#)’”

[TL: The phrase means that there is an ocean of things out there beyond your little pond.]

“Of course I’ve heard.....” Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord shocked: “Master, your meaning is that there is an Immortal World above the Spirit world? Then.....is there anything above the Immortal World?”

The Demon Lord raised his head, recollecting something, then he sighed: “There is also the Heavens.”

Chu Mo was entirely shocked. He almost entirely forgot the pain coming from his body. This is beyond what he could possibly dream. His own master actually comes from a world higher than the Spirit World.

“In the Immortal World.....are there only immortals living there? And the Heavens? What kind of people live there? Gods?” Chu Mo asked with a shocked face.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo, and he plainly said: “Boy, those things are endlessly far away from you. I don’t ever wish to talk about them with you. It’s not that I wish to conceal things from you, but I’m afraid you would suffer! The world you live in, on these four continents, it is called the human world. It is also called the ordinary realm.”

“Then why have you suddenly told me these things today?” Chu

Mo asked.

“You are a little stronger than I even imagined. It is not a big deal that you are aware.” The Demon Lord said.

“Ha ha, then, I am very strong! I will eventually go to the Spirit World and seek my wife!” Chu Mo closed his eyes, and a smile spread: “I grew up in the ordinary realm, but why does that matter? I have a master from the Immortal World! I have the best cultivation scripture in this world! I have nothing to be afraid of!”

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo, and he hesitated. The words he was about to say never came out.

He wanted to tell Chu Mo about the princess’s race. A person like her marrying someone from the ordinary realm is an impossibility. In addition, her clone body crumbled, and she could only send the most weak message. Her original body suffered heavy damage, and she most likely wouldn’t remember Chu Mo at all!

The Demon Lord knew that the boy would suffer a serious blow as soon as he heard these words.

He is strong, but the Demon Lord feared he could not withstand this kind of blow.

He found it best to let him discover for himself at a later day.

Perhaps he may not necessarily even find that girl when he

ascends the the Spirit World. Right now he his small. There is still a long time.....won't it weaken?

This is what the Demon Lord thought.

Chapter 73: So It Was You

Chu Mo soaked in his Yuan beast blood bath for over two hours. The Demon Lord finally lifted him out of the barrel when his soul was just about to melt as well.

It wasn't that Chu Mo didn't want to get out himself, but he couldn't even move a finger at that time.

Chu Mo felt his body had practically disappeared. He couldn't feel anything when the Demon Lord hauled him out of the Yuan beast blood.

The Demon Lord then pulled out another large barrel. It was filled with all kinds of fragrant medicine, and a thick medicinal smell floated out from inside.

He tossed Chu Mo inside and said: "You can soak for two hours." His figure flashed as he spoke, and then he disappeared along with the barrel of Yuan beast blood.

Aaah!

Chu Mo let out a sigh after a long time. He could finally feel his body existed. He could feel strength slowly return to his body after an hour.

He looked at his own thin frame, and he mumbled: "Two years.....three times every month. That's thirty-six times in one

year, seventy-two in two years. Right now.....there's only seventy one left? Hey.....really not bad.”

Chu Mo climbed out of the barrel as he spoke. He then put on some clean clothes after washing. He stepped outside invigorated.

Chu Mo didn't feel a large change in his body after bathing in the Yuan beast blood this one time.

It was like cultivating Heavens Will My will after only a few words were added to the scripture. After cultivating, there isn't a completely different feeling than the before.

“Perhaps refining the body is a long term process?” Chu Mo thought. After all, he could only reach rank seven after two years.....other people like Gao Yingjun were born at that ninth rank. It's really not fair!”

After stepping outside, Chu Mo went towards the Xu house instead of heading straight to the Prince Mansion.

There were still some finishing touches to be done with yesterday's affair. He also promised to stop by the Xu house for a visit.

Chu Mo going to the Xu household was about the same as Xu Fufu going to the Fang household. Chu Mo was already very comfortable even though the most powerful person lived there. It wasn't the slightest bit strange or intimidating.

The guards at the gate all greeted him with a good-intentioned smile. Chu Mo was very comfortable. This is his brother's home!

Chu Mo comfortably walked inside. The Xu household isn't as large as the Prince Mansion, but it certainly isn't small. One had to walk for a long time to finally reach the garden.

"Oh? Chu Mo? You finally came to see me boy?" An old voice with a hint of teasing suddenly came from the side.

A fifty year old looking man with a rosy face walked out of the gardens.

The older man wore ordinary gray cloth clothes. He was carrying a large pair of scissors in his hands, and there was a layer of sweat on his forehead. One would believe he was a gardener if they didn't know better.

"Grandpa Xu? You are in the house?" Chu Mo hurriedly paid his respects, because this person that looks like the gardener is actually the Grand Secretary.....the great Xu Zhongliang!

"Little boy, can't you even pretend? Look at your shocked expression, clearly you think I'm an old man!" Xu Zhongliang pretended to have a stiff face as he stared at Chu Mo.

"Ha ha grandpa Xu. You have a thousand things to do every day! Always so busy! Who of my generation would expect to come here

and see you. Anyways, you aren't old, but rather sturdy." Chu Mo laughed.

"You sure can talk child. I would be satisfied if my grandson was just half like you." Xu Zhongliang passed the scissors in his hands to a person standing by him. He slapped the dirt off his body, and he looked at Chu Mo: "Let's go, accompany this old man for a chat?"

"Good!" Chu Mo responded straightforward. He walked inside behind Xu Zhongliang.

This scene would certainly startle outsiders if they saw. Who would have thought that the always tough Grand Secretary would have such an approachable side. Moreover, the opposite party..... is a teenage youth.

All the people in the Xu household were completely accustomed to this scene. They didn't even say anything strange.

Chu Mo followed Xu Zhongliang into his study.

The old man washed his hands, and then he withdrew a jar of tea. He tossed it to Chu Mo: "I'm tired, you make it!"

Chu Mo received the tea jar with a smile, then he very skillfully started to make the tea. He said: "Grandpa Xu, don't you think the tea is better tasting when you make it?"

“Ah, I’m old, and lived life.....my posture is no longer straight. I should also give you young people a chance.” Xu Zhongliang said casually.

Chu Mo was yet slightly shocked. He held a cup of tea before Xu Zhongliang and smiled: “How old is grandpa Xu? Your posture is good. You could live a hundred years without any problems.”

Xu Zhongliang shook his head: “Too old, my body knows.”

Chu Mo then arranged [the Go board](#). He picked up a black piece, and then he looked at Xu Zhongliang: “Me first?”

[TL: It’s some unexplained game. It isn’t actually chess, but the author calls it chess.]

[Lisa Hayes: I think they're playing [Go](#), since they're using black and white pieces, plus it's a traditional Chinese game. Soo... i took the liberty of changing it]

Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo with a deep expression: “Child, didn’t you always let this old man go first when we played [Go](#)?”

“Sometimes you need to change things up.....” Chu Mo smiled with his teeth, and he placed the black piece on the board.

“You dare take the lead.....hey, good!” Xu Zhongliang said, and he twirled a white piece, then he placed it on the board: “I heard you smashed down Xia Jing’s Prince Mansion gate yesterday?”

Chu Mo thought a moment, and he picked up and dropped the

second black piece “Yes ah, the gate is the face, I smashed the face.....they wanted my life, so I hit their face. You could say I still came out behind.”

“You child.....” Xu Zhongliang couldn’t help but smile and shake his head. He also moved another white piece on the board: “They wanted you life, but you are still alive and kicking now? You really hit them ruthlessly, young people are sure hot-blooded and full of energy. The even more clever part is that you hit them without them even responding.....it is truly [a wave dying before striking the beach!](#)”

[TL: The saying here means something big was going to happen, but it fizzled out.]

The two talked and constantly played [Go](#) at the same time.

Xu 2Fu came at some unknown point in time, and he quietly stood to the side and watched. That guy is always very active outside, but at home.....he is very well-behaved, especially in front of grandfather Xu Zhongliang.

“Some methods are good. It can sometimes be harmless when young people do things a little extreme. But, your style.....is it not actually more steady compared to what one might expect?” Xu Zhongliang’s brow wrinkled up, a tangled expression: “Just like with the [Go](#) today.....in the past, you could never have done what you did yesterday. But not only did you do it, but you executed it beautifully.....little fellow. I haven’t seen you for half a year, but you sure have grown much!”

Chu Mo chuckled, and he moved a [Go](#) piece: “They are all things grandfather Xu taught.”

“Ah, this old man indeed knows himself. To truly instruct there needs to be direction. The first to show advantage wasn’t you.” Xu Zhongliang spoke, then he raised his head and winked at spectating Xu Fufu.

Xu Fufu felt wronged. His mouth twitched. He was just here watching, who is the old man trying to provoke?

“You have drive, courage, strategy, and intelligence.....you truly mature more and more, only you don’t understand respect for elders and cherishing the youth. Little thing.....you’re quietly arranging something. You are really planning to slaughter my great dragon.....do you really think that’s good?” Xu Zhongliang gave a supercilious look, and he threw the [go](#) piece onto the board: “No more! Little thing, your provocations have made me impatient!”

Xu Fufu looked away, fighting back a smile. Who would have thought the great and powerful Xu Zhongliang would actually be so shameless in [Go](#).

Chu Mo grinned wide, and he didn’t say anything to provoke the huffy old man. He gathered some pieces off of the board, and he placed them back in the container. He plainly said: “Grandfather Xu, it seems there are many troubles in the country recently?”

“When aren’t there troubles?” Xu Zhongliang lightly sighed and

leaned back against his chair. Xu 2Fu had great perception of the situation. He walked in and started to softly massage his grandfather's shoulder. Xu Zhong half closed his eyes and sighed: "Grand Secretary.....sounds powerful, but it is a pain. Very few people realize it. The prime minister of the world.....hah, this world.....is it so easy to manage?"

"Will a war break out?" Chu Mo asked.

Xu Zhongliang suddenly sat up straight. His eyes opened wide, and they revealed a sharp light. The Grand Secretary finally displayed the proper imposing manner of his position: "How do you know? Did your grandfather say? No.....your grandfather is a hardened general. How could he tell you such a secret plan?"

Chu Mo shook his head and said: "I haven't seen my grandfather in a long time, and I haven't spoken with him. I returned here through the grasslands. I was caught up in the Wang Court coup d'etat that occurred there. I stopped over there for a time, and I did a small thing."

"Grassland? Small things? Youngster?" Xu Zhongliang muttered with his brow wrinkled. He suddenly raised his head and stared at Chu Mo. His face was a shocked color: "Are you Lin Bai?"

"Ah? How do you know?" This time Chu Mo was startled. He somewhat foolishly stared at Xu Zhongliang, his brains not working quick enough.

He never deliberately concealed this status, but it must be said

that basically no one knew!

The Grand Secretary of Da Xia was separated by thousands of miles.....how could he know?

“So it was you! It was really you? It was actually you!” Xu Zhongliang stared at Chu Mo for a long time. A significantly deep smile spread, and he became more and more happy.

“.....really I never thought, ha ha ha ha! Our Da Xia.....it actually gave birth to such a talent!” Xu Zhongliang laughed. He said to Xu Fufu, who was also staring with a slacked expression: “Go, tell the kitchen to make several dishes. For lunch, we will have several drinks with Chu Mo.....no, noble son Lin Bai!

Xu Fufu stared expressionless at Chu Mo. He muttered: “This..... this, just what is going on?”

Xu Zhongliang said in a low voice: “Quickly go, quick. Children shouldn’t ask so much about grownup affairs.” The old man became excited. He somehow forgot that Chu Mo is actually the same age as his own grandson.

Xu Fufu stared dumbstruck with his mouth twitching, then he turned and left. He muttered to himself: “What has little black Chu done now? How did he make grandfather lose his reserve? Don’t tell me he usurped the Wang Court for the princess? The actual person hasn’t shown his true colors!”

“Why are you talking nonsense? Get out of here!” Xu Zhongliang scolded. Xu Fufu immediately picked up the pace.

One old and one young person sat opposite each other in the study.

The messy scene created by the upset old man was still on display. Chu Mo had only retrieved a couple pieces because he was startled by Xu Zhongliang words.

Xu Zhongliang stared at the scattered pieces left on the Go board, and he muttered: “No wonder your playing style has had such a large change. You dare take the lead, hot-blooded and impulsive, but you are secretly laying plans at every step. It seems to be a contradictory character, but it is actually the demeanor of a real General! Your ferocious face is exposed finally at the end, but the outcome is already decided! It appears that storm in the grasslands was actually caused by you! Ha ha ha ha, wonderful, truly wonderful!”

Chapter 74: Young Hero

Xu Zhongliang became happier the more he spoke: “We were all guessing before. What person inadvertently gave a big favor to Da Xia? His majesty said that he would give the person a Hero Medal if he knew who it was! The Lord wasn’t joking! Ha ha ha, Chu Mo oh Chu Mo.....you’re all right! Da Xia’s Hero Medal, there haven’t even been one hundred issued since the founding of the country. That’s nearly a thousand years of history!”

Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo like he was staring at a rare treasure: “Eighty of those medals were issued during the founding of the country. No one has received one in the past two hundred years! That old guy Fang Mingtong has been drooling at the mouth for one, but not even he has gotten a Hero Medal! And now a thirteen year old baby is actually going to get one. I really want to see that old Fang Mingtong’s expression when it happens.”

Chu Mo yet wryly smiled at Xu Zhongliang: “Grandfather Xu, could you first state how you all are aware of this matter? It isn’t normal.....this matter just happened on the grasslands. The news shouldn’t have transferred this fast? Also.....not many people know the name Lin Bai on the grasslands?”

There was something else Chu Mo didn’t say. Chu Mo knew that his people obviously wouldn’t give his name away, and they wouldn’t go recklessly spreading it around. One reason is to protect Chu Mo. The other reason is because the grassland needs to publicise a figurehead, and that person is Nuo Yi!

“Little guy, are you looking down upon the intelligence ability of

our Da Xia?” Xu Zhongliang smiled like an old fox. He squinted his eyes, and he looked pleased with himself. Should it really be a shocking thing?

Chu Mo couldn't help but wryly smile. He really never thought that Da Xia's intelligence ability was this powerful. They possibly already entered into the inner circles of the Wang Court. It was practically impossible for them to know the name 'Lin Bai' otherwise.

In addition, they also didn't know right away that Chu Mo is Lin Bai.

Could Da Qi find out Chu Mo is Lin Bai now that Da Xia is aware?

He remembered the dry old man that caused Qi Xiaoyu to collapse.....Chu Mo's heart grew cold. Da Qi would certainly know the actions of 'Lin Bai' at an earlier time.

“Grandpa Xu, can we discuss something?” Chu Mo carefully asked as he looked at the happy Xu Zhongliang.

“Ah? Speak.” Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo.

“That.....could you please not tell other people about this?” Chu Mo scratched his head: “Once it gets out.....I'm afraid too much trouble will fall upon me.”

Xu Zhongliang pondered a moment, then he nodded in

agreement: “Child, you have obviously grown up! But you will receive an award for this matter. Won’t his majesty have to eat his words otherwise? I will look after this. I will only let a few people know. For instance, the emperor and Marshal Fang Mingtong. They would never sell you out. It will be very hard for others to find out about your contribution to Da Xia like this.”

Chu Mo said: “I never wanted others to know when I originally decided to help.”

“Such integrity!” Xu Zhongliang praised: “Young man has such a heart, such a boldness, and such an ability.....won’t your future have a meteoric rise?”

Chu Mo somewhat shyly smiled. He had known the old man for several years. Xu Zhongliang treated him like his own grandson, but it was the care that the older generation shows towards the younger generation.

This was the first time Chu Mo received praise like today.

“The intelligence we received wasn’t especially detailed. It only said that a youth named Lin Bai destroyed the plains laid by Da Qi over the past twenty years, and he did it within a month. He pulled up all the secretly hidden roots in the grasslands. He helped the fugitive princess Nuo Yi break apart the Hao Yue clan, and he helped stabilize the regime. It is also said that the second prince’s death, brother Jin, could be related to with him.....” Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo: “Tell me the specifics.....what exactly happened. I will go to the palace in the afternoon and meet the emperor.”

“Da Xia’s intelligence ability is amazing. What about the havoc I caused yesterday?” The corners of Chu Mo’s mouth slightly pulled up: “It should be nothing right?”

Xu Zhongliang somewhat strangely looked at Chu Mo: “The families of the deceased haven’t investigated. Who would look into you? Only Zhang Chong.....could be a little trouble. That person is small-minded.”

The cabinet member just called a border called a border region official small-minded. He truly considered Chu Mo one of his own.

This is certainly much more complicated than the older generation looking after the younger!

At the same time, Xu Zhongliang would never say this in front of Xu Fufu.

“That’s a small problem.” Chu Mo smiled. He said: “His son was fooled by Xia Jie. He took a fake letter and stamped a false seal, and then he took some Prince Mansion bodyguard impersonators and sought trouble with me. He was almost killed by the prince’s men in the end. They wanted to frame me, and I became his rescuer in the end.....so the Qing province official owes me a huge favor! I haven’t come to seek payment, and they still dare search for me?”

Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo dumbstruck. The Grand Secretary’s mind naturally wasn’t blank. He was just processing the whole situation in an instant. He softly sighed: “There is a

talent in every generation.....I'm truly old! You melon head, really.....you're too smart!

Xu Zhongliang smiled as he spoke: "The arrow is the key in the end. Zhang Chong would really be mad at you if it weren't for that arrow. You beat the Zhang family noble son until he soiled himself. But with the arrow, the things you've done can be let go. Ah, I truly envy old General Fan.....he has such a good grandson."

Xu Zhongliang raised his head and kindly looked at Chu Mo: "It is truly good fortune! My grandson Fufu is able to become your brother!"

Chu Mo smiled: "It is also my fortune!"

"Brothers, brothers for a lifetime!" Xu Zhongliang spoke, then he said: "Tell me about what happened on the grasslands."

Chu Mo told about his time on the grasslands. He told about everything except the Immortal Palace and Qi Xiaoyu.

"Brother Yin was actually killed by you. Good! That animal deserved to die!" Xu Zhongliang listened to the very end. He finally sighed with emotion: "The youth are the strength of a nation. It would be much better if all Da Xia's youth were like you!"

"I'm also amazing grandfather!" Xu 2Fu pushed open the door and entered. He just heard the last sentence. His eyes were big, and he looked narcissistic as he spoke.

“If you took your intentions towards women and used them for something good, then you would manage to become outstanding.” Xu Zhongliang meanly stared at Xu Fufu.

Xu Fufu hid his neck, and he sadly looked at Chu Mo. He thought: Little black Chu, what outrageous thing did you do on the grasslands? What’s made my grandfather so happy? And now I’m getting scolded!

Everyone ate lunch in a good mood, including the scolded Xu 2Fu.

Chu Mo carefully told Xu Zhongliang how Xu 2Fu and he owned the Gluttonous Ogre. This is because Chu Mo knew the matter wouldn’t stay hidden long.

Xu Zhongliang’s face was quite profound. He lightly told them: “I knew a long time ago! You all aren’t bad!”

Xu 2Fu nearly cried. He at last received grandfather’s consent about something.

But the old man still warned the two. You need to keep it low-key. You can’t recklessly publicize, even if everyone knows the Gluttonous Ogre is your business.

Chu Mo and Xu Fufu were already well aware. The two weren’t foolish. They already took the initiative and passed the reigns on to

others.

Xu Zhongliang hurriedly rushed to the palace after lunch. He wanted to tell the emperor that Chu Mo is Lin Bai. This was an enormous deed.

Chu Mo didn't discuss the war that could break out at any moment with Xu Zhongliang. It would be needless talk. Da Qi's grand project was ruined. Da Qi has to deal with the grasslands, and they take their time making a decision.

But they have been building their strength for several years. There will be a war between Da Qi and Da Xia sooner or later.

Now would be the perfect time for Da Qi's military to start making preparations for war. They can use the defeat suffered at the grasslands as fire in their bellies.

Xu Zhongliang wouldn't tell Chu Mo if he didn't realize it himself, and since Chu Mo is clever, Xu Zhongliang didn't need to say anything.

The grand secretary had left. Xu Fufu still had no chance to ask Chu Mo what happened because new information came. The Qing provincial governor already sent men to find Chu Mo!

"They have the face to come seek you?" Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo. He spat out in anger: "The nerve!"

Chu Mo smiled: “The Qing provincial governor likely doesn’t know what happened.”

“This Xu family uncle will let them know!” Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo: “Let me handle this! I guarantee the Qing province official will be deeply grateful to us brothers. It will be an added bonus if I can make a split between him and that old bastard Xia Jing!”

Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu. He laughed: “What? Are you upset?” Xu Fufu would rarely handle these things himself in the past.

Would the former Xu Fufu come out even if the Qing provincial governor personally paid a visit? That is impossible!

The grand Xu family young master cannot be ordered around. Even if the opposite party is a provincial noble, he is nothing in Xu Fufu’s eyes.

Xu Fufu was silent a moment. He looked at Chu Mo seriously: “I can’t lag too far behind my brother.” Today’s events made Xu Fufu aware that his brother since youth had experienced a large change. A change much greater than he imagined!

This was the first time he had seen his grandfather personally eat a meal with Chu Mo after all these years. This was the first time he so openly praised Chu Mo. This was also the first time his grandfather proposed a toast to a youth!

What kind kind of concept is this? He could make the great Grand Secretary propose a toast. Could Xu Zhongliang be like this to a youth he merely liked?

That is a joke!

Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu with a serious expression, then he couldn't resist smiling: "Don't be discouraged. I'm ten streets behind your ability with girls!"

"Scram!" Xu Fufu returned a haughty look, and he made the subordinates prepare the horses. He was going to personally tell the envoy of the Qing provincial governor: "You wish to take someone away from this Xu family uncle's hand?.....prepare to shed blood!"

Chu Mo also left the Xu household, and he strolled towards the Prince Mansion.

Chapter 75: Crumbling Xia Jing

Not just anyone has the opportunity to sit with the Grand Secretary and share a drink at the table. Chu Mo had eaten countless meals at the Xu household, but this was the first time drinking with Xu Zhongliang!

So Chu Mo was a little tipsy when he walked out, and he was in a good mood.

Chu Mo was a little startled when he arrived at the Prince Mansion gate. The gate was restored to its original form overnight!

Dignified! Towering! Serene! Imposing!

The gate looked like it had never been destroyed. There wasn't a trace that looked like it was recently built.

The vermilion colored gate was tightly shut. Two Qilin stone statues stood majestically atop the gates. The words 'Prince Mansion' were written on an old interesting and appealing sign. It was expensive wood at first glance, looking ancient and heavy.

"Gee....." Chu Mo blinked over and over. He thought: The prince is worthy of being called Da Xia's most powerful person. The gate was completely smashed yesterday, and today it's back to the original form. It looks like I was a little too soft!

“Too bad I don’t have a good reason to smash it today.” Chu Mo muttered to himself, then he thought: I will attack the Immortal Sky one day. I will bring its gate to ruins. I will completely destroy everything! I will make you all rebuild.....hmph!

The two guards at the gate weren’t the same as yesterday, but they clearly recognized Chu Mo. They saw Chu Mo harbor evil designs towards the gate that was rebuilt all through the night, and they immediately shivered all over.

The two yellow rank two guards would have kicked away any other ordinary youth loitering around.

But this master.....he stole all their nerves, leaving them with no courage to spare.

“Chu.....noble son Chu.....our prince has a decree. Directly receive noble son Chu even if he arrives without notice.” One of the guards drummed up the courage to come before Chu Mo. He spoke with extreme respect.

Chu Mo glanced at the guard, then he pointed at the vermilion colored gate: “The gate isn’t open. How should I enter? Is this how you treat the guests of the Prince Mansion? How about I do the same as yesterday? Smash it with one kick?”

“Cough cough.....noble son Chu jokes. We will open at once!” The guard said.

He actually didn't have the prince's command. Could the Prince Mansion gate be so easily opened?

But how could the master before them be controlled? Chu Mo tore down the gate yesterday and entered, and then didn't he leave without any damage? Heaven knows what would happen if they didn't open the gates for Chu Mo. Would he kick it open once more?

The gate's wood was no ordinary timber. The materials were extremely precious. Even the prince mansion.....didn't have that much!

So they knew the prince certainly wouldn't blame them. He could even offer a reward.

The two guards opened the Prince Mansion gate right away. They welcomed Chu Mo inside like they were greeting their ancestors.

The two guards were quick as thieves. They immediately closed the gate as soon as Chu Mo entered.

But this scene was still witnessed by a few people. They were immediately shocked and awed.

"The Prince Mansion has opened the official gate. They welcomed Chu Mo inside, the one who caused a disturbance here yesterday....."

“What is going on in the world?”

The couple of people who witnessed the scene all stared foolishly.

.....

Chu Mo was directly invited into prince Xia Jing’s study!

It is no exaggeration to say Xu Zhongliang may not even receive this kind of treatment.

There are few people in the whole world that can enter into prince Xia Jing’s study. They are all Xia Jing’s most trusted subordinates. There are provincial level officials at the very least.

But Chu Mo is a thirteen year old youth, openly sitting in Xia Jing’s study.

All of Da Xia’s bureaucrats would be stunned if this news spread outside.

Someone came by with tea, then Xia Jing appeared in the study after a short time. His face immediately exposed a moderate smile when he saw Chu Mo: “Apologies, I made noble son Chu wait.”

These words spoken by prince Xia Jing would truly cause someone to be stupefied. If a third person was here to witness the scene, they would be scared stiff.

Chu Mo waved his hand: “I just arrived. Old....cough cough, great prince, we shouldn’t waste words. I know you don’t like me. I also don’t like you. Where is the room you prepared for me? We will start!”

Xia Jing’s spreading smile clearly slowed. He cursed inside: Little bastard, you see the prince, and you still want to call him old thief? If this prince didn’t need you.....forget the fact you are a petty General’s grandson. This prince would cut you down even if you were a General!

He could only think these words. He couldn’t speak his desire to kill Chu Mo out loud.

“Good, noble son is in a happy. I’ll guide you there now!” Xia Jing said. He personally guided Chu Mo to a place deep inside the Prince Mansion, a secluded area.

Chu Mo didn’t see a single person along the way. Chu Mo understood, Xia Jing didn’t want to let others know his disgraceful business. Chu Mo also wasn’t worried about Xia Jing scheming anything. This old thief is a clever man. He is not that stupid.

Chu Mo wasn’t afraid even if Xia Jing was that stupid. His master is in Yellow Flame City!

The two were lost in thought along the way, neither saying anything. Chu Mo was very quickly directed into a large courtyard. In addition to the main house, the other buildings all looked like tall warehouses.

“These storehouses are all filled with a large amount of medicine. There are ordinary medicines all the way to the top grade Yuan medicine. Everything you can imagine!” Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo and said: “Noble son Chu may grab whatever medicine he needs!”

Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing: “I grab myself?”

Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo: “What is noble son Chu’s meaning?”

Chu Mo smiled and shook his head: “I understand your meaning, but you are thinking too much grand prince. I already said that I would help you to resolve our longstanding grudge. In addition, I will be doing a good thing for all the pitiful women in Yellow Flame City.

Xia Jing’s face blackened. There was only one person in the world who would dare be so presumptuous before the prince, and he was standing right in front of him. Not even the current emperor has criticized him in front of his face. Those women are indeed worthy of pity, but this has to do with the prince’s face!

It is also the royal face!

Chu Mo paid no mind to Xia Jing’s darkened face. He simply

said: “You don’t need to pretend to be generous. I have no interest in your medicine. Do I look like a person who needs ingredients? I don’t have enough idle time to search through ingredients myself. Give me a storehouse manager, then give me several strong young men. Let them help transport medicines. I mentioned a list earlier. It would be best if the warehouse has everything. If not, you need to immediately go find it!”

“Good, I was overthinking.” Xia Jing acknowledged his mistake extremely calmly. Then he said: “I will arrange it immediately!”

Chu Mo said: “Also, I wrote a letter. Have someone send it to my home. I could stay here at least seven or eight days! Have someone bring me three meals each day. You don’t need to appear. I don’t wish to see you.”

Xia Jing’s face blackened. His lips violently twitched, and he deeply sighed: “Good!”

“Then I’ll write out the list for you now.” Chu Mo coldly smiled inside: Old thief, do you truly believe.....your illness is that easy to cure? If I didn’t empty out your entire Prince Mansion property, then I wouldn’t be young master Chu Mo!

Chu Mo swiftly started drawing out a list of items as he thought.

The initial sentiment to establish a power was indeed to gather medicine. But now an enormous fattened sheep is before him, who wouldn’t slaughter it?

Xia Jing didn't care at all when Chu Mo started. He didn't even look. It was only a prescription in his eyes. Even if this little bastard wants to swindle him and write expensive ingredients, what could that do? Xia Jing has plenty of money, enough wealth to rival a nation.

He even has a method to attain rare top grade Yuan medicines that are scarce in the large sects. He won't hesitate in the slightest so long as it can cure his ailment, no matter what the cost.

But Xia Jing gradually started to feel uneasy.....because that little bastard had been continuously writing for the time it takes two incense sticks to burn!

He already filled three large sheets of paper.....and showed no signs of stopping!

Xia Jing couldn't help but stare. The corners of his mouth immediately twitched violently.

Chu Mo's handwriting was extraordinarily elegant. One could tell he had a talent with calligraphy at first glance. He hadn't yet reached the realm of a master, but it was already very close.

Even Xia Jing had to admit that Chu Mo's writing could already steamroll over countless self-proclaimed calligraphers.

Of course, this was absolutely not the reason why Xia Jing's mouth violently twitched.

The words on the paper were extremely small. They could still be read clearly, but there were at least thirty of forty medicines written on each page.

Damn, the old man's illness.....it really needs that much medicine to cure?

Xia Jing angrily thought. He approached and grabbed a piece of paper right as the ink was drying. He only took one look, then immediately stared blankly.

This time his mouth didn't twitch, but rather his entire body was in a stupor.

The grand prince is majestic and unmoving. He carries a dignified presence. It is said that an approaching landslide couldn't alter his appearance. But Xia Jing started with large eyes at this moment. His mouth was stretched so wide that a goose egg could fit inside.

"Seven Star Grass.....50,000kg? Chu.....noble son Chu.....you certain?.....you didn't write wrong? It isn't 5kg?" Xia Jing couldn't help but ask after a long time.

Chu Mo paid no attention to him. He simply kept writing: "Keep looking further."

"Dragon Tail Grass...100,000kg; Purple Dragon Cane.....

15,000kg; Snow Ginseng.....40,000kg.....” Xia Jing could read no further. He would certainly collapse if he kept reading. He could even go crazy and rip this little son of a bitch into shreds.

A long illness makes a patient as knowledgeable as a doctor. Xia Jing knew practically all of these ingredients.

For instance the Dragon Tail Grass, it is used for blood circulation. The price isn't expensive, practically every large medicine shop sells them. Seven Star Grass prevents wounds from festering. The price isn't expensive for Xia Jing. It is the about the price of a small dish to him. Purple Dragon Cane and Snow Ginseng are used to restore Qi. The price is relatively high, but that has never been a problem for Xia Jing.

But everything has a premise, that is: One cannot demand 50,000kg in a short time! Even if Xia Jing can afford it. This quantity.....how could he possibly scrape it together?

He looked at Chu Mo still diligently writing. Xia Jing finally broke down, and he raged: “Chu Mo.....are you still bullying me? Could it be some form of amusement? Fuck.....opening up Da Xia's largest medicine shop wouldn't require this much medicine!”

Chu Mo raised his head and coldly looked at Xia Jing: “You want to be cured or not?”

Chapter 76: Supreme Strength

“You.....” Xia Jing gnashed his teeth. He furiously stared at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo’s face was entirely even. He tranquilly looked back at Xia Jing.

“You’re certain.....you aren’t trying to joke with me?” Xia Jing was seething in anger. He was really about to go insane, but there was yet a thread of rationality still inside. He really wanted recklessly rip this little bastard apart.

“Are you the doctor or am I?” Chu Mo slapped the table, sending out a large noise.

He soared up and angrily looked at Xia Jing: “You understand shit! You old thief, you know how to play politics in the royal court, you know how to be tyrannical in your family, and you know how to be unyielding in the marketplace.....apart from these things, do you know anything?”

Chu Mo walked before Xia Jing. He crumpled up the piece of paper taken from him and threw it into the trashcan. Chu Mo then angrily said: “Do you really want this young master to cure your illness? Old thief, slap your chest and ask yourself something. How many times should you have died for all those inhuman things you’ve done over the years?”

Chu Mo angrily stared at Xia Jing: “How do the common people

of Da Xia evaluate you? This young master dares not provoke you to accept a compromise. I wish to dissolve this small grudge, but I'm afraid you misunderstand. Everything will take place inside your house! Bring people over if you don't believe me. I do not carry any strange device like a storage ring. Also, you cannot baselessly change the medicine. Do you really suspect I'm joking with you? Fuck, young master cannot serve upon you. I quit! Call out your grand servant.....have him come kill young master.”

Chu Mo's pupils were ice-cold as he looked at Xia Jing: “Go ah! Go call! I know you have a top ranked cultivator in your house. It would take nothing to sweep away my soul.....call him out!”

Xia Jing stood there foolishly. He couldn't help but retreat a few steps back. Xia Jing never thought a teenage brat would have the courage to lecture him.

No, it already isn't lecturing. This is simply shouting abuse!

Xia Jing has been a member of royalty since youth, his whole life spent as a prince. Not even the emperor, his own father, had ever scolded him like this.

Xia Jing had never faced such an occurrence in his fifty or sixty years of memory.

He had scolded others like this.....but a person who scolds others being scolded, is that the same?

“You.....you.....you.....” Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo. He could only say the word you. The shocked angry color gradually retreated from his face. But the well maintained face still held splotches of green and white.

He walked over to the trashcan and bent at the waist. Xia Jing's whole body shook while he fetched out the piece of paper that Chu Mo had thrown inside. He reached out a hand and wiped his forehead.....his temples were drenched in sweat.

The dignified prince was actually scolded by a teenager until he sweated!

“What is going on? Do you believe your illness is easy to cure? Didn't you say it yourself? How many people have you sought for help over the years? How many top grade medicine masters have you sought from the large sects? But.....has there been any use? Even just a little?” Chu Mo looked with a disdainful cold smile: “For just that.....how much money have you spent? Have you calculated it? If it was incredibly simple to cure your illness, would you believe it?”

“I.....” Xia Jing was immediately speechless. He appeared embarrassed because he was truly hit in the sore spots by this youth's words.

The amount of money spent to cure his illness over the years..... it had already reached an astronomical amount. But even until now, Xia Jing hasn't seen the slightest effect.

Given that he can't have children, if he could just use his dick..... Xia Jing wouldn't have had such a perverted change. The problem is, no matter what he does, there isn't the slightest result!

Who knows how many times this tough prince of Xia Jing cried alone in the dead of night. He even thought of ending his own life!

It is truly a form of torture for a man to live in this world without confidence.

"Why aren't you talking? Staring at me with big eyes! Speak, am I toying with you?" Chu Mo's chest violently heaved up and down while he angrily looked at Xia Jing: "It doesn't matter, call out your great servant to kill me. You are the prince, I can't provoke you.....go make love to whoever you like!"

"Cough cough....." Xia Jing's mouth twitched. His vision looked away, not even daring to return a glance at Chu Mo.

"Oh ass! Go call him! Young master has had enough! First being pursued, and you still harbor evil designs. Young master quits!" Chu Mo said. He was just about to rip apart the other pieces of paper.

"Don't!" Xia Jing suddenly rushed forward, like a mother hen protecting her young. He protected the pieces of paper with his life, and he begged: "Noble son Chu.....young master Chu..... prince is wrong okay? Prince simply didn't understand! He has never heard of a disease needing so much medicine to cure. Prince.....was only a little agitated. You must not get mad. Prince

gives you an apology!”

Tears squeezed out of the old man’s eyes as he spoke: “You don’t understand. How much this matter has attacked the prince. Prince will pay anything to cure this illness! Prince knows, prince had done many bad things over the years. I’ve harmed several people. Prince will make amends.....prince guarantees. From today on, I won’t do the dark things in my conscious! As long as.....as long as young Chu can cure this prince’s illness.....boo hoo.....”

“Crying ass! The grand prince cries before a young brat. Are you not losing face?” Chu Mo’s face looked like a tiger, but his tone was somewhat eased.

Xia Jing choked: “The pressure I’ve suffered over the years. It is really too much! Prince is not a weak person.....this is prince’s first time crying before another person. Young Chu.....you are still small, you don’t understand. You don’t know how important this type of thing is to a man.....”

“Fine fine, your tears are so precious, don’t cry. Remember, these are your own words grand prince. You will make up for all the mistakes over the years. From today on, you won’t do the dark things in your conscious.” Chu Mo stated to Xia Jing: “Right?”

“I promise! I promise!” Xia Jing boldly guaranteed to Chu Mo.

What power, what position, what status..... sometimes these things are completely worthless. Xia Jing is now a pitiful insect that had lost his manhood in front of Chu Mo’s face.

“Good, I believe the dignified prince won’t go back on his words.” Chu Mo plainly said. He sat back down and raised the pen. He said: “I forgot the later ingredients because of your anger.....”

“Ah.....then, what is to be done?” Xia Jing immediately panicked. He completely forgot to get mad, and he didn’t dare.

“No problem, it will slowly come back. Go prepare these ones. These ingredients can’t be prepared in one or two days. I will first refine what is here.”

Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing then said: “Older senior, you are also a person of status and position. Don’t watch me like it’s nothing. It is obvious to you at a glance whether or not I carry a storage object. You have been cultivating for a long time. Don’t conceal yourself. I am quite skilled at refining medicine. With my skill, older senior won’t be stuck at the sixth realm much longer.

Chu Mo spoke to here, immediately closed his mouth, and said no more.

A somewhat urgent voice passed through the air: “Little friend, are these words true?”

“Hmph, old man, you really were watching me!” Chu Mo coldly snorted. He leaned back into the chair with an ice-cold face.

Xia Jing stood to the side helpless.

“Has this old man had that much time to observe you? You are too suspicious little devil.” The hoarse voice in the air said: “This old man saw you yesterday when you came causing trouble. I promise that I’m observing you today to protect the prince’s safety.”

Chu Mo coldly smiled: “This is the Prince Mansion.....am I not the guest of the prince?”

The hoarse voice coughed two times, he said: “This old man has promised the grand prince.....to never be disloyal.....”

“Fine, I accept your farewell. Besides, breaking into the seventh realm is a problem requiring a lot of Yuan stones. You are going from the Bone refinement phase to the Intent refinement phase. If Yuan Stones are enough.....hmp. Return and talk to me.” Chu Mo plainly said.

“You really know?” The old hoarse voice in the air was filled with shock. His tone became completely different from before: “Good, little friend, we will speak then! Old Man will wait for you!”

“You must no longer observe me. Young master hates the feeling of people watching in the shadows.” Chu Mo said a little angry.

“Not possible!” The voice in the air gave an extremely certain reply.

Chu Mo's heart finally calmed.

From running amok in the Prince Mansion, raining curses upon prince Xia Jing absolutely unrestrained, to serenely facing the great servant in the Prince Mansion. The thing Chu Mo entirely relied on.....was the jade on his body!

Otherwise, it would be easy for the Prince Mansion peak rank six cultivator to easily kill Chu Mo.

Chu Mo looked at the prince Xia Jing and thought: Authority and influence.....can do many things in this world, but there is still something even more important!

That is.....controlling the fate of others!

But, strength is needed. This strength is not martial power, but rather a combination of abilities!

Chu Mo finally understood why top rank doctors receive such respect in the world.

When one can grasp another person's fate, even if they are very weak, not a person will dare touch a hair on their head!

This.....is also a type of power!

Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing standing there respectfully. Chu Mo

somewhat impatiently said: “What are you doing? Quickly go prepare. This isn’t your business here. Don’t forget to shut the door.”

“That.....the letter young Chu is sending home?” Xia Jing carefully reminded.

Chu Mo slapped his head, then smiled with his teeth at Xia Jing: “I just about forgot, thank you for reminding!”

A word of thanks was just short of bringing Xia Jing tears of joy. A thought rose in his heart: This youth.....he really isn’t that vile.

Chu Mo started to quickly write a letter. He thought a moment, then he quickly wrote another: “Give this letter to Xu Fufu. Also, the matter with Qing province Zhang Chong’s noble son.....don’t get involved. I want that person Zhang Chong.”

Xia Jing was first startled, then immediately smiled bitterly: “This matter, I originally had a plan to turn it back around. But young master Chu wants that person. Prince promises to not get involved.”

“You are truly over it?” Chu Mo looked somewhat shocked at Xia Jing.

Because Chu Mo already made things clear. The provincial governor Zhang Chong would certainly hate the prince to death if Xia Jing didn’t interfere. A chasm would certainly develop

between the two. Chu Mo didn't believe the prince would look this over.

Xia Jing lightly sighed: "If you can cure this illness, I will become an idle prince from then on.....how about it?"

Chapter 77: Three Royal Brothers

“Prince is tired after so many years.” Xia Jing sighed. His eyes appeared extremely exhausted.

“I must say.....although young master Chu might not believe. I still feel that I must clarify something. I don’t care that I am made the scapegoat, but you should see who provided backing.” Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo and plainly spoke: “The person who fired the arrow at Zhang Qingyu is indeed from Prince Mansion. He was also a person I valued, but I did not send him!”

“He wasn’t sent by you?” Chu Mo’s brow wrinkled. This old thief had done many vile things, but he was also a man who dares act and take responsibility. Otherwise, wouldn’t he have a lawless reputation? The prince likely isn’t deceiving him.

Especially now. Xia Jing had no reason, and he lacked the nerves to deceive Chu Mo.

“Was it Xia Jie?” Chu Mo squinted at Xia Jing.

“He doesn’t have that authority.” Xia Jing’s sight lowered. He plainly said: “That archer had a high position in the Prince Mansion. Xia Jie doesn’t have the qualifications to order him around.”

“That letter? Those killers?” Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing.

“I did those things.” Xia Jing’s face was calm. He simply said: “But I did not try to kill my subordinate’s beloved son.”

“So to say.....the opponent also wanted to frame you?” Chu Mo suddenly felt his chest cool down.

Xia Jing profoundly looked at Chu Mo: “I cannot stand waiting for people to appear, they have come for me! You have been innocently involved.”

“They?” Chu Mo pointed to the sky. Xia Jing nodded.

Chu Mo was silent a moment, then he said: “Those things have nothing to do with me. Just don’t get me in the crosshairs next time.”

Xia Jing didn’t speak for a while. He finally said: “Hard to say.”

“Then let them bring it on!” Chu Mo said without a care on his face, but his heart became increasingly alert. Chu Mo felt a freak combination of factors were at play, and he carelessly stepped into the maelstrom.

Xia Jing grabbed the two letters and left. Chu Mo quietly sat there and thought.

“The Royal Family.....” Chu Mo’s pupils flashed ice-cold rays of light.

Chu Mo never thought he would be brought into the Royal Family conflicts.

Chu Mo never thought about it, but that doesn't mean Chu Mo is clueless!

The current emperor is wise and brilliant, but he is already in his sixties. The crown prince was already established twenty years ago. It is the oldest prince Xia Ying.

The emperor has given birth to dozens of children, but his first wife has only given birth to three princes.

They are the eldest, prince Xia Ying, the second, prince Xia Xiong, and the third, Xia Hao.

The prince Xia Ying is already in his forties. He has wielded power in the eastern palace for many years. He is calm, broad-minded, and shrewd, and he has a business attitude. At the very least, this is how people at all social levels view him. Xia Ying will likely be a ruler no less enlightened than his father.

The relationship between Xia Ying and Xia Jing couldn't be called good, but it isn't bad either.

The two parties have an uncle and nephew relation, but one is the crowned prince, and the other is the emperor's brother. The two couldn't be extremely close. Everyone understood this logic.

But the second prince, Xia Xiong, and third prince, Xia Hao, have a poor relationship with Xia Jing.

Especially the third prince Xia Hao. He is thirty years old, and he is in the prime of life. Xia Hao cultivated in a sect since he was a child. He came down from the mountain at twenty years old, and he continuously helped the military after returning to Da Xia.

His power had already reached the fourth realm. He had entered the Bone refinement state, and he became a general.

The valorous Xia Hao always looked down upon his powerful uncle. He felt Xia Jing's existence could interrupt Xia Ying smoothly inheriting the throne.

He has overtly and covertly aimed at prince Xia Jing because of this.

These things were about the nobility of Da Xia, but they were no secret.

Xia Jing didn't exactly say, but Chu Mo could guess. These events most likely had to do with Xia Hao.

The unseen adversary was able to buy off a Prince Mansion archer of high status. The adversary's level of authority must not be much different than Xia Jing!

Otherwise, the archer would have no reason to leave Xia Jing.

Chu Mo also had another reason to suspect the target, and it is why he pointed the finger at the third prince, Xia Hao. That is: The third prince is unfriendly with grandfather Fan Wudi!

It all started at a new year's banquet two years ago. Xia Hao took the opportunity to propose a toast. He did this to win over the army Generals for his elder brother Xia Ying.

Fan Wudi disliked this action very much. The old General believed the crowned prince would become emperor sooner or later.

But there is an emperor on the throne of Da Xia right now!

Not the crown prince!

And he is not just any emperor!

Why must he win over the army Generals for a prince?

But the older General didn't say anything, even though he disliked the action. He is a soldier after all. He didn't wish to become involved with the Royal Family affairs.

But the damned bastard yet ran before Fan Wudi and proposed a toast, trying to win the old General over.

Fan Wudi is only one of many Generals, but many of the military's major military figures had served under him over the years. The military is a place with seniority, so the old General was extremely popular.

Not every single person would follow the old General's words, but the military big shots would all give face.

Because of this, Xia Hao tried to win Fan Wudi over at all costs.

The old General endured for a while, but Xia Hao continued to nag. The old General was pestered beyond his breaking point, and he lashed out at Xia Hao: "Be a soldier.....a little bit more pure!"

Xia Hao became hostile right away. First he mocked the old General. He said Fan Wudi fought his whole life, but he is still so low in rank. He had been surpassed by several of his own soldiers. Xia Hao then said the old General wasn't strong. He is so old, but he is still stuck in the Iron Bone state, unable to break into the Iron Blood state.

Xia Hao borrowed his drunken courage to say several more unpleasant things. The old General was just short of tearing him to pieces.

The emperor discovered the activity in the end, and he gave Xia Hao a scolding. This matter came to an end, but it is the reason Xia Hao hates General Fan Wudi.

Chu Mo and Xu Fufu were fortunate enough to join the banquet at that time, so they personally saw the conflict.

Chu Mo didn't have to think long before guessing the cause of his current situation.

Xia Jing would still have to explain more if it were the past. But the prince now knows the severity of Chu Mo, so he only spoke a few simple words.

Chu Mo sat there in deep thought. He sighed: "Ying, Xiong, Hao, and Jie.....in addition to Xia Jie, those three princes are all complicated!"

"They used one Prince Mansion archer to drag everyone into the water.....prince Xia Jing, General Fan Wudi, Grand Secretary Xu Zhongliang.....even the Qing provincial governor Zhang Chong!" Chu Mo's facial expression became ice-cold: "Extremely ruthless!"

"But.....you all had better not take another step towards me. Xia Hao, I want nothing to do with you group of princes! I will make you regret it if you come after me or my grandfather again!"

Chu Mo's pupils flashed ice-cold, showing murderous intent.

.....

At the same time, the crown prince in the Eastern Palace.

Xia Ying, the crown prince already in his forties, sat at the head. His brow was wrinkled, and his face appeared extremely focused.

A thirty-seven or thirty-eight year old man sat to his right. He appeared a lot like Xia Ying. He wore a handlebar mustache, and he had an extremely gloomy expression. He was the second prince Xia Xiong. On the surface, Xia Xiong was the lowest status of the three princes.

He had no position in the dynasty, and he didn't enter the military. Xia Xiong was always at the crown prince's side. One would think Xia Xiong an aide if they didn't know his status.

Only people who knew Xia Xiong understood his terror. It could be said, Xia Ying would be nothing without Xia Xiong!

Half the plans from the eastern palace came straight from Xia Xiong.

Xia Ying once said in a drunken state: "Who says the royal family is ruthless? They are the brothers at my side, one scholar and one warrior!"

The people viewed Xia Ying highly. This is because his brothers rally to Xia Ying's side.

A man in his thirties with a dashing face sat opposite of Xia Xiong. He sat up straight, and he wore brilliant clothing. His expression was a bit angry: "Simply a piece of trash! Can't even do one little thing right! He deserved death. Incapable thing! I vainly wasted so much time placing him in the Prince Mansion."

"It's okay third, some things are just fate, don't complain. At least he committed suicide instead of being captured. He became a sacrifice for you. It isn't bad." Xia Xiong looked at Xia Hao and plainly said: "But our uncle.....he is no pushover. He has no evidence this time, but.....he most likely guessed this is our doing."

"What can guessing do? Does he have proof?" Xia Hao coldly said: "I look forward to the day he seeks trouble! His image will become even worse in the eyes of father."

"Enough, third, think about it. Our uncle is much craftier than you. You look down upon him, but he is father's younger brother! No one can act against uncle so long as father sits on the throne." Xia Xiong said, then sighed: "It is a pity. That was such a good opportunity. But Chu Mo, that little thing stirred up the board. In any case, that blockhead Xia Jie should die! Our uncle also fell out of favor a long time ago!"

"This time we have to account for Chu Mo. We were actually

dodged by him. That little thing is scary. A clever person would stay a little farther away from him.” Xia Xiong softly said.

“Hah, yeah right.....” Xia Hao’s face immediately filled with disdain. He coldly laughed: “That little thing? He is just a teenage brat. He knows shit! The matter yesterday still isn’t settled. Didn’t he run to the Prince Mansion and cause trouble? Would a smart person do that? Ha ha, it’s a pity the fun won’t last long.”

“He knows shit? Third, you despise other people. That weakness needs to change.” The motionless crown prince suddenly spoke: “That child.....he could become a strong enemy!”

Chapter 78: Undercurrent Rising

“Big brother, aren’t you giving that little thing too much credit?” Xia Hao looked shocked at Xia Ying. Xia Hao scoffed: “He ran away when we framed that idiot Xia Jie half a year ago. He wrecked our plans. I wanted to take the opportunity and kill Chu Mo at that time, but you wouldn’t let me. He is a brat, that’s it. He isn’t intentionally ruining our plans, so why do you look highly upon him?”

Xia Xiong looked at his younger brother, and he took over the conversation: “Third, you are only looking at one part. He went to the Prince Mansion to cause trouble, but what happened at the end? He walked out completely unharmed. You also haven’t paid attention, he returned today. Furthermore.....he walked in through the formal gate!”

“What’s the big deal? That old thing Xia Jing is in the wrong. He naturally won’t make things difficult for the kid. Chu Mo likely went there to be on good terms. What is strange about that?” Xia Hao said with disdain.

“Do you truly think that way?” Xia Xiong disappointedly looked at Xia Hao: “How about you participate a little less in the future.”

“Second brother, what are you trying to say? You look down upon me?” Xia Hao immediately enraged. He stared with fury at Xia Xiong.

Xa Ying sighed, then said: “Fine, second and third, stop fighting.

We are brothers. What good is fighting?”

Xia Hao said unconvinced: “Big brother, what did you say about this matter? You said Fan Wudi’s adopted son.....he is truly that talented?”

Xia Ying softly laughed: “I have not yet seen everything, but one thing can be confirmed. That child.....he is not simple!”

“How is he not simple?” Xia Hao felt strength surge in his bones. He asked without willing to forgive.

Xia Ying said: “First, Chu Mo is merely thirteen years old. He left half a year ago in a difficult situation. He suddenly returns half a year later, and from his actions, do you feel he fears prince Xia Jing?”

Xia Hao unconsciously shook his head. He muttered: “If he were afraid.....would he dare attack the gate?”

“And half a year ago?” Xia Ying asked.

“That.....was certainly from fear. Would he have fled half a year ago otherwise?” Xia Hao seemed to grasp something, but there was still uncertainty in his eyes. He muttered: “Then what?”

“Second, Chu Mo was only in the second realm when he left Yellow Flame City. Our informant says Chu Mo must have broken through the Yuan Closure, entering the third realm!” Xia Ying

looked at Xia Hao: “Third, you cultivated in a sect since youth. You should know how hard it is to break into the Yuan Closure. This teenager only used half a year. Originally.....how long did you take?”

Xia Hao’s mouth twitched. He muttered: “I.....I took ten years!”

Xia Xiong couldn’t help but suck in a cool breath: “Don’t tell me, this teenager.....entered an amazingly powerful sect?”

“Not possible!” Xia Hao said extremely certain: “No large sect disciple can leave the mountain before ten years! Especially the talented ones, the sects place more importance on them. It is basically impossible for them to leave after half a year.”

“Then how did he suddenly become so amazing?” Xia Ying looked at Xia Hao: “Do you know third?”

The corners of Xia Hao’s mouth twitched. He hesitated a long time before dejectedly saying: “I don’t know. This type of thing is normally impossible!”

“What about the most amazing talent within your sect?” Xia Ying asked.

Xia Hao thought a moment, and he still shook his head: “Still impossible!”

Xia Ying sighed, then said: “In the end, the largest problem is

Chu Mo wrecking the Prince Mansion yesterday. Do you feel Xia Jing is really in the wrong because he wants to kill Chu Mo? Do you think Xia Jing doesn't know if he sent the archer? Could Xia Jing take things lying down with his temper? But he hasn't had the slightest response even now. Chu Mo.....also hasn't done anything. He also came to the Prince Mansion again today, and he still hasn't come out."

Xia Ying looked at Xia Hao: "Third, do you still feel this youth.....is a simple person?"

"This....." Xia Hao had an extremely crabby temper, but he always trusts his eldest brother. Xia Hao still wasn't convinced in his heart, but he argued no more.

Xia Xiong unenthusiastically said at this time: "According to our information, Chu Mo claims he can cure uncle's illness."

"How is that possible?" Xia Hao immediately stood up. He sneered: "That's simply nonsense! We tried to use that move to rope in uncle a long time ago. But those top rank doctors in the large sects were all unable. How could a baby boy be capable?"

Xia Xiong continued: "Yes, he broke through the Yuan Closure in half a year. Very few people could do this."

Xia Hao immediately stared blankly. He looked distracted for a long time, then he heavily sat down: "Damn scary!"

Xia Ying looked to Xia Xiong: “Second, what is your meaning?”

Xia Xiong sighed: “We cannot let Xia Jing have a chance to recover! A perverted prince is much better than a normal prince!”

“That?” Xia Ying’s eyes slightly squinted.

Xia Xiong mumbled: “There are still another ten days.....until the new year!”

Xia Ying’s pupils flashed rays of light: “New year’s banquet?”

Xia Hao coldly said: “Give it to me!”

.....

Yellow Flame City was submerged into a joyous holiday spirit several days later.

After going to the royal palace, Xu Zhongliang discovered Chu Mo entered the Prince Mansion. He sent someone with a letter. The contents were very simple. It requested Chu Mo drop by the Xu household after leaving the Prince Mansion.

There was no activity at the Fan household. The Demon Lord had

still not appeared.

Chu Mo knew his master's skill, and he didn't worry. He comfortably stayed in the Prince Mansion. He refined medicine every moment he wasn't cultivating.

Chu Mo knew Xia Jing's ability was vast, but he underestimated Xia Jing's true power.

Xia Jing forcibly gathered thirty herbs on the list in just two days time!

They were all very common ingredients, but they all required ten to a hundred thousand kilograms each.

There would not be this much even if all the medicine shops in Yellow Flame City were turned upside down.

Chu Mo was very curious, what kind of power did Xia Jing use to gather these ingredients?

But Xia Jing never appeared. It was probably because Chu Mo scolded him, and he appeared weak before Chu Mo. Chu Mo's words truly bothered him, so Xia Jing didn't dare appear.

Chu Mo instructed the servants bring the herbs into his room in batches.

The servants were all completely shocked. They brought enough ingredients to fill the room seven or eight times, but the room was completely empty every time they entered.

There was not a trace apart from the scent of herbs in the room!

Xia Jing couldn't comprehend this. He didn't dare go ask Chu Mo, so he ran to his subordinate Wei Chi for advice.

"Sir, where are the herbs going? Is he putting them into a storage ring?" Xia Jing wrinkled his brow. His face entirely confused: "But why does he want these common ingredients? Is he opening a drugstore? I could make him the richest person in Yellow Flame City if he really wants money!"

An old man with a completely white beard and robes sat in the room. The old man spoke calmly with a smile: "I cannot see through this youth's methods!"

"What? Even you cannot see through?" Xia Jing was completely startled. Chu Mo doesn't know mister Wei Chi's true ability, but Wei Chi still cannot see through.

"What is strange about me not seeing through him? There are many things in the world this old man cannot see through." The old man simply smiled: "This teenager is an odd one. Perhaps he can really cure your illness, so sit tight and wait."

The old man raised his head and looked at Xia Jing as he spoke:

“Also, the world’s largest storage ring.....it can only hold ten thousand kilograms of herbs. A storage ring that can hold a hundred thousand kilograms.....this old man has never heard of one. So the prince needs to no longer be suspicious.

Xia Jing couldn’t help but suck in a cool breath. He felt extremely ashamed at the same time, and he muttered: “No wonder his reaction was so big that day. He felt insulted, so it is like that.....”

“This youth.....he is really not simple!” The old man softly spoke. He then closed his eyes and spoke no more.

Xia Jing tactfully retreated from the room.

He called a trusted subordinate and gave a command: “You must treat young master Chu very well. Remember.....you can’t neglect him! Otherwise, there shall be no survivors!”

“Yes!” The subordinate trembled. He never saw the prince care this much about an outsider.....much less an outsider that almost destroyed the whole palace.

Xia Jing was extremely careful about offending Chu Mo. But one person still hated Chu Mo so much that she gnashed her teeth, and she hated not being able to tear Chu Mo to pieces!

This person was the most powerful woman in the Prince Mansion——princess Yuan Zidai!

Yuan Zidai wasn't Xia Jing's first wife, but she was Xia Jie's mother!

She had extreme status in the Prince Mansion, even the first wife would retreat back when seeing her.

Yuan Zidai wasn't yet forty years old at this time. She was a beautiful flower, mature and lovely.

The years didn't leave a single trace on her face, and she appeared like a twenty year old woman.

Only her pretty face was a completely hateful color at this time.

Her son was crippled by this teenager, and he is then welcomed into the gates as a guest! It is simply too outrageous!

The thing that unsettled Yuan Zidai the most is.....that person claims a cure for the prince!

Yuan Zidai didn't believe at first. She even felt it beneath her..... was this a joke? What day would he be cured? The teenage brat dares lie!"

But a large amount of herbs had entered over the past several days. They were brought in secret, but how could it escape her eye?

Yuan Zidai gradually became uneasy.

She could be overbearing in the Prince Mansion because she is the mother with children!

She is woman from a small house. How could she dare be so overbearing otherwise? Who knows how many times she would have been struck dead by now.

The prince was useless, and she spent her days at home. It was very bland, but she was very stable. Even if her son is an eunuch, at most he can't have offspring. It won't affect his inheritance.

No one could threaten her in the current situation.

But now.....the situation is complicated!

“Suppose the prince's illness is cured.....” Yuan Zidai's eyes flashed a dreadful color.

She is forty years old even though she appears young and beautiful. Why should she fight for attention with those seventeen and eighteen year old maidens?

Beautiful women are like clouds in the Prince Mansion. Xia Jing could easily get another woman pregnant and have a son.....her powerful status would be replaced in an instant!

It is entirely possible she and her son could sink to an unrecoverable depth!

“Not good. I cannot let that become reality!” Yuan Zidai’s eyes flashed with determination.

She immediately commanded: “Bring people.....”

Chapter 79: Deep In Conversation With A Stranger, The Words End Here

Chu Mo didn't know why, but he felt restless that night. He cultivated Heaven's Will for a large cycle, then he stepped outside.

The countless stars twinkled in the night sky, and there was not a sound between heaven and earth.

He used this time every day to "refine pills". Everyone knew his rules, so they left every night. Chu Mo didn't even have to drive them away, they all automatically disappeared.

That old thief Xia Jing has a lovable ability to collect herbs.....it is really quite powerful.

Chu Mo secretly thought: I should give Xia Jing something sweet since he has been so compliant. Otherwise, he will believe I am deceiving him.

No one on the four continents could cure Xia Jing's illness. Especially given that some top rank healers may not act for a secular world prince.

But Chu Mo's jade is unequally powerful!

Chu Mo used the jade to inspect Xia Jing in the first meeting.

Chu Mo was afraid he didn't have enough energy in the jade at that time, so he planned on scamming Xia Jing for a Yuan stone. Then he would give the jade energy.

But, all of Xia Jing's information came forth with a thought.

Chu Mo believed this is because Xia Jing is an ordinary person, so the jade didn't consume any energy to obtain information.

His illness is incurable in the secular world. But for the jade.....it couldn't be more simple.

Compared with the Demon Lord's materials, Xia Jing's illness only needs eight types of herbs to cure!

It was even easier to cure than princess Bao Lian's illness!

But Chu Mo obviously couldn't cure Xia Jing that easily. He still needed Xia Jing to gather ingredients for his master!

'First must let him.....feel a little effect. So long as he feels a little good, Xia Jing will be overjoyed!' Chu Mo thought.

Chu Mo discovered a new ability after the jade changed. The jade could act according to Chu Mo's intention, and it would give different prescriptions and medicines, provided there is enough energy to support.

As far as energy sources go, the Yuan stone is one kind of energy. The bloody spirit aura.....is also another kind!

It is unknown if there are other energy sources at the present time. Chu Mo must continually keep exploring.

If he didn't have this to rely on, then Chu Mo wouldn't dare tease the strong sixth realm cultivator in the Prince Mansion.

A cultivator that can move unhindered through the world is no joke. The current Chu Mo can't bear the cost.

Extremely light footstep sounds suddenly came from outside at this time. The person was deliberately moving stealthily, but they were unable to hide in the dead quiet night, especially from a peak third realm cultivator like Chu Mo.

"Who's there? Come out!" Chu Mo shouted in a low voice. He didn't feel well at all inside.

This is presently the Prince Mansion.....but the surrounding several thousand feet are Chu Mo's territory!

Not even the prince Xia Jing lightly steps inside. Who has enough courage to dare intrude in the dead of night?

"Ah!" The opposite party was startled. They let out a low shocked yell.

A woman.

The voice was also weak. It gave men the inescapable impulse to protect her.

“Sorry, I.....I came here to get some medicine.” The voice weakly said.

“Get medicine?” Chu Mo’s brow jumped. His instincts said that was wrong.

This is indeed the place where the Prince Mansion stores medicine, but it is all meant for Xia Jing! Xia Jing never said this, but Chu Mo had a feeling: This place is likely a prohibited area.

Since it is a prohibited area, how could someone come and casually withdraw medicine?

“I am the princess’s servant girl. The princess has a headache, and she made me come over, grab some medicine, and return. Sorry, did I disturb your rest?” The weak voice spoke and walked over from that direction. She was holding on to a dusky lantern.

The feeble light revealed a sixteen or seventeen year old girl. Her appearance was unclear, but her figure was extremely moving.

Chu Mo coldly laughed to himself: Do you think I’m a fool?

Would the servant girl of the princess be so polite to a medicine warehouse guard?

He immediately coldly said: “This isn’t a medicine warehouse. Girl, you’ve misstepped, quickly return.”

“Ah, I, I went astray? I, I just came here. The guard told me it was here.....the princess will certainly kill me if I don’t bring back medicine, boo hoo.....” The girl actually began to cry. She wept bitterly in the night, and her cries carried a long way.

There would ordinarily be guards placed far away, but no one appeared.

Chu Mo became even more alert. He coldly said: “How does that concern me?”

‘Big brother, I’m begging you to help me.’ The girl lifted the lantern up higher, exposing her face.

It was a stunning face!

“I beg you big brother, please help me. I will do anything so long as you help!” The girl’s soft voice begged, and she walked towards Chu Mo.

“Halt!” Chu Mo shouted. His voice carried far away in the dead of night.

The strange thing is, there wasn't the slightest bit of activity outside!

The girl appeared scared trembling. Her eyes filled with terror as she looked at Chu Mo. She stood there, not daring to come over.

"Leave, I will consider tonight as never having happened." Chu Mo said in a low voice.

He didn't know what exactly was happening, but he clearly felt something wrong.

This girl is absolutely not one of Xia Jing's people!

She said the princess sent her.....could it be?

A fuzzy guess immediately appeared inside Chu Mo.

His grandfather Fan Wudi never took a wife. No one fought with Chu Mo over the inheritance. But Yellow Flame City had several grand households, which one hadn't had such an occurrence?

Chu Mo always had an intelligence above his peers, and he experienced the events in the grasslands. He could guess harmful intentions in a short time.

"Did you hear? Leave." Chu Mo coldly spoke once again.

“Big brother.....how could you be so heartless? Could it be, do you wish to watch the princess kill me?” The girl’s stunning face began to beg. Her eyes showed a desperate color.

“You don’t want me to make medicine for the prince, right?” Chu Mo coldly said: “You have been here more than one or two days. Do you really not know who I am?”

“Big brother’s words, I.....I don’t understand. I just came today.....” The girl weakly spoke. Her hand.....quivered in an instant. The lantern in her hand.....crashed to the floor.

The lantern’s candle, immediately extinguished!

Qiang!

A light ring like a dragon’s roar, a cold air pierced directly at Chu Mo!

A brilliant ray of light flashed in the empty sky.

Cling!

A crisp sound.

Soon after, Murdering Heaven was in Chu Mo’s hand, pressed up against the jade-like neck of the girl.

The cold aura made the girl tremble for real this time.

“Want to kill me?” Chu Mo dully asked: “Who sent you? Don’t tell me you don’t know, didn’t those two Prince Mansion cultivators die at my hands? Do you think I won’t kill a pretty girl?”

“Kill me!” The girl’s voice became strong, extremely ice-cold, and without a trace of weakness: “Either way, I won’t live when I return.”

“You were sent by Xia Jie’s mother?” Chu Mo curiously asked.

The girl didn’t speak a word this time. She only rigidly stared at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo couldn’t see the girl’s eyes in the dark of night, but he could feel them. He smiled and said: “If I hand you to the prince, then speak for yourself.....what will be your supporter’s fate?”

“You.....you’re despicable! Kill me!” The girl said. She unexpectedly pushed her neck towards Murdering Heaven.

Her nature is actually this fierce?

Chu Mo was a little shocked. The girl’s neck was already pushing up against the incredibly sharp edge of Murdering Heaven.

Chu Mo quickly withdrew the sword, but the girl's neck still showed a cut, oozing out blood.

Chu Mo couldn't see, but he could smell the blood in the air.

Chu Mo immediately said in a low voice: "Fine, go. The grudges in the Prince Mansion have nothing to do with me. But, don't come here seeking trouble again! You truly have ability, go kill the old thief Xia Jing yourself. Won't everything be settled then?"

Chu Mo spoke, then turned and left.

The strange thing is, that girl stood there, actually not moving. She quickly picked up the pace and followed after Chu Mo took several steps.

Murdering Heaven appeared in Chu Mo's hand, pointed at the girl's neck: "Do you really want to die?"

The girl whispered: "I have something to say to you, can we go to your room?"

"Are you trying to seduce me?" Chu Mo's brow wrinkled, somewhat bothered: "Say it here. Those guards should all be called away by your people. There isn't a third person here, so speak."

The girls double-star eyes stared at Chu Mo in the dark night. She

suddenly kneeled to the ground: “I’m begging you, don’t make medicine for that old animal Xia Jing. Otherwise the princess will die!”

Chu Mo’s brow wrinkled, and he looked at the girl kneeling there: “What does her death have to do with me? Didn’t she raise a son like Xia Jie, one beneath the animals? She sent you to deal with me, is she a good person? You are confused girl!”

“Yes, I know my request is excessive. I know princess has many faults. But my entire family and I owe her our lives. So I must stop you from making medicine for that old animal Xia Jing.....even if I die!” The girl resolutely spoke.

“What will you use to stop me?” Chu Mo coldly said: “You aren’t my opponent in a fight. You can’t kill me. As far as seduction, I’m not interested in you. That also won’t succeed. I will still refine the medicine given that you die! Quickly leave. I don’t want to speak useless words with you. You have your determination, and I also have mine.”

Chu Mo no longer paid attention to the girl, and he took large strides inside.

The girl kept kneeling there, completely motionless.

Chu Mo began a large cycle of the Heavens Will scripture. Midnight already passed, and one could begin to see a little. The night would soon recede, and daytime would come. The girl was actually still there. Chu Mo didn’t know whether to laugh or cry.

He pushed opened the door, walked outside, and said: “It is useless to kneel here until you die. The day is quickly coming. Do you wish to be discovered? Won’t you and your boss be brought to disaster? Go back and tell the princess.....to behave herself, and stop her crooked ways. I will find an opportunity to speak with prince Xia Jing. At the very least.....he won’t bring her harm.

The girl’s eyes lit up. Her whole body seemed to fill with life. She looked at Chu Mo: “Really?”

“Remember, the fault lies on your master! She raised a son that is lower than the animals, and it is the source of her arrogance! Now she sends you to kill me. Normally, I shouldn’t be helping her.”

Chu Mo coldly spoke: “The one I’m helping.....is you. Because you persisted, and I saw myself in you! You aren’t a bad person. You have repaid your debt by doing this. Leave the Prince Mansion! Otherwise, that woman will send you to death sooner or later!”

Chu Mo profoundly looked at the girl as he spoke: “A deep conversation with a stranger, the words end here!” He closed the door and returned to cultivating.

Chapter 80: Wasp Stinger

The girl stood there, nibbling her teeth. The pair of starry eyes were extremely thankful. She stood there a long time, bowed to Chu Mo's room, then turned and departed. The girl's figure quickly faded away in the obscure night.

The guards at their posts each regained consciousness not long after she left. There was a confused color in each of their eyes. They felt extremely sleepy just now, and they had unconsciously fallen asleep.

The guards faced into the prohibited area, and they carefully searched around. They discovered nothing going on, and they all settled down inside. The guards all decided to bury this strange event inside. The prince would become enraged otherwise, and they couldn't bear the aftermath.

The lamp was lit in the princess's room from the beginning to the end.

Yuan Zidai paced back and forth in the room with an anxious expression expression.

“That little animal. It is said he is amazing. Not even two of the Prince Mansion cultivators were his match. She didn't know if the servant girl could pull this scheme off without a hitch.....” Yuan Zidai's pupils flickered with a quiet cold light: “Chu Mo, first you cripple my son, and now you plan to break my escape route. Although you and I have never met face to face, we are sworn

enemies! So don't blame me for being ruthless!"

Tap tap tap.

There was a sudden knock on the door at this time.

Yuan Zidai's whole body slightly shook. She took a large step forward, and she personally opened the door.

"Yan Zhi, how is it? Yuan Zidai's eyes filled with rare hope. She stared at the stunning beauty that entered: "Did you succeed?"

The girl looked ashamed: "Master.....I'm sorry. I.....I didn't succeed."

"What?" Yuan Zidai's voice became extremely sharp. She stared at the girl with a quiet cold light in her eyes: "Are you joking?"

"That teenager.....he is too vigilant." The stunning beauty softly said: "I didn't even get near him.....before I was already discovered!"

"Do you know how great a risk I took to send you? Huh?" Yuan Zidai angrily looked at the girl: "I sent people to knock out the surrounding guards.....do you know how hard that was? Do you know how much those drugs cost? I wouldn't recover the loss even if I sold you!"

“Also, what about the drugs I gave you? Didn’t I give you drugs? Why didn’t you use them? Those knockout drugs could even put a rank five cultivator to sleep.....why didn’t you use them?”

Yuan Zidai’s glass-like face became ferocious. She gritted her teeth as she looked at the girl, and her voice became extremely bitter: “Yan Zhi.....do you think your family would all be dead.....do you plan to fly away?”

The girl was startled as soon as she heard the words. Her face appeared hurt. She looked at Yuan Zidai, and then she slowly kneeled: “Master, Yan Zhi didn’t! Yan Zhi would even sacrifice her life for master without hesitation! Yan Zhi knows her entire family would have died without master.”

“So you still have a little conscious.” Yuan Zidai coldly looked at Yan Zhi: “Then why were you defeated?”

Yan Zhi raised her head. The bloody scar on her neck was visible, and she said while feeling wronged: “That person is too amazing. I had no way to approach him. I am no match for him, even with.....even with seduction.....it is no use! But, he said in the end.....he said.....”

“What did he say?” Yuan Zidai’s voice already became extremely severe.

He said.....he wants master to behave. He will ask for leniency from the prince. He won’t wrong.....master.”

Smack!

Yuan Zidai walked forward, raised a hand, and ruthlessly slapped the girl across the face.

The girl's clean jade-like face received a fresh red handprint.

Yuan Zidai shrieked: "You idiot! You sold me out?"

"No.....I didn't. Master, Yan Zhi didn't sell you out. He guessed himself!" The girl immediately teared up. She spoke feeling extremely wronged.

Yuan Zidai gnashed her teeth. She appeared mean and ferocious: "You stupid thing. That little animal crippled my son. The hatred between us is as deep as the ocean. He will help me? Do I need him to plead for me?"

"Yan Zhi feels.....he isn't lying. Besides.....young master Jie, he....."

Smack!

The girl hadn't yet finished speaking before another slap landed on her face. Another extremely sharp shriek came from Yuan Zidai: "What did you say? You cheap girl. What about my son? You dare say my son is no good? I'll beat you to death, you useless thing!"

Smack smack smack!

Yuan Zidai let loose with the left and right. She smacked the girl seven or eight times in one breath. She still wanted to keep smacking, but her hand was suddenly stopped. Yan Zhi had tears in her eyes, and her face was red and swollen. She looked at Yuan Zidai: “Enough?”

“You dare.....resist me?” Yuan Zidai’s eyes shot out unimaginably cold rays of light. She looked at Yan Zhi and coldly laughed: “I knew.....a little bitch like you is completely unreliable! Fortunately.....I already set up other methods.”

Yan Zhi was entirely shocked as she looked at Yuan Zidai. She gradually let go of Yuan Zidai’s hand.

Yuan Zidai no longer continued hitting. She only coldly stared at Yan Zhi. There wasn’t a trace of emotion in her eyes: “I placed a slow-acting poison in your body. I paid a large price for it. It is a recipe from one of the sect doctors. Don’t even think about leaving me in this life so long as you are poisoned! The poison will flare up if you leave me for more than five days! Yan Zhi.....your life is mine! I want you to live, and you will live. I want you to die, and you will die! You.....understand?”

The kneeling girl was scared silly. She was shocked as she looked at Yuan Zidai. She couldn’t understand. She thought of the words Chu Mo said at the end : “If someday you feel your body is weak. For instance.....if a problem appears with your body. You can go to

the Fan household and seek me. [I can help you.](#)”

[TL: Chu Mo doesn't say this in the last chapter. I swear I'm not cutting things out of the story! It seems the author just added this in.]

The girl didn't understand these words at the time, but now she finally understood!

Chu Mo has the ability to cure the prince's illness. He can cure things that no one else can cure.....of course he has the ability to see her sickness at first glance!

So it is like this!

Originally like that!

She never thought.....her most trustable master, the one she would sacrifice her life for, would disbelieve her. Yuan Zidai actually planted poison in her body!

“Hmph, what is this expression? Slave girl, you are still too soft to fight with me! I don't care what methods you use. Immediately go and kill Chu Mo. This matter is finished. Otherwise.....” Yuan Zidai's eyes were ice-cold as she looked at the girl.

The girl suddenly took over the conversation: “Otherwise you will kill me?” The girl lowered her face as she spoke, then softly said: “Master, Yan Zhi's family encountered a difficult situation back then. My family was harmed by villains, but luckily master

came to our aid. Yan Zhi's entire family escaped alive. Yan Zhi decided to give her life to master in that moment!"

Yuan Zidai snorted.

Yan Zhi continued speaking: "Later on, my family died from illness one after the other. Master sent money and medicine, but they were not fortunate. They were too weak, and they died one by one. Master even paid to bury the dead.....Yan Zhi has recorded these things in her heart. I swore an oath to repay master."

Yuan Zidai coldly looked at Yan Zhi: "How have you repaid me? You still haven't finished, and you've sold me out? Simply ungrateful!"

Yan Zhi payed no heed to Yuan Zidai. She softly spoke to herself: "Now Yan Zhi finally knows, master always viewed my family as an inconvenience, so she poisoned them to death. I would be concerned about them if they were still alive. I couldn't wholeheartedly work for master. So.....they were better off dead. Yan Zhi's life would be completely devoted to master in this way."

"What nonsense are you saying?" Yuan Zidai's expression completely changed. She loudly denounced: "I poisoned you because.....because I was afraid you would harm me one day! How could I poison your family?"

"Ha ha, you have already gone so far. Does master think I will believe her explanation?" The girl kneeling there with swollen red cheeks gave Yuan Zidai three customary bows: "Master, Zhi Yan

must say thank you in the end. I'm sorry, but I hate you!"

Zhi Yan stood up as she spoke. She deeply looked at Yuan Zidai: "I wish you better things in the future."

"You.....do you not wish to live?" Yuan Zidai's eyes finally revealed a trace of panic: "Do you know? You will rot to death after five days away from me!"

"My heart already died, why cherish the body?" Yan Zhi looked at Yuan Zidai. She turned and left without hesitation, fading into the night.

Yuan Zidai powerlessly collapsed in her chair, her eyes full of hate. She muttered: "Bitch.....bitch! Scram! Scram! I don't need your sharp mouth. Wait until you are about to die.....you will come back and beg for me!"

.....

Chu Mo walked out in a glowing mood the next morning. The courtyard was neat and tidy. Last night's events were like a dream, not leaving a single trace.

A waiter came by with breakfast soon after. Chu Mo called out when he was about to withdraw: "Wait a moment."

"What are young master Chu's orders?" The waiter wore ordinary clothes. He appeared like a normal servant, but only Xia Jing's most trusted people could actually appear here.

"Do guards surround this area?" Chu Mo pointed far away, then he asked: "I called out for a long time last night.....why did no one respond?"

"Ah? Not possible!" The servant's eyes first flashed with uncertainty. His eyes immediately focused, and then he said: "I will immediately report this to the prince. I will immediately give young master Chu an explanation!"

Chu Mo closely looked over the servant's ordinary clothes. He thought: He is one of Xia Jing's trusted men sure enough. Otherwise, how could a low level servant have the qualifications to appear before the prince?

"Okay, have the prince come over. Just say.....a portion of the medicine is already done." Chu Mo plainly said.

"Ah? I got it! Please eat your meal first young master Chu! Wait just a moment! I will report to the prince!" The server quickly left. An enormous event couldn't compare with this news.

Xia Jing quickly rushed over after a short period of time. His eyes

were extremely excited. He immediately showed deep concern when he saw Chu Mo: “I just heard the news about last night?”

Chu Mo said: “Come inside and talk.”

Chu Mo looked at Xia Jing inside the room. He first gave the prince a medicine pill. The pill was completely blue, and it was the size of a bean. Chu Mo said: “The prince must first take this pill, then we speak about other things.”

Chu Mo passed Xia Jing a cup of water.

“Take it right now?” Xia Jing excited pupils flashed with a trace of hesitation.

Chu Mo smiled: “What? Is prince afraid the medicine is poisoned?”

“Ha, how could it be? Prince is afraid.....cough cough.....” Xia Jing’s face turned red.

Chu Mo lost his smile and said: “Prince is suspicious.....how could it be so fast?”

Xia Jing scratched his head and smiled: “No it’s not.....just somewhat anxious.” His most shameful moment had already been exposed to the boy. This was nothing. Xia Jing took the pill and swallowed it down without hesitation, and then he sat there.

Xia Jing's face revealed a trace of amazement after the time it takes an incense stick to burn.....he became completely excited. He soared up from the seat and walked outside. His eyes suddenly became very large. He looked at Chu Mo and shouted: "The prince.....can feel!"

Chapter 81: Xia Jing's Change

“.....” Chu Mo didn't know what just happened on the four continents. The corners of his mouth twitched as he looked at Xia Jing: “Prince, I am still a child.”

Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo and thought: Whoever takes you for a child would certainly die miserably!

“Ha ha, apologies, prince is too happy. Young master Chu's medicine.....is truly miraculous.....a true miracle! Prince doesn't know how to thank young master Chu!” Xia Jing praised Chu Mo with a loud voice. He walked back and forth across the room, but there was a tinge of regret in his heart at the same time: It would be best if I could feel just a little bit more.....

But Xia Jing knew his illness had festered for a decade! He sought famous doctors, but there was no effect. Now he has recovered a trace of feeling from the medicine. It was already heavenly news.

Xia Jing seriously faced Chu Mo and bowed: “Your kindness goes beyond words. Young master Chu, I will record this moment in my heart!”

Chu Mo dully said: “This is not important, just protect my safety and we are good.”

Xia Jing's pupils flickered. He recalled what his subordinate had just reported. The tips of his brow raised at once, and he resumed a

princely manner. He suddenly burst out: “What? What event did young master Chu encounter last night?”

Chu Mo said: “Nothing big, just someone.....doesn’t wish the prince to recover, and has brought their hate to me.”

“Someone.....doesn’t wish me to recover? They hate you?” Xia Jing’s pupils immediately flashed with an ice-cold light. His voice became extremely severe: “Please explain young master Chu.”

“A person came last night to assassinate me. I don’t know how, but the surrounding guards didn’t react at all. It’s okay, I dealt with it.” Chu Mo simply said.

“Absurd!” Xia Jing became indignant: “Come!”

The door immediately opened, and a figure appeared beside Xia Jing. The figure was a skinny male in his thirties. He respectfully stood at Xia Jing’s side: “What is the prince’s command?”

“Immediately go investigate. What happened to the surrounding guards last night? Also, thoroughly investigate the activities of everyone in the mansion last night!” Xia Jing’s voice was low. He suppressed the rage inside and said: “Forget it, you only need to investigate what happened to the guards.”

“Yes!” The man nodded, then quietly withdrew.

Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo. He seriously said: “I will give Chu Mo

an explanation for these things!”

“Does the prince know who did it?” Chu Mo asked.

Xia Jing nodded with an unsightly face: “Apart from that woman.....who would wish I didn’t recover? She has become too arrogant over the years. To the extent that.....she has forgotten her own place!”

Xia Jing departed from Chu Mo soon after.

Chu Mo lightly sighed. He thought: Sorry princess, had you not poisoned your own servant, then.....I would have spoken out for you before Xia Jing, even if you hate me to the core. At the very least, I wouldn’t let you be miserable and neglected in the future. The fault lies with your son, not with you! It is a pity you are too vicious! You won’t even forgive your subordinates, how could you forgive me?

Chu Mo dropped this matter to the back of his mind. He was certain Xia Jing knew how to handle it.

Sure enough, the matter had an outcome in less than a day’s time. A person came and reported the newest progress to Chu Mo.

“The princess’s household has collapsed.”

“The princess’s father has been sentenced for a crime deserving the death penalty. He is now in prison. The princess and her

brothers tyrannically oppressed the local area, and they have all been imprisoned. The surrounding people all cheered. They said someone finally punishes this horrible family.”

“Then.....the princess?” Chu Mo asked the person.

“The princess is sick, seriously ill. She will go to a monastery after her illness is cured. She will live the lonely life of a monk.” The person looked at Chu Mo with a deep meaning: “This.....is actually the best outcome. The prince’s nature.....it has already changed a lot. He would have let the princess die from her illness in the past!”

Chu Mo nodded: “This way is also not bad.”

The person respectfully withdrew after reporting the news.

A large amount of medicine steadily flowed inside over the next few days. Chu Mo could clearly feel an increase in effort on Xia Jing’s part.

Xia Jing had forcefully collected over ninety of the three hundred kinds of herbs. He had started getting everything except for those few rare top grade herbs.

Chu Mo also refined over ninety pills.

The demon lord’s poison couldn’t be cured by one pill alone. The jade gave the most reasonable prescription according to Chu Mo’s

request. That is combine several herbs together to make a medicine, then the medicine would be split several times.....and taken.

The Demon Lord's poison can be removed bit by bit in this way. Chu Mo felt this was the best method.

The day all the herbs are collected is the day the Demon Lord's poison will be completely undone.

Chu Mo didn't place the quantities for the ten most top rank Yuan medicines when he gave the list to Xia Jing. The prince would have instantly gone insane had Chu Mo done that.

Chu Mo only had one phrase for those remaining ten top rank Yuan medicines: The more the better.

In addition, Xia Jing is truly amazing. The prince actually found those ten top rank Yuan medicines, although the quantity wasn't near enough.

Chu Mo was already satisfied. He had an even deeper recognition for prince Xia Jing's ability. Chu Mo couldn't gather all these herbs within a few years if he had the same financial resources as Xia Jing.

This is also why Chu Mo wanted to establish his own power. He could use an unimagined resource at a crucial time.

Chu Mo prepared to temporarily leave the Prince Mansion after giving Xia Jing the second set of medicine.

Because he had already been there for nine days! The next day would be time for his second Yuan beast blood bath, and he still had to visit the Fu household.

The new year would also happen in another three days. There are too many things that Chu Mo needs to take care of.

“I have refined three pills this time. Take one now, one at noon, and one in the evening.....the prince should recover a man’s glory after!” Chu Mo looked at the urgently breathing Xia Jing. He slightly smiled: “But.....you must have self-control. Absolutely don’t use it excessively.....”

Even though Chu Mo had already seen the old man’s most shameful moment, Xia Jing’s face still turned red. He stammered: “I know.....I know.....don’t worry young master Chu.....”

Chu Mo said: “Wait until the day the prince collects all the herbs. All of your troubles will be completely resolved! I didn’t write the quantity for the most precious ingredients. That is because they are too rare. I can make come Yuan foundation strengthening pills if you can find them. I believe prince knows the worth of these pills. There won’t be that big of an effect on curing your illness if you can’t find the rare herbs. I admit that I deliberately exploited the prince’s weakness in the beginning.....”

Chu Mo calmly looked at Xia Jing, then he continued: “But now

I've discovered, prince.....you aren't a great man, but you also have a bottom line. You did especially well when it came to the princess. I won't cheat you. Those ten remaining precious herbs.....try your best."

Xia Jing already thoroughly trusted Chu Mo even before he explained. This minor explanation caused Xia Jing to have complete trust in Chu Mo.

Xia Jing had great difficulty calming down after hearing about the Yuan foundation strengthening pills.

Not just anyone in the large sects could even attain these pills. With the exception of core sect disciples, one must make a huge contribution to the sect.....then they can receive a single pill as reward.

It has enormous benefits towards a person's body. Cultivators that take a pill can gain Yuan power worth several months in bitter training! The Yuan foundation strengthening pill can actually extend an ordinary person's life. For instance, an eighty year old person could extend his life by thirty or forty years.

This kind of rejuvenating pill is practically a pill of immortality in the secular world!

Who wouldn't want one?

Xia Jing had heard of these pills, but he never attained one. He

became completely excited upon hearing the rare herbs could refine into these pills.

“Don’t worry young master Chu. I will strive to buy them all!” Xia Jing looked at Chu Mo at this time. The more he looked, the more pleased he became. The prince knew he misjudged this youth too much in the past because of hatred. It was a great mistake.

But their two paths have also crossed because of those past events. In a way.....he wanted to thank his son!

Xia Jing closed his eyes and thought: I will make my son keep his mother company when I get someone pregnant! That way young master Chu won’t be provoked.

Chu Mo left the Prince Mansion soon after. The Prince Mansion’s official gate opened up this time, but no longer secretly. Prince Xia Jing personally brought Chu Mo to the gate with a smiling face!

The people passing by all saw the scene.

Shocking!

Completely stunning!

Those people rubbed their eyes, wanting to watch more carefully. Could they have seen wrong? The smiling elegant man at the gate.....is it really the extremely cruel and merciless prince?

Chu Mo faced Xia Jing, waved, and left with a calm face.

He understood. This is Xia Jing sending a message to the outside world: This young man is protected by Xia Jing!

From now on, it could be said that whoever wants to mess with Chu Mo must first consider prince Xia Jing. Of course, the people that hate Xia Jing might also go after Chu Mo.

But the current situation had more advantages than disadvantages according to Chu Mo.

No one hated Chu Mo at the moment, apart from those people in the Eastern Palace. And those people wouldn't change their opinion about Chu Mo, no matter what Xia Jing did.....as well as their opinion on Fan Wudi.

Not everyone is on the same path.

Chapter 82: Many Things

Chu Mo didn't go directly home after leaving the Prince Mansion. He first went to the Xu household. Xu Fufu got the news, and he came out to greet Chu Mo. He had a somewhat sad look on his face: "This guy.....actually runs into the Prince Mansion and lives there several days. Did that old thief take advantage of you?"

"Ah? You didn't call him an old son of a bitch?" Chu Mo asked somewhat startled.

"....." Xu Fu didn't know what just happened: "Is that the main point of the of the question? Ever since the day you called him Old Thief, the people that dislike Xia Jing.....all call him Old Thief! Those two words are really catchy!"

"....." Chu Mo also didn't know what the heck was going on. He looked at Xu Fufu: "How goes the Qing provincial governor?"

"Could it be anything?" Xu Fufu wryly smiled: "The guy that they sent started out all high and mighty, making all kinds of noise. He took several steps back when he saw me. I scolded him and drove him away. Zhang Chong secretly hurried to Yellow Flame City three days later. I also caught him and gave him a scolding myself."

Chu Mo suddenly chimed in: "Did he promise to give you several beautiful women?"

Xu Fufu's eyes became big. He had a hurt expression: "Ten.....

but of course I couldn't reply. Young black Chu.....do you believe I have no morals?"

Chu Mo wryly smiled: "I just can't believe Zhang Chong! He believes beautiful women work better than anything else on a guy like you!"

"He didn't succeed this time. Brother, I have a limit. Do you really believe the Xu family uncle only sees women?" Xu Fufu returned a haughty look and said: "The old man first wanted to defend his son, and I scolded him. I said his pig son would already be killed if my brother didn't react in time. The archer would have shot him dead!"

"What did he say?" Chu Mo asked.

Xu Fufu gloated: "That old guy is really an oily politician. He is too smart. When he heard my words, he said the archer couldn't have been sent by prince Xia Jing. He said the prince wouldn't do such a thing."

Chu Mo nodded. It is normal for Zhang Chong to have such a response. Zhang Chong would face hell if he cursed the name of Xia Jing.

Xu Fufu said: "The old man couldn't endure my accusations, but he actually came to our line of reasoning. He will certainly teach his son a lesson after returning home, and his son won't come out and cause trouble again."

“So it is done?” Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu. He felt this wasn’t much like the tenth Xu’s style.

Xu Fufu laughed loudly: “How could that be it? That idiot Zhang Qingyu dared open his mouth and curse you. Could I let the matter go without him shedding a layer of skin? Hah, I gave that letter to Zhang Chong, and I told the old bastard what Zhang Qingyu said. Ha ha, Zhang Chong almost spit blood. I reckon that idiot Zhang Qingyu will suffer when he gets home.

Chu Mo secretly sighed inside. This matter only went so far. Zhang Zhong would flee far away if he knew the real actor behind the secret attack. He absolutely doesn’t have the courage to face the crown prince.

A provincial governor is quite powerful, but against a crown prince.....he would be crushed until there was nothing left.

All of the royal palace conflicts are an unimaginably terrifying maelstrom. Once a person is sucked into the whirlpool, they don’t have a good end, no matter who it is.

“Looking at your face, it seems you aren’t satisfied with this outcome?” Xu Fufu understood Chu Mo too well. He immediately asked after seeing Chu Mo’s reaction.

Chu Mo shook his head: “We hit Zhang Chong’s son, tormented him half dead, and made him owe us a favor. It is already quite good.”

Xu Fufu's eyebrows raised: "Just like how you crippled that bastard Xia Jie, and now Xia Jing treats you as an uncle?"

Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu: "I have the ability to make him yield. Would he treat me like that otherwise?"

Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo, then sighed: "You speak the truth little black brother. You have changed a lot since returning. You could never work together with someone like Xia Jing in the past."

Chu Mo was silent a moment, then he said: "I have changed neither good nor bad.....right?"

"No, you have become extremely mature! Much more mature than myself. Grandfather is always silent as he eats, but he has mentioned you several times at the dinner table. It's already happened more than ten times! Each time he mentions you, he has an expression of 'I wish he were my grandson'....." Xu Fufu somewhat depressingly said: "The number of lessons I've suffered over the past several days.....are skyrocketing!"

Chu Mo smiled big: "You deserve it! You should have changed a long time ago!"

Xu Fufu returned a haughty look and said: "I've already done many good things over the past several days!" He then drew close to Chu Mo's ear and said in a low voice: "Older sister Yiniang..... she's already gotten into contact with one-armed uncle in your household. We already have over a hundred people at our command!"

“How are there over a hundred so fast?” Chu Mo was a little startled. He was also very happy at the same time. He said: “There’s also another three days until the new year. They can be brought into play after the new year, that’s already amazing.”

“Little black brother, I discovered.....sister Yiniang is not only serious about this work, it seems.....she is also especially suited for it! Gluttonous Ogre will need a new boss soon, because she won’t be able to keep both operations going after a while. It is too tiring.” Xu Fufu said.

“Then have sister Mei be her replacement!” Chu Mo logically said: “She must be thoroughly familiar with the Gluttonous Ogre by now? Wouldn’t it be a pity for such a smart girl to be idle?”

Xu Fufu angrily said: “She is thoroughly cultured and educated. To make her a restaurant boss.....isn’t it a waste?”

“Then what do you think she should do?” Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu: “I know you have protective feelings towards women, but have you ever asked her opinion? How can you say what she wishes?”

“Ah? Little black Chu.....it appears you have a little understanding of women now? Not possible.....what girl did you meet on this trip?” Xu Fufu curiously looked at Chu Mo: “You always used to hide far away from the topic of women.”

Chu Mo’s face turned slightly dark, and he snapped: “None of

your business! Is your grandfather home?”

“He’s home.” Xu Fufu immediately closed his mouth.

They knew each other well, and they knew when not to cross the line. Xu Fufu was curious as a kitten on the inside, but he knew better than to ask about the girl.

Because he could see his own brother has a story!

Soon after, Chu Mo arrived at Xu Zhongliang’s study.

The old man appeared very busy, and he didn’t exchange small-talk with Chu Mo. He got straight to the point: “Several things, first, you must join the new year’s banquet. Before the banquet, there will be a short, small.....award ceremony!”

Xu Fufu enviously looked at Cu Mo from the side. Several days had passed by. Xu Fufu could easily ask his grandfather what happened on the grasslands, even if Xu Zhongliang didn’t say anything first.

Xu Zhongliang didn’t conceal the news from his grandson. He told Xu Fufu inside information in order to encourage him.

“Hero Medal ah! When will I attain one?” Xu Fufu sighed from the side.

Xu Zhongliang looked to his own grandson. He didn't wish to hit Xu Fufu, so he just ignored him. The old man continued on: "Second, at the banquet, you.....will act as the military representative. And you will give his majesty a toast."

"Ah?" Chu Mo looked shocked at Xu Zhongliang. His mouth twitched as he said: "Grandfather Xu.....this.....I'm afraid it isn't appropriate?"

Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo: "What's not appropriate?"

"I'm not in the military....."

"But you have heavenly contributions! Moreover, your contributions can only be categorized as military! That old guy Fang Mingtong will certainly go mad if not." Xu Zhongliang got an impulsive smile. He recalled Fang Mingtong's facial expression upon hearing about the whole situation. It was honestly too satisfying.

"But other people don't know!"

"His majesty, the Marshal, and I know. That's enough!"

"I am so young.....and you are promoting me. Won't several people be jealous of me? Isn't this setting me up to burn?"

"You little demon. You care about their envy?"

“I don’t care.....but.....”

“There are no buts!” Xu Zhongliang energetically waved: “You are so small, and other’s seek you out, but you keep on evading away. You have matured.....and I see you have matured too much! Where did you learn to be slippery like us old men? You are a hot-blooded youth. What do you care about all those things for? This matter is a clear display. The emperor, Marshal Fang.....and I are all praising you! You have our support, what are you afraid of?”

Xu Zhongliang stared at the unwilling looking Chu Mo: “You are dancing around in the prince of Da Xia’s hand, are you still afraid of other challenges?”

“You are speaking nonsense. He is a royal prince.....isn’t that a little too easy for me to handle?” Chu Mo honestly spoke.

“Don’t you know?” Xu Zhongliang smirked at Chu Mo: “Your grandfather isn’t here. I will take the responsibility of teaching you. Do you really think Xia Jing is from an easy generation? He has been a chief cabinet member for many years. Do you think he lacks subtle methods? You will lose miserably if you keep looking down upon him!”

Xu Zhongliang’s tone alleviated. He said with all earnestness: “You are still young. Your future is really too bright. Don’t be influenced by messy situations. You must absolutely not participate in those nasty palace schemes.”

“Palace schemes?” Chu Mo was a little shocked inside.

“This old man has looked into that archer. He was a guard for the third prince Xia Hao ten years ago. He used some methods to send the archer into the Prince Mansion.” Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo: “This archer left the Prince Mansion without authorization. When the archer was going to kill Zhang Qingyu and frame you, do you think Xia Jing was completely unaware?”

Chapter 83: Awakening Words

Xu Zhongliang sighed: “These people.....have played politics their whole lives. You should stay farther away from them.”

“Grandfather Xu, I know.” Chu Mo sincerely said. Chu Mo knew the old man really wanted the best for him, otherwise he wouldn’t say such words.

“But you handled the matter with prince Xia Jing very well. Xie Jie has committed many kinds of evil, and now he receives the proper punishment. You have also smoothed out the retaliation from Xia Jing. Not only is the conflict gone, but you have also eased the resentment towards each other. These methods could already be considered brilliant!” Xu Zhongliang was extremely pleased as he looked at Chu Mo.

Xu Zhongliang carried on saying: “His majesty was mad at the prince, but they are brothers in the end. When you cure Xia Jing’s illness, not only will his majesty be happy, but it is a great event for all of Yellow Flame City.”

Xu Fufu said from the side: “Yes, at least he won’t go around hurting people.”

Xu Zhongliang nodded. He looked at Chu Mo: “There is one last thing. You might have to go into the military after the new year. But this matter is still not concluded. Marshal Fang Mingtong went completely wild after hearing about your achievements on the grasslands. He said you must go into the army. I had a little

differing opinion, and the Marshal argued with me as if his life depended on it.”

Xu Zhongliang wryly smiled “A scholar encounters a soldier.....”

“With my grandfather?” Chu Mo asked with a smile. The large majority of his childhood was seeped in the military. He didn’t oppose a military life.

“This might not be so. Your starting point will be relatively high after entering into the military because of your current status.” Xu Zhongliang looked at Chu Mo: “You might suffer criticism if you go back to your grandfather’s side. Others don’t know you carry a Hero Medal after all.”

Chu Mo nodded. He said: “Good, that will be good for the future.”

Xu Fufu said from the side: “Grandfather, I also want to join the military.”

“No way!” Chu Mo and Xu Zhongliang practically yelled in unison.

Xu Fufu’s mouth twitched, and he had an appearance of being wronged: “Why not!”

Chu Mo and Xu Zhongliang looked at each other.

“You speak first.”

“You speak first.”

The two smiled at each other.

Xu Fufu gave a supercilious look and said: “Why the tacit understanding?”

Chu Mo said: “You don’t need to walk another person’s path to prove yourself.”

Xu Zhongliang approvingly looked at Chu Mo, then he said to Xu Fufu: “You have such a good brother. I don’t need to worry when I’m gone!”

“Grandfather, what are you saying?” Xu Fufu’s eyes became a little red.

“Haha, the truth is everyone dies. This is an inescapable thing.” Xu Zhongliang laughed extremely calmly, then he said: “The military really doesn’t suit you.”

Xu Fufu scratched his head and said: “I know the military doesn’t suit me, but I want to do something. I don’t want people to call me tenth noble son with a respectful face when I go places.....even if their faces are filled with respect, I know the truth in my heart.

Their respect is for my grandfather, father, and the whole Xu family!”

Xu Fufu’s face revealed a touch of disappointment. He said: “I am the exception.”

“There are many ways to win respect.” Xu Zhongliang looked at his grandson while somewhat pleased: “Just, fair, and honest people can win the respect of others. Eternally fearless warriors that defend the homeland can also win respect. People who seriously work can also win respect. People who do good deeds for their hometown all the time.....can also win respect!”

Xu Fufu sat down, pondering, he muttered: “I seem.....to understand a little. Like with Chu Mo, if what he did on the grasslands leaked out, he would earn the respect of everyone in Da Xia! Because he made a great contribution to the country and the people!”

Xu Zhongliang nodded: “Yes, everyone from the top royalty to the lower villagers would respect Chu Mo. Because he is our entire country’s hero!”

Chu Mo embarrassingly smiled: “That’s an exaggeration.....”

“This is no exaggeration!” Xu Zhongliang earnestly said: “Perhaps you don’t clearly understand. The things you’ve done have had an influence on the entirety of Da Xia.....even the whole Azure Dragon continent!”

Xu Fufu had never seen his grandfather praise a person like this before. He wasn't envious of Chu Mo. He was only happy for his own brother. Xu Fufu secretly swore to himself: Chu Mo is right. I don't need to walk another person's path to prove myself! I will strive my hardest from today onwards. When people hear the name Xu Fufu, they won't think of my grand Xu family, they will think of all the beautiful women at my side! For I am.....Xu Fufu!

Chu Mo took leave from the Xu family and returned to the Fan mansion.

One-armed uncle was still not home. He should still be busy gathering old soldiers. Chu Mo thought: It looks like one-armed uncle found the confidence he lost so many years ago.

What Chu Mo didn't see coming is, the Demon Lord was still there.

"Master.....you haven't gone out?" Chu Mo bowed to the Demon Lord.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: "Just returned."

Chu Mo began thinking how to tell master about the pills. Xia Jing had already collected one third of the herbs. Chu Mo now carried three pills that he refined!

Yes, a mountain-sized pile of herbs only refined into three pills.

The jade space also expanded again. That gray shrub grew several fresh soft sprouts. A large amount of herbs were absorbed and turned into pills at the same time. It also gave the jade space a large amount of energy.

These were the things Chu Mo directly observed and felt.

The Demon Lord plainly asked: “I heard you ordered the prince to gather a large amount of herbs?”

“This is true.” Chu Mo nodded, somewhat nervously looking at the Demon Lord.

“The rare opportunity you received on the grassland.....does it have something to do with refining medicine?” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo. Those distinct cold pupils seemed to flash a trace of feeling, but it immediately died out.

Chu Mo didn’t know what to say to his master. He immediately nodded, and then he said with great difficulty: “This thing.....I don’t wish to deliberately hide it from master. Only.....I don’t know what to say.”

“You don’t have to speak. That is your rare chance! Would master covet your rare chance? Am I an idiot that doesn’t know etiquette? Do I recklessly dig up the ground to pull out the roots, seeking the truth?” The Demon Lord stared at Chu Mo: “No one in the Immortal World would speak if they obtained a rare opportunity! It is rarely talked about between father and son. Because these rare chances.....cannot be spoken!”

“It is very hard to speak about.....” Chu Mo’s mouth twitched, but he also relaxed at the same time. His master.....appears to be a fierce evil person, but he is actually quite enlightened!

“Not only is it hard to say, but several secret opportunities, are never spoken about!” The Demon Lord softly sighed. He looked at Chu Mo and dully said: “I suffered an enormous loss because of this at that time. Heaven’s Will My Will.....was in a class of opportunities from the gods. It attained me, and at the same time, it.....ruined me!”

“Master’s heritage actually comes from a godly opportunity?” Chu Mo was immediately curious when he heard master mention the past. He thought to himself: ‘Why do you say it burned you?’

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “Originally, I wouldn’t tell anyone this, but you are my disciple. You have also started to study Heaven’s Will My Will, so there is no harm in telling you.”

Chu Mo didn’t expect that something he worried about for so long would be so simple in the Demon Lord’s eyes. He couldn’t help but think: My knowledge is too small. I will be like master one day, profound and powerful!

Chu Mo could pull out the three pills at ease now that there was a fitting explanation for the refinement.

The Demon Lord saw the three pills in his hand, and he couldn’t cover the surprise on his face: “You can actually take millions of

kilograms.....and refine them into three pills? Your rare opportunity.....was truly powerful!”

Chu Mo didn't feel startled that the Demon Lord knew these things. Xia Jing purchased herbs without restraint. It was no secret to the entire Yellow Flame City. The Demon Lord could know these things easily.

“Yes, there are only three. I estimate that there will be ten with all the materials gathered.....” Chu Mo said.

The Demon Lord took the three pills in his hand. His distinct cold pupils revealed a complicated light. He said: “I never thought.....I was hopeless, so I took a disciple. I didn't want my heritage to end.....and now it actually saved me.”

“These are things a disciple should do.” Chu Mo said.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo, then he very seriously said: “Remember, you must never display this pill refinement ability before others! Not only can you refine medicine, but you know the poison in my body. You also know how to cure..... Do you know? This ability alone would make even the big shots in the Immortal World jealous! It would certainly bring you disaster once word got out!”

“Eh, I control this skill. Would they dare force me if they want my medicine?” Chu Mo wasn't convinced: “We will separate if worst comes to worst. They still wouldn't want me dead.”

“You understand shit!” The Demon Lord stared at Chu Mo: “There are almighty tricks that you can’t even imagine! Do you think you are unyielding? You aren’t afraid of torture? Do you think they will only beg you? Naive!”

The Demon Lord seriously looked at Chu Mo: “You should know, true cultivators don’t even need to torture you! One soul search technique.....and they will know everything! Master’s with a little bit of evil.....will make you into a thoughtless puppet. You won’t even have a soul at that point. Then will you separate ways?”

Chu Mo trembled: “That terrifying?”

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “There’s even more terrifying! You will slowly encounter them later. But you must learn how to protect yourself starting now! In a moment.....I will pass on several easy techniques onto you. At least change your identity the next time you use this ability to do anything.”

Chu Mo sat down and contemplated a moment. His face revealed a terrifying expression, and he mumbled: “You are right. There are countless ways to make a man surrender. I was too naive before. But some people in Yellow Flame City.....they ought to know I can refine medicine. Like Xia Jing, he already knows.”

The Demon Lord said to Chu Mo: “Don’t you still have a master?”

Chu Mo smacked his head and said: “I’m really stupid.....I forgot this opportunity.”

His master is the grand Demon Lord! Could he be afraid of others seeking trouble? He won't seek other's trouble.....that's good!

Chapter 84: Demon Lord's Past

After being told the sequence to take the three pills, the Demon Lord didn't have anything else to say. He merely profoundly looked at Chu Mo, turned, and left, returning to his specially prepared room.

The Demon Lord was eternally tranquil and undisturbed in Chu Mo's eyes, to the point of being somewhat cold.

But after the Demon Lord returned to his room, he looked at the three pills in his hand. The ice-cold face filled with feeling, to the point that.....his eyes became a little red.

The Demon Lord wasn't a master at medicine, but he could determine the good from the bad.

“These pills.....are actually perfectly flawless.....top grade!”

“The disciple I took in at a glance, he actually obtained such an incredible good fortune? And it is in the human world.....this is providence!”

“I never thought.....one day I would be saved by my own disciple!”

“Butterfly.....can you believe it? A little guy that never got the chance you call you master's wife.....he actually gave me such a large surprise!”

“My hated enemies.....you would never imagine, I’ve already been dead to your minds for several years.....one day, the man you’ve forgotten will strike his way back to you!”

“Butterfly.....wait for me!”

The corners of the Demon Lord’s eyes became moist. He sorted the pills in his hand, and he took the first one.

The pill entered his mouth, and the flavor was horrible, but it held a mysterious power. It passed through his throat and rushed into the [Dantian](#), then it immediately went to all his meridians.

[TL: A dantian is a point two inches below the navel where one’s Qi resides]

Soon after.....the pain hit.

A large inky green colored thing spread over the Demon Lord’s whole Dantian!

This thing.....is the main offender that nearly stole the Demon Lord’s life, the Seven Demon Poison!

The Seven Demon Poison attached to the Demon Lord’s Dantian, with basically no way to remove. It would slowly occupy his entire Dantian bit by bit.

The Demon Lord would become a cripple at that time.

This still isn't the end. It would continue eroding the Demon Lord's insides, none of his organs would escape. The Demon Lord would truly die when the Seven Demon Poison spread through his entire body!

How could the arrogant Demon Lord let himself become a cripple?

So he used the remaining strength in his Dantian at that time to pass everything down, transferring knowledge into Chu Mo's brain.

Then he calmly faced death.

He didn't wish to struggle on while at death's door, and he didn't want anyone.....seeing him weak!

Later on he changed because of a worry. That worry.....was Chu Mo.

The Demon Lord wanted to see his own disciple grow up, then depart at ease, so he took the Seven Revolution Immortal Pills.

Those top grade Immortal World pills still weren't enough to cure the Seven Demon Poison. They could only temporarily suppress the poison, and slow down the rate it spread.

The Seven Demon Poison would spread like mad after seven years. The Demon Lord would die in an instant!

But the Demon Lord never felt fear.

This arrogant man came to accept his fate. He could no longer save his life, and he could no longer get revenge. He faced death tremendously calm!

These seven years were to make sure Chu Mo was protected, to ensure he could truly mature!

Only he never thought, the joy this disciple gave him.....it is truly too large!

The Demon Lord inspected his Dantian. He could clearly see everything. The medicine that he took changed into a force, and it directly attacked at the Seven Demon Poison in the Dantian.

Like a fierce General on the battlefield!

Waiving his weapons, unstoppably killing the enemy!

Only.....this process was extremely painful!

The Demon lord felt like ten million needles were stabbing his Dantian. That sharp pain made him want to die. But he only

slightly wrinkled his brow, clenched his teeth, and didn't make a sound.

This pain wasn't for one moment, but rather like the tide, coming wave after wave, endlessly!

It was hard to endure in the end, even with the Demon Lord's temperament. He felt like his Dantian would explode, and all his meridians would completely rupture.

But the Demon Lord endured from the beginning to the end. He didn't let himself make a sound.

No one would hear even if he let out a painful scream, but but he still carries his pride!

As a master, can he be inferior to the disciple?

At last.....

The painful feeling reached the extreme. Everything merged to the Dantian.....the place attacked by the Seven Demon Poison.

Pu!

Pitch-black blood sprayed out of his mouth. The blood actually eroded out a small deep pit in the stone floor after hitting the ground!

Only this blood could kill a swarm of innate realm cultivators!

An abundant, mighty energy immediately erupted in the Demon Lord's body.

The Demon Lord's eyes revealed a smear of ecstasy, but soon after, the ecstasy turned to dismay. he started to madly suppress the energy.

He suddenly thought of something. If he doesn't suppress this energy from rising, then he won't have time to take the second pill. He would suddenly break through the innate realm, and he could no longer stay in this world.

The demon lord spent a lot of effort, but he finally suppressed the energy. He relaxed a breath, but his eyes filled with vitality, joy, and incredible intensity.

The Demon Lord inspected his Dantian. He discovered a large area was completely removed of Seven Demon Poison!

That place surged with an unimaginable divine power!

This.....is after the Demon Lord suppressed the energy with every last ounce of effort. Otherwise the energy would surge even stronger.

“Looks like.....I can’t take the second and third pill right now.....this child, ha.....!” The Demon Lord’s face couldn’t help but reveal a smile at last. His eyes even shook.

The Demon Lord believed in Chu Mo, just like Chu Mo believed in the Demon Lord. This confidence between a master and disciple, it doesn’t need any reason, and doesn’t doesn’t need any explanation.

“Millions of kilograms of low-level herbs, they actually have such power after being refined.....but, I’m afraid this skill is one of a kind!” The Demon Lord closed his eyes and mumbled: “The most powerful magic pill creator inside a medicine sect.....I’m afraid that not even he would have this skill!”

The Demon Lord stood up and freely moved around the room. Only a portion of the Seven Demon Poison was removed from his Dantian, but it still made him feel reborn!

“I only wished for a disciple to pass on my heritage. The heavens gave me an almighty surprise!” The Demon Lord’s pupils flickered brilliant rays of light: “One day this boy will step into the Immortal World.....what kind of storm will he stir?”

“I’m really looking forward to it!” The Demon Lord’s face revealed a smile.

Early the next morning, the Demon Lord threw Chu Mo into a fresh Yuan beast blood bath.

The Demon Lord's mood became unprecedentedly good when he saw Chu Mo grit his teeth in the cask. Not even the Demon Lord could remember the last time he felt this good.

“Master.....why are you called the Demon Lord? Normally.....evil people have this name.” The feeling was too painful. Chu Mo had no choice but to distract himself. The best way was to ask about his master's history.

Normally, the Demon Lord wouldn't talk when Chu Mo asked.

But last night's events made the Demon Lord's mood have an enormous change.

He looked at Chu Mo and said: “Evil people? That's exactly me!”

The Demon Lord softly sighed: “It's an old story.”

Chu Mo endured the spirit melting pain. He gritted his teeth and said with a twisted face: “I want to hear.”

“I was born into a small sect in the Immortal World. My parents were both disciples of the sect. That sect only had a thousand people all together, and it was without reputation in the Immortal World.” The Demon Lord sadly spoke, and his eyes filled with remembrance.

“The sect was small, but extremely united. Everyone got along harmoniously, and there was no internal fighting. My childhood

was very happy, but that didn't last long. When I was fifteen, I searched with a large group from my sect for a legendary abode that an immortal left behind. There were several other people searching for the legendary dwelling at that time, and several of them were disciples from large sects!

“There were a large amount of treasures in the legendary dwelling. All kinds of weapons, medicines, and Immortal Stones.....an astonishing quantity. Anyone would be envious when they saw. We didn't have the qualifications and ability to compete with the large sect disciples over those things. But the rare opportunity.....whoever attained these treasures would have a heavenly fate.”

The Demon Lord sighed and dully said: “In an inconspicuous corner, one of my sect brothers unknowingly activated a mechanism, entering into a mysterious space. Each one of us directly entered into that separated space.”

“That is where I obtained the precious treasure left behind by the former owner.....” The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “That is the Heaven's Will My Will that you cultivate!”

“Master's luck is truly good!” Chu Mo said.

“Good luck? Perhaps.....but, who can say what is fortune or misfortune?” The Demon Lord lightly sighed again: “We suddenly disappeared, and other people naturally saw. Those other people wanted to enter the place we entered, but there was no opportunity. But they didn't give up, and they guarded the entrance.”

“They wanted to rob you?” Chu Mo’s became enraged: “Truly evil!”

“Hah.....that isn’t evil.” The Demon Lord shook his head: “The evil part comes later. There were fifteen of us in our group. We each obtained an unimaginable fortune. Each of my brothers obtained various powerful immortal teachings. If we could bring them back to the sect, we could become one of the most powerful sects in the Immortal World.”

“What happened?” Chu Mo tensely looked at his master, because he could tell from his master’s expression, there is an outcome he didn’t wish to think of.

“The result, the fifteen of us were ambushed at the legendary abode entrance. Only I escaped.” The Demon Lord’s tone was very flat, but his facial expression started to become stiff.

“They.....all died?” Chu Mo felt his heart grow cold. He muttered: “Even if they rob.....do they have to go so far as murder?”

“Your thinking.....is too simple.” The Demon Lord coldly smiled: “If they don’t murder, could these heritages become exclusive secrets?”

Hiss!

Chu Mo couldn't help but suck in cool air. He mumbled: "Just because of that?"

"That reason is already enough." The Demon Lord said: "I luckily escaped their encirclement, but I was also seriously injured. A kind-hearted maiden rescued me, and she helped cure my wounds."

"That person.....is master's wife?" Chu Mo cautiously asked.

Chapter 85: Waiting For You To Stir The Storm

The Demon Lord hesitated a moment, then nodded: “Yes!”

“Master’s wife is certainly a good person!” Chu Mo said.

“She is the best woman in my eyes!” The Demon Lord softly said. The distinct cold pupils exposed a trace of warmth: “I took half a year to recover my injuries. I didn’t dare go immediately back to the sect after I recovered. I could only secretly ask for news about the sect. As a result.....I found out tremendously horrible news. My sect.....gone, my parents.....gone, all the elders that cared for me.....completely gone! The land I was born in became scorched earth.”

The Demon Lord grinded his teeth. That serene face began to show a ferociousness, and his forehead began to line with blue veins: “Word of the rare fortunes we found in the legendary abode eventually got out. Those people found my sect from the dead bodies of my brothers and masters. They grabbed up all the people in my sect, and they tortured them for my whereabouts. But the people in my sect didn’t even talk. Even if they knew where I was, how could they tell those people? In the end.....the whole sect, all one thousand people disappeared from the world. And their souls were all scattered! They don’t even have the chance to reincarnate.”

The Demon Lord’s tone of voice was still even, but for quite some time, his facial expression became incredibly mean and ferocious! The depths of his eyes overflowed with hatred and remorse!

“Wait wait.....” Chu Mo’s eyes grew large: “Master.....you’re saying those people killed everyone in the sect just to ask your whereabouts?”

“Yes!” The Demon Lord said: “They had thoroughly investigated the immortal abode, and they discovered the largest treasure.....was the one I took! The immortal teachings they stole from my brothers and masters were all extremely powerful. This incited their greed, and they still wanted to find the best one.”

“Heavens.....” Chu Mo exclaimed. He at last understood why master told him to keep his pill refinement ability secret.

“All of my friends and family died. If she didn’t block me at that time, I would have immediately charged them and fought to the death!” The Demon Lord dully said: “She said my current strength is too weak. To be discovered is a certain road to death! She made me concentrate fully on cultivating, revenge is a dish best served cold.....”

“She is right.” Chu Mo seriously said, thinking of his grudge with the Immortal Sky.

“I kept a low-profile and suffered for ten years. She came to check on me daily, and she also secretly gave me a large amount of resources. I could never have promoted so fast without her help.” The Demon Lord recalled every aspect of those years with Butterfly. That mean and ferocious face gained some peace: “I started my journey of vengeance when I gained enough strength. I

thought countless times about taking my revenge.....it must certainly be a fully delightful thing! In reality, the initial time period is exactly this way! Slicing the enemy gave me an intense pleasure!”

Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord, and he sighed inside. Chu Mo was afraid he would do the same if he were master. Not just anyone could let that kind of hatred go.

“But in the course of hatred, it is difficult to avoid something.....innocents died by my hands. Perhaps they weren’t that innocent, but that is not important, because they died by my hands in the end.” The Demon Lord sighed: “There were many powers that participated in destroying my sect.....large and small, at least a dozen or more! I fought against them one by one, killing as I went.....they understood the reason after not much time.”

The Demon Lord showed a mocking smile: “As a result, some people couldn’t handle the pressure. They revealed that I obtained the greatest treasure. They said my talent was because of the godly opportunity I obtained back then. One after another, all the righteous people came out and denounced me. Some said I was a monster, some said I was a demon, and some said I was the devil.”

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “Demon.....I admit! Since the time my sect was extinguished, I already became a demon! But monster and devil I don’t recognize. Since I am a demon, then I am the Demon Lord, the lord of the demons!”

“You are king of demons!” Chu Mo said, then his face showed a touch of irony: “They really wanted the Heaven’s Will My Will you

carried?”

The Demon Lord nodded: “Yes, what else could it be? Are they truly righteous? The pathetic justice in the eyes of those great men, it is simply a piece of shit. I still hadn’t finished killing all my enemies before countless righteous figures began pursuing me. A highly skilled poisoner was among that group. That is how I was afflicted by the Seven Demon Poison.”

This was the first time the Demon Lord completely recollected his past events. Each scene left a deep scar, and he personally opened it, a bloody mess. Chu Mo could completely feel his master’s pain.

“And.....master’s wife?” Chu Mo softly asked.

She went to the Pill Sect to seek medicine to cure my Seven Demon Poison, but the Pill Sect refused, because the ingredients to cure the Seven Demon Poison are extremely costly. Two of the ingredients required were incredibly rare. Not even the Pill Sect had many in stock. They naturally couldn’t exhaust their top grade medicines for an outsider like me.” The Demon Lord softly sighed.

“Since begging didn’t work, she thought to steal. She snuck into the medicine warehouse, and she stole a bottle of Seven Revolution Immortal pills. The people of the Pill Sect were naturally enraged. They started pursuing her. She sent the medicine to me, and said she found it. I had no idea at that time, because I was busy fleeing to the ends of the earth.”

“Her clan was a tremendous power in the Immortal World. The Pill Sect is mighty, and holds a super-status in the Immortal World, but they didn’t wish to openly confront her clan over a bottle of Seven Revolution Immortal pills. Because of this, the Pill Sect wasn’t threatening after finding her clan. They only asked for a statement, that’s it.

As a result, the cruel elders didn’t wish to owe the Pill Sect a favor because of her. They also didn’t wish the matter to implicate themselves. Without the slightest bit of family sentiment.....they beheaded her on the spot, destroyed her body.....only leaving behind a Yuan Spirit. They imprisoned her on the refining alter, suffering the spirit flame day and night.....claiming justice, righteousness, and altruism.

Not even the Pill Sect people could stand to watch. They said she acted for her husband. She is in the wrong, but her actions are understandable. They only wished compensation for the price of the ingredients. But the result.....couldn’t be changed!

Several people in her clan.....they are without human emotion! They all deserve death!”

The Demon Lord spoke to her, and he could speak no more. His voice became choked.

Chu Mo’s heart felt like someone was rigidly grabbing onto it, incomparably painful. He identified with master’s pain.

“I couldn’t believe my ears when I heard this news. I wanted to

rush to her clan, kill the people that harmed her, and rescue her. But my poison started to flare up at that time. My injuries were serious, and the people pursuing me.....grew more and more!”

The Demon Lord let out a long sigh: “So in the end.....I could only use a secret art, and flee from the Immortal World.....to the Spirit World. Those people still chased after me, and I killed them in the thousands. I almost burned out in the end, and went from the Spirit World down to here.....this time, no one dares chase.”

The Demon Lord showed an ice-cold mocking smile: “Because the human world is too incredibly suppressive towards a person’s realm. Those people don’t have the courage to continue chasing me. They believe I undoubtedly died! As far as my heritage.....they still salivate at the mouth for it, but they aren’t courageous enough to risk their lives.”

Chu Mo finally became aware of all the things that happened to his master. No wonder his master always has an extremely savage and ice-cold expression, but towards Chu Mo.....he is yet very good.

Because at the root, he is not an evil person!

The Demon lord was once a simple and kind person, but all of this.....was forced out!

Those people that drove the Demon lord to here, they are still in the Immortal World. They are high and mighty, exercising magical abilities, possessing power, status, and strength that ordinary

people couldn't imagine. They are still living the good life!

The Demon Lord killed countless people back then. This name is stained in blood!

He is an enormous devil in the eyes of those people!

But in Chu Mo's eyes, this person.....is simply his master, an old man with a complicated miserable past, and the person closest to him in this world!

Nothing more.

"Master, I will help you get revenge in the future!" Chu Mo seriously said.

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: "Good, I will wait for the day!"

Chu Mo was a little startled, because the Demon Lord ought to scold him, then tell Chu Mo to mind his own business.

"Very surprised? Chu Mo, perhaps you don't know your own potential. I was afraid you would be too arrogant, so I never praised you. But after spending such a long time with you, I now understand your nature. I can seriously tell you now. Not long after stepping into the Immortal World, you will become an influential figure!" The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: "Therefore, I will wait for you to stir up a storm in the Immortal

World! Because.....you are my disciple!”

Chu Mo became excited and said: “I will try my best to cultivate. I will make that day come sooner!”

The Demon Lord looked at Chu Mo: “But, I must remind you of one thing. The scriptures you study are the various immortal laws my brothers obtained. They are the scriptures I used to move unhindered through the Immortal World. Apart from some divided up secret portions, only you and I.....grasp the whole scripture!”

“Once you use those skills in the Immortal World.....then it is very likely people will figure out your status. So, remember master’s words: One day, you will go to the Immortal World. Either.....don’t use these scriptures, or.....you won’t remain alive!” The Demon Lord said.

“At that time, won’t you and I go together?” Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord and asked. He seemed to become aware of something.

The Demon Lord shook his head: “I took one of the pills you gave me. If I keep taking them, my energy can not longer be suppressed.....I won’t be able to stay here.”

Chu Mo suddenly realized: “I understand. Your power will recover too quickly after taking the medicine. So the day I collect the medicine for you, it is the day you will leave. Yes?”

The Demon Lord silently nodded.

Chu Mo said: “Don’t worry master. I don’t wish you to depart, but master’s wife is waiting! I will gather the medicine for you as quickly as possible! But you must promise me something. You must wait for me in the Immortal World! If one day I get to the Immortal World, and something unforeseen happens to master.....”

Chu Mo looked at the Demon Lord. He seriously said: “I will slaughter everyone in the Immortal World that was involved!”

The Demon Lord slightly shook. His eyes revealed a complicated light. He sighed after a long time: “Do not walk my old path!”

Chu Mo smiled big while soaking in the Yuan beast blood bath, not saying anything.

Because he already made a determination in his heart.

He will step into the Immortal World one day, and he will help master get revenge!

No one could change this.

Chapter 86: Trapped Carriage

Soon after, the Demon Lord requested a list of the top grade herbs to take on the go.

“Master.....you can find these herbs?”

“I don’t know, but I can’t let you keep searching alone. I will look out for them while hunting Yuan beasts.”

The Demon Lord left Chu Mo ten barrels of Yuan beast blood. It was enough for the next three months. Then the Demon Lord floated away.

Chu Mo stored the Yuan beast blood barrels in the jade space, then he started to prepare arrangements for the new year’s banquet. This includes clothing and other miscellaneous things that Chu Mo needed to do himself.

There was no other way. Apart from some old veteran wives that helped cook and clean, there wasn’t a single maid in the Fan household!

This was quite a marvel among the noble households of Da Xia.

The only two people that could be called master in the General’s household, they were the old man and Chu Mo. Chu Mo’s grandfather was often away from home, so Chu Mo learned to take care of himself as a boy. He has never thought of needing a

servant.

But now Chu Mo felt the household needed a few young maids.

“Looks like I need to find some maids when I have time.” Chu Mo mumbled, and he left the entrance, heading towards the Gluttonous Ogre.

There were still a few things he needed to communicate with Miao Yiniang before the year ended.

He didn't see Miao Yiniang when he arrived at the Gluttonous Ogre, but he first saw one-armed uncle.

“Young master, why have you come? I heard you've been staying at the Prince Mansion? Is everything okay?” The middle-aged man's face showed deep concern for Chu Mo.

“Of course there's no problem.” Chu Mo's smile made one-armed uncle be at ease: “How is that thing going?”

The one-armed middle-aged man said: “Right now there are already one hundred and fifty men! They are already in place. I personally tested them, everyone has kept their basic skills! They are all awesome. There should be more than five hundred that can join after the new year. These are all the former elites in the military, and there is nothing to worry about. They are all extremely loyal to the old General. But I haven't raised the old General's flag, I've been using the young master's name.”

“What did they say?” Chu Mo asked.

“It doesn’t need to be said. When young master does something, they will fully cooperate.” The one-armed man said.

“That’s good.” Chu Mo’s eyes showed excitement: “I might have to join the army after the new year!”

“Join the army? Good!” The one-armed man smiled: “The military is really good!”

Chu Mo could see a trace of admiration as well as loneliness in the eyes of uncle. This iron-like man obviously missed life in the military.

“One-armed uncle, don’t worry. Perhaps you will have a chance to return to the military!” Chu Mo comforted.

“Forget it. There is no meaning if I go back like this. But I am very motivated to help young master with this job!” The middle-aged man seriously looked at Chu Mo: “Thank you very much young master, for giving me this chance!”

Chu Mo smiled and waved his hand: “Please don’t ever speak like this uncle. You are my senior. You have watched me grow up.”

“Yes, grown up in a flash. You will soon start to accomplish

goals!” The one-armed middle-aged man said with a tinge of emotion.

Miao Yiniang walked in from outside at this time. She saw Chu Mo, and her eyes revealed joy: “How goes things at the Prince Mansion?”

Chu Mo nodded: “Halfway done, basically going smooth.”

“That’s good, I was somewhat worried.” Miao Yiniang said, then she made someone bring over several sets of clothes: “You are joining the new year’s banquet right? You don’t have a single servant girl in your household, and no one serves upon you. The new year’s banquet isn’t an ordinary event. You will be made a joke if you wear normal clothes.”

Chu Mo laughed: “I came to seek big sister’s help, but big sister is already considerate.”

Miao Yiniang smiled: “You ah.....wait a moment. Big sister will send several maids over. Your household really needs a few maids to help.”

“I don’t wish to be impolite.” Chu Mo smiled.

“Is it impolite to big sister?” Miao Yiniang looked at Chu Mo.

One-armed uncle sat there, suspiciously looking at the two. He knew young master was very familiar with Miao Yiniang, but he

never thought the two would be this close. Seeing young master doing well, he became very happy inside. The uncle said: “Right, the Yuan beast skin, meat, and bones won’t be auctioned all at once. The market will flood, and the price will be much lower. The auctioneers will make momentum on the first auction after the new year. Then they will sell the rest bit by bit. We can get the best price this way. What does young master think?”

“This way is the best of course. Anyway, don’t let them swindle us.” Chu Mo said.

They wouldn’t dare. They have the backing of a sect, but they still wish to do business in Yellow Flame City.” Miao Yiniang added from the side.

One-armed uncle nodded: “Right, they treat me like an ancestor. They don’t dare offend.”

Chu Mo talked with the other two for a moment. They discussed the problems related to organizing their power, and then Chu Mo departed.

The whole Fan household was decorated with lanterns and colored banners on the day of the new year. The atmosphere was extremely joyful.

Miao Yiniang sent over ten maids. They made the cold and empty household much more warm. These maids were all the daughters of kind people. They were hardworking, and they knew when to withdraw at a glance.

They all liked the Fan household right away. There weren't many strict rules, and they quickly fit in. They got along very well with the people in the household.

At evening, an extremely low-profile carriage stopped at the Fan household. There were no markings or indicators at all.

The people inside [carried a talisman](#) at the waist. The Fan household guards were startled. They immediately entered inside and reported.

[TL: Ancient officials used to hang a royal talisman from their waist. This would allow access to the palace or their place of work inside.]

“People from the palace?” Chu Mo was slightly startled. He immediately remembered what Xu Zhongliang told him. There will be an award ceremony before the new year's banquet!

“They must have come to take me.” Chu Mo changed into his formal attire for the evening. His whole manner appeared tall and straight.

Chu Mo left soon after. He saw the talisman, and he didn't ask anything. He immediately entered the carriage. The outside appearance was plain and low-key, but Chu Mo discovered the inside was amazing after entering.

There was a small tea table in the middle with fruits and pastries

arranged on top. The table was encircled by a soft couch. It was wide enough for a person to lay down without any problem. All of the ornamentation was extremely detailed inside.

The carriage traveled very smoothly. Chu Mo couldn't even feel a slight bump.

Chu Mo laid on the soft couch, and he slightly closed his eyes. He thought of meeting the emperor and the marshal at the awards ceremony, how he should speak and act. Chu Mo studied etiquette a long time ago as a child, but this was his first time meeting large figures like the emperor and the marshal.

“Probably about the same as grandfather Xu.....” Chu Mo thought.

Chu Mo seemed to feel the carriage turn at this time, and that turn.....felt like it wasn't towards the royal city!

The new year's feast is in the royal city banquet hall every year. That hall can accommodate over two thousand guests for dinner. It is the largest banquet hall in Yellow Flame City.

“Don't tell me it changed locations?” The carriage had no windows, so there was no way to see outside.

Chu mo wrinkled his brow, and he immediately thought of something. He used the jade to inspect the carriage driver.

“Yellow rank three, physique rank two, no sickness.” The jade gave a very simple list of information, but it made Chu Mo feel something was strange. Because not even the royal family would use a Yuan Closure warrior as a coachman!

“Big brother, what is your position in the palace?” Chu Mo thought, then asked from inside the carriage.

“Noble son Chu, I am merely a small guard in the palace.” The coachman answered with extreme respect from outside.

Chu Mo then asked: “Why have you come to pick me up? If I remember, normally I shouldn’t be treated this way.”

“Noble son Chu is too modest. You are representing your grandfather for the palace banquet. The old General is working hard on the front lines. The palace ought to send a carriage for you!” The coachman’s words became more and more respectful: “We all deeply respect the old General!”

Chu Mo made an ‘ah’ noise, not saying anything else, but he became extremely alert!

He originally believed the emperor sent this carriage for him. The award ceremony was small, but the emperor, Fang Mingtong, and Xu Zhongliang were personally presiding over it. The ceremony should be of the highest level. So, sending a carriage to pick him up is reasonable.

But Chu Mo just discovered.....a big problem!

First, nine times out of ten, the coachman wouldn't be a palace guard! And would a rank three Yuan Closure warrior be a mere ordinary guard? This is a problem in itself! Second, the coachman doesn't know he is attending a ceremony. This isn't strange, but he didn't say he came from the emperor, the Grand Secretary, or Marshal Fang.....this, is a problem.

Most importantly, the carriage was making several turns. Chu Mo already could come to a conclusion: This road does not lead to the royal palace!

Chu Mo didn't know another carriage arrived at the Fan household after he left, but it left empty.

“Noble son Chu, we might not make it in time. I must go a little faster, sit tight!” The coachman saw Chu Mo's silence, and he suddenly said from outside.

Chu Mo became intensely alert inside. He struck at the inside of the carriage without any hesitation!

Boom!

Bang!

An enormous sound!

The whole carriage violently shook.

Chu Mo didn't hold back in the slightest. With Chu Mo's dragon-like power, and his incredible martial skills, a house would break apart, let alone a small carriage.

But.....the inside of the carriage didn't show any serious damage. The decorative furs broke apart, revealing black painted stainless steel!

This horse-drawn carriage was actually forged from stainless steel!

Boom boom!

Chu Mo used his fists to hit two other places.

The two horses pulling the carriage couldn't endure the enormous energy. They neighed and collapsed to the ground. At the same time, the noise from the carriage spread to the surroundings, shocking the people on the street.

Chu Mo discovered the entire carriage was cast from one piece of stainless steel.....entirely seamless, like a steel cage!

Chapter 87: Hole On The Carriage (Part 1)

The coachman at the front jumped off the carriage when Chu Mo first punched, and he landed to the side.

He stared frightened, it seemed a dragon was locked in the carriage. He never thought Chu Mo would see through the trap so quickly.

What made him even more terrified is the power held in Chu Mo's explosive fist!

The carriage was quite sturdy. He already knew this was no ordinary steel forged carriage .

[Da Xia's ministry of works](#) requested a carriage from a sect's master smith. It was made of meteorite steel repeatedly smelted a hundred times!

To say it is a strong cage.....would not be enough!

Forget a Yuan closure cultivator with dragon-like power, a master cultivator that stepped into the bone refinement period, such as the iron bone or iron blood realm couldn't break through!

Only a golden stone cultivator of the sixth realm and above could break out. The coachman was merely a Yuan closure cultivator. He tested the carriage previously, but there was only one outcome when using his full strength: Broken bones and flesh!

And Chu Mo.....at most.....is merely a Yuan closure warrior. How could his fist.....have such power? It couldn't break through the trap, but this fist's power far exceeds cultivators at the same rank. This made the Yuan closure cultivator tremble in fear.

This man reached such a realm at the age of thirty. He could be considered a talent in Da Xia. But his face looked pale at this moment, at a complete loss.

Because the ambush.....is outside the city!

And it was a good ten miles away from here!

The experts outside the city could never know the carriage stopped halfway.

“What to do now?” The pale-faced Yuan closure cultivator watched the carriage quiet down. He was beyond anxious.

“Let me out!” Chu Mo's snarl came from inside.

This snarl made the Yuan closure warrior calm down a little. He thought: Still good.....this young guy is very terrifying, but he is still trapped inside!

‘I should seek help!’ The Yuan closure warrior thought to himself. Soon after, his face slowly became calm. He pulled out a

signal arrow, and he shot in the direction outside the city.

Whiz!

The signal arrow quickly flew high in the air, then it made an ear-piercing noise high up in the sky.

The street they were on was already very remote. It was a side-road that headed outside the city, but the streets had several people because of the new year. People scattered in all directions with scared expressions when the carriage toppled over.

‘I should wait here, otherwise there will surely be an uproar when people hear him shout!’ The Yuan closure cultivator thought to himself. His pupils flashed ice-cold. He looked at the surrounding people and coldly said: “The authorities are handling a case. Quickly get out of the way. Otherwise there will be no survivors!”

He raised up a fist and smashed it into the road.

Boom!

A pit immediately exploded open in the stone-paved road. The stone slabs broke apart spraying fragments everywhere.

The onlookers immediately screamed and ran in all directions, not daring to stay.

At this time, the sky was already beginning to darken. The remote road was now practically empty.

“Good.....there’s no commotion at last.” The Yuan closure cultivator let out a long sigh of relief.

“Really?” a voice sounded from behind him. The voice was extremely chilling and angry.

“Ah!” The Yuan closure warrior gave a fleeting scream. An ice-cold blade pressed against his throat: “You.....how did you come out? Not even an iron blood cultivator could escape.....you you you.....how did you get out?”

Because that chilling voice he heard, it was the same as the person trapped in the carriage , Chu Mo!

“Who sent you?” Chu Mo’s pupils burned with rage. He was thoroughly infuriated.

This person is carrying a genuine royal palace guard talisman, and he is driving an unbreakable carriagehe specially came to find Chu Mo. If someone were to say he lacked a large supporter, no one would believe them.

“Noble son Chu.....Chu.....young master Chu.....this is a misunderstanding!” The Yuan closure cultivator swallowed his spit. He was completely white, and his body trembled as he asked:

“Truly a misunderstanding.....this carriageis to protect your safety.....”

“I will ask one last time. Who sent you?” Chu Mo coldly asked, emphasizing each word.

“fro.....from inside the palace.....” the Yuan closure warrior could clearly feel the cold sharp blade against his neck. His heart suspended, and he gave a trembling reply: “You are truly misunderstanding!”

“You won’t say? Why leave you? Die!” Chu Mo skillfully used a little force. The dragon-like power could slice iron like mud. Murdering Heaven cut with extreme ease into the Yuan closure cultivators neck.

Brilliant red blood.....immediately flowed out!

“Ah.....don’t kill me.....don’t kill me!” The Yuan closure cultivator felt his neck painfully tingle. He was immediately scared out of his wits, and he said in a loud voice: “I’ll talk.....I’ll say everything, Zhao Yi sent me!”

Chu Mo’s hand slightly jerked. He snarled: “You still dare deceive me? I have no grievance with him. Why would he harm me?”

“It really is him. I’m merely following orders noble son Chu..... young master Chu.....he really sent me!” The Yuan closure warrior was almost scared insane, because he could feel the icy

blade sink deeper into his neck. He clearly knew as a Yuan closure warrior, if that blade moves a little more.....the largest artery in his neck.....will split right open! Not even God could save him at that time.

“You said Zhao Yi. The assistant minister Zhao Yi from the Ministry of Works?” Chu Mo asked in a severe tone.

“It’s him.....exactly him.....” The Yuan closure cultivator swore to the heavens.

“Ha ha, good, very good. Assistant minister Zhao Yi from the Ministry of Works.....” Chu Mo coldly laughed. Then he used unimaginable speed to strike with the blunt side of Murdering Heaven. He ruthlessly knocked the Yuan closure cultivator against the head, immediately sending him unconscious.

He lifted the person up, faced the Royal Palace, and sprinted off.

Two figures from outside the city rode like lightning through the night, appearing not long after Chu Mo left. They saw the carriage turned over on the small road, and were immediately startled.

The two men carefully approached the carriage, then wrinkled their brows. They stood there listening for a long time. They finally determined no one was inside.

One of the two men grabbed a side of the carriage and used some force.

Bang!

A loud bang sounded on the stone road. The carriage weighing thousands of kilograms placed upright. The two men couldn't help but suck in a cool breath.

The top-grade steel meteorite carriage actually had a square hole!

It was completely clean, just like a window!

But they both knew this carriageit doesn't have a window!

It was a hole that could easily fit a person.

The two looked at each other. The one with an unsightly expression said: "That little thing.....he must have a godly weapon!"

The other man said: "It must be a godly weapon! Otherwise.....there is no way he could break through!"

"Damn.....he let the little rabbit escape. How is the kid so cunning?" The first speaker was a man in his forties. His appearance was very ordinary. He was one that couldn't be picked out from a crowd, but he appeared gloomy and angry at this moment.

The other was also a middle-aged man. He was thin and short, and his eyes shot radiant light. He sneered: “I said kill him halfway along the road. You all didn’t agree. We had to take him outside the city! Now what?”

The ordinary looking man thought a moment, then he said: “This has nothing to do with us. Let’s go back and listen to orders. We won’t be able to kill him today. Did the idiot driver vanish?”

The short and thin man said: “Damn, I want to finish this, then go home and eat with the family!”

“Don’t complain, let’s go.” The two figures came and left quickly, disappearing into the night.

The only thing left behind was a broken carriage , lonely in the road.

Chapter 88: Entering The Royal City (Part Two)

The Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Fan is [a fourth grade official](#), making him entitled to join the new year's banquet. So Chu Mo took the knocked-out Yuan closure cultivator directly to the Royal Palace. He wanted to personally ask Zhao Fan, 'I have no grudge with you Zhao Fan. Why have you sent men to harm me?'

[TL: The Tang Dynasty used a grade system for officials. One was the highest level official, and nine was the lowest. There are also further separations within the grades which can bring the total up to thirty, but I don't think the author is going to get that detailed. The author is likely using a similar system]

The possibility that the carriage came from the Ministry of Works is very high!

Because apart from the emperor, only the Ministry of Works could have this kind of vehicle.

But Chu Mo was quite certain. This Zhao Fan.....he was most likely a scapegoat, and nothing more. The true schemer is certainly hiding in the shadows, appearing completely clean!

But Chu Mo didn't care. He already learned something on the grasslands. For the upper level people, evidence.....is sometimes need and sometimes not! There are only pros and cons in the eyes of the powerful, nothing else! Only look at the outcome. Who needs proof?

So he must first take care of this Zhao Fan no matter what. The person behind him, he will return and they will slowly fight.

Chu Mo quickly hauled the Yuan closure cultivator just outside of the royal city.

The activity in the royal city was extraordinary tonight. Practically all the nobles and officials in Yellow Flame City were gathered.

People with the qualifications to join the banquet would normally come. Extremely special situations were the only exception.

So there was already heavy traffic when Chu Mo arrived at the gate, and it was extremely lively.

Everyone was extremely polite and warm when they greeted, just like family.

The new year ah, it must have the new year atmosphere. No matter the conflicts or grudges, everyone has an unspoken agreement at this time. People will put on a fake smile and nod, even if there is deep hatred.

Chu Mo walked into this friendly atmosphere, steaming with murderous intent, holding a blade in his right hand, and carrying a grown man in the left, shocking everyone.

“This.....isn’t that General Fan Wudi’s grandson? What is going on?”

“What happened? Isn’t that noble son Chu Mo? I heard he recently had a disagreement with prince Xia Jing. Didn’t he smash the Prince Mansion? And now there’s another performance?”

“When did you get your information? The most recent news is prince Xia Jing treats noble son Chu Mo as a guest! I heard.....Chu Mo cured Xia Jing’s sickness!”

“That amazing? You’re not pulling my leg?”

“Why does Chu Mo look murderous? What happened?”

The crowd of people watched Chu Mo walk past, and they all started to comment.

The royal city guards immediately blocked the way upon seeing the situation: “Noble son Chu.....what are you trying to do?”

Chu Mo raised his head, then coldly stared at the royal city guard: “Filing a complaint!”

“Fi.....filing a complaint?” The royal city guards spoke in unison. Everyone foolishly stared at Chu Mo. This newly famous youngster in Yellow Flame City, they didn’t know what he was up to now.

The guard looked at the man Chu Mo was carrying, and his mouth twitched. He said: “Noble son Chu.....this, is this appropriate? Today.....this is the new year’s banquet. Isn’t this the wrong place to file a complaint?”

The royal city guards would normally not be so polite to Chu Mo, but Chu Mo had made a fierce name for himself recently. They all heard the rumors.

He even smashed the Prince Mansion like it was nothing. This was something completely unimaginable to them. He has unfortunately come here, so they were very polite to Chu Mo.

Chu Mo slightly smiled when he heard them. He pulled out an invitation letter from his robes, and he handed it to the guard: “I came to join the new year’s banquet!”

The guard was at a loss. He knew someone with Chu Mo’s status had the credentials to attend. But can he angrily carry someone into the party?

But the guard was immediately stunned when his vision fell on the invitation. He took invitation, opened it up, then seriously stared for a long time.

A person not far away coldly laughed in the crowd: “It shouldn’t be a fake invitation?”

“Ha ha, he would lose incredible face if it is fake!” Another

person said in the crowd.

“Ought not to be? It is normal for General Fan Wudi’s grandson to receive an invitation.”

“Look at the guard’s expression. There is obviously a problem with the invitation!”

The people started to chatter. A high ranking person saw the invitation at that time. He was completely shocked. He said: “It isn’t an invitation problem. The shocking thing is.....it has appeared in noble son Chu’s hand!”

“What did you say Song Daren?” Someone asked.

The person who spoke was a third grade official judging by his clothes. He is Da Xia’s director for the Ministry of Revenue. He looked over at Chu Mo, plainly saying: “That invitation is higher than the one in my hand.....a whole level above! Normally only a second grade official.....would have this invitation.”

Ah!

Everyone in the surrounding crowd couldn’t help gasp.

None of the people here today were of low status. Who would not understand the meaning? They all looked alarmed at Chu Mo.

This youth.....what qualifications does he have? He holds an invitation only given to second grade officials, and joins the new year's banquet?

The guard stared for a long time, but he couldn't find a trace of falseness. The invitation was real. That man.....he admitted there was no reason to hold Chu Mo.

But Chu Mo is hauling a person, and he wanted to file a complaint. He is clearly starting trouble.....if he lets Chu Mo go and something bad happens, the royal palace guard would obviously would take the blame.

Chu Mo looked at the guard: "Can I enter?"

"This.....noble son Chu, I'm not trying to cause you trouble..... just you.....are bringing a person.....this way isn't not proper!" The guard said in a low voice: "Could.....you save your trouble until after the event?"

Chu Mo looked at the guard: "I have a high level invitation. Forget bringing only one person, I could bring five without problems. Am I right?"

"Yes this is so.....but?" The guard embarrassingly looked at the unconscious man still being carried by Chu Mo.

Chu Mo looked at him: "This matter has nothing to do with you. Nothing will come down on your head!" Chu Mo circled around

the guard as he spoke, entering inside.

The guard still wanted to speak, but the companions at his side reminded: “This has nothing to do with you. Are you really that brain-dead?”

“But he.....” The guard really is a serious person. He felt that releasing Chu Mo wasn’t right.

The Director for the Ministry of Finance, Song Daren, smiled and walked over. The guard immediately gave respect. Song Daren smiled and said: “I will bear witness for you about these events. They have nothing to do with you. Noble son Chu holds a high rank invitation and brought a person inside.....it’s very normal.”

Several people couldn’t help but snicker to themselves: Normal my ass! Your ways are truly crooked Song Daren, but your words have rescued the guards.

Several people knew about Song Daren. He is the student of Grand Secretary Xu Zhongliang! Song Daren was also personally promoted by Xu Zhongliang to this current position.

Chu Mo had a very close relation with the Xu family’s tenth noble son. This was no secret in Yellow Flame City. This is likely the reason Song Daren helped out Chu Mo.

Song watched Chu Mo carry the full grown man like he was carrying a chicken. He thought as Chu Mo walked towards the

banquet hall: Teacher said this guy is not only excessively strong, but he is extremely intelligent. Then.....he should know what he's doing? I can vouch for him.

The royal palace banquet hall was already brightly lit. The place was a boiling cauldron of voices.

People of the same status and cliques grouped together. The young people were together. Some wives were also gathered in friendship. The whole banquet hall was extremely lively.

But the atmosphere was quickly broken.

Chu Mo walked inside with murderous intent, carrying a Yuan closure cultivator, immediately drawing countless attention.

Chapter 89: Unimaginable (Part 3)

Everyone foolishly stared at the youngster dressed in splendid attire. He stood in the entrance, covered in dirt, standing tall, straight, and handsome, yet his eyes held a clear icy look of rage.....his left arm carried a person, and the right still held a long shining blade.

“Ministry of Works Zhao Yi, come out!” Chu Mo’s roar echoed through the whole banquet hall.

A few people who weren’t paying attention, still happily talking. Chu Mo’s voice made them tremble, then slowly turn to the entrance.

Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi was sitting together with the three princes. He was also frightened by Chu Mo’s thunder-like voice. Looking towards the entrance, his whole body uncontrollably shook. He was first shocked after seeing Chu Mo, but then his expression largely changed after seeing the man Chu Mo carried.

Third prince Xia Hao’s brow wrinkled. He roared from a distance away: “What family’s little brat snuck in? So rude, this isn’t just any place!”

His voice was also like rolling thunder, exploding in the banquet hall, so piercing that many covered their ears.

“Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Fan! Come out!” Chu Mo paid

no attention to third prince Xia Hao, intimidatingly roaring again: “You dare play stupid? Come out!”

Chu Mo lifted the Yuan Closure warrior by the collar, raising his body high. Then he stuck Murdering Heaven into the ground. The blade pierced into the hard brick floor like it was tofu.

Smack!

Chu Mo slapped the person, waking him up. He didn't give the any time to react, icily asking: “Speak, who sent you to kill me?”

“Young master Chu.....young master Chu.....Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi sent me.....I don't know anything else!” The Yuan closure cultivator was abruptly woken up by Chu Mo. He didn't know where he was, and still believed himself in the small road, so he loudly shouted.

Buzz!

There were already over a thousand people assembled at the banquet hall.

The resounding words of the Yuan closure cultivator shocked everyone. They all slowly looked at Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi, still standing by the prince.

Zhao Yi was forty years old! He is often well dressed, personable, and very scholarly. His face deeply redden, and his forehead

quickly perspired. He snarled with a warped face: “Slander! This is simply slander!”

The Yuan closure warrior held by Chu Mo heard Zhao Yi’s voice. He shouted: “It’s him, noble son Chu.....this is Zhao Yi.....he sent me!”

“Bullshit!” Zhao Yi’s neck turned red. He felt everyone’s attention, and he started to feel faint. Could he possibly be prepared for this?

The third prince Xia Hao strode over to Chu Mo at this time. He icily shouted: “This is the royal new year’s banquet. Where did you spawn from? You dare make trouble here? Are the guards all dead? Why haven’t they grabbed him for me!”

Guards had heard the noise at the entrance and gathered over. They immediately surged with energy after hearing the third prince’s command. They faced Chu Mo and circled around him.

“Let’s see who dares!” Chu Mo shouted. He lifted up the invitation: “I carry an invitation. I have broken no rules! On what grounds can you grab me? Beat it!”

The guards saw Chu Mo’s invitation, and immediately hesitated.

The third prince Xia Hao yet quipped: “Teenager, you have come in carrying an invitation, but it is an invitation for a second grade official. Little animal, do you know what kind of place this is? Do

you believe everyone is as brainless as you? You carry a fake invitation.....and you dare grandly enter inside here?”

Xia Hao shouted to the group of guards: “Grab him!”

“Slow down.” A dull voice came from outside. A person strolled in soon after. He stood beside Chu Mo, looked around, and then landed sights on Xia Hao: “How do you know the invitation is fake third prince?”

“Xu.....Grand Secretary Xu?” Xia Hao’s mouth twitched. His eyes slightly squinted, showing dangerous rays of light.

The princes couldn’t enjoy the bustling scene at this time. Who could have thought? The Grand Secretary arrived right at the supposed finale. No only did he arrive at this moment, but he actually endorsed the teenager!

This is too strange!

A pensive look showed in the eyes of several people. Their gazes fell heavily upon Chu Mo.

Without the Grand Secretary, this whole thing was likely a farce. But Xu Zhongliang’s appearance made the crowd slightly shiver in fear. The Grand Secretary personally came and endorsed the teenager.....this is too mysterious!

Several people looked over at Ministry of Works assistant Zhao

Yi. They saw the assistant standing next to the prince turn extremely pale, his eyes full of fear.

Could it be? The person held by the teenager.....he really is related to Zhao Yi?

They also looked over at the grim-looking crown prince next to Zhao Yi. Several people trembled in fear.

This event.....is not normal!

“Great Grand Secretary.....you know this youth?” Xia Hao recovered at this moment. He faced Xu Zhongliang and saluted, then he somewhat vaguely said: “How do you know this invitation is real?”

“Because your daddy personally sent this invitation!” A completely angry voice came from outside. Soon after, a huge figure moved like a dragon and stepped like a tiger, finally stopping to stand beside Chu Mo: “Your royal highness third prince, do you still wish to ask something?”

[TL: He isn't talking about the prince's father, the emperor. He is talking about himself in the third person here. He uses the phrase '老子', which means father. In this context it means I'm the boss, or I'm the badass here, not you.]

The whole banquet hall silenced. You could hear a needle drop!

The people that dare call themselves daddy before the prince.....

apart from the emperor , there is only one in all of Da Xia.

Marshal Fang Mingtong!

Everyone in the royal banquet hall stared stupefied at the entrance. They almost all lost ability to think.

What is going on?

Besides the emperor , the two most powerful in Da Xia appeared at the same time, the scholar and the warrior.....both arriving two hours late for a fourteen-year-old youth!

No one would believe this was real if they hadn't seen with their own eyes.

To say the very least, third prince Xia Hao was petrified. His lips twitched, an unimaginable expression showed. He stared speechless at Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong.

He carries an extremely high status as a prince. It is incomparable! But not even the crowned prince would dare be reckless before these two, don't even mention the third prince!

The crowned prince also stared a long time. The middle-aged Xia Ying's brow slightly wrinkled. A complicated light flashed in his eyes. The second prince at his side, Xia Xiong, held a deep expression. His eyes twinkling with an incredible brilliance.

According to Xia Ying and Xia Xiong, Xu Zhongliang probably endorsed Chu Mo because their families are close. The Grand Secretary has a protective heart for Chu Mo. Great people can still be selfish.

So the third prince Xia Hao especially didn't care about Xu Zhongliang just now. He even made an obscure statement.

As a result, an even more terrifying figure emerged.....Da Xia's great military Marshal!

Fang Mingtong's appearance completely exceeded the predictions of the three princes.

They couldn't figure out a single reason. How is there a connection between Marshal Fang Mingtong and Chu Mo?

Is he giving old General Fan Wudi face? That's not possible! They believed the Fang Mingtong would give the Fan Wudi face, but would he do it for a small brat?

It could be said to a certain extent that the Marshal is more terrifying than Xu Zhongliang! Fang Mingtong not only has military power, but he is the loyal confidant of the emperor. The emperor greatly favored Fang Mingtong.

It is no joke to say this. Fang Mingtong's words can even sway the emperor!

Because this military Marshal grew up as best friends with the emperor!

Fang Mingtong served the emperor while he was a prince, racking up many achievements and merits.

In addition to this, Fang Mingtong is the military's great leader. He normally doesn't care about anything outside of the army.

What wind blows today?

Chapter 90: All Can Act (Part 4)

Don't mention the three princes, the entire banquet hall never thought this would happen.

These people were all in a state of disbelief, nothing more, but one person was terrified!

That is the Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi,

This elegant, refined, and scholarly middle-aged man turned completely pale when he saw the two big-shots stand beside Chu Mo.

When he heard those words of Fang Mingtong: 'Because your daddy personally sent this invitation', Zhao Yi could no longer support himself. His legs went soft, and he collapsed to the floor.

The crowned prince and the second prince were originally standing beside him, but they stealthily slipped several steps away to the side.

When Zhao Yi looked to the crowned prince for help, he only saw an incredibly icy glare!

The Ministry of Works assistant.....is no small official. He is the second in command for one of the six ministries. Zhao Yi had been government official for many years, and he immediately understood the crowned prince's expression.

After understanding, his spirit was completely crushed!

The third prince Xia Hao hollowly laughed at this time. He bowed to Fang Mingtong in respect: “Marshal.....I have no problems, my mistake!”

Then he turned to Chu Mo and smiled: “I am sorry noble son, I don’t know you, so I have temporarily wronged you. Please see forgiveness!” Xia Hao’s eyes still carried a trace of disdain, because it was very hard for others to see his eyes when looking at Chu Mo.

However, Chu Mo noticed.

He is provoking!

Chu Mo soared with anger on the inside. His heart broke out in fury.

Chu Mo is young, but he had joined the new year’s banquet three or four times. He didn’t speak often with the three princes, but they were definitely acquainted.

Xia Hao pretended not to know Chu Mo since the very beginning, even pretending all the way until now. He acted like this was the first meeting.

Chu Mo coldly laughed to himself: Who said the third prince is

only a warrior? He is a royal child.....this level of scheming, it is truly amazing.

Chu Mo really wanted to snarl at Xia Hao: “Scram!”

But Chu Mo knew, if he fought with Xia Hao right now, then.....the assassination attempt would likely go unsettled.

The topic would be shifted. Who would keep paying attention?

Because of this, Chu Mo faced Xia Hao and showed a shy smile: “Your highness, royal people often forget. We have actually met several times. No matter, third prince is so busy. It is not strange to forget a small child like myself. You have the right to question me. How could I blame the third prince?”

Chu Mo could feel Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong relax a breath.

These two big shots were worried about the same thing. They feared Chu Mo fighting with the three princes.

Like that, the justification.....would be lost!

They sent a carriage before, but it never received Chu Mo. They heard Chu Mo was already taken by a carriage from the palace, and the two already knew something happened.

Who knows better than them when a royal carriage is sent? They are the ones responsible for it!

Before they could even react, there was another set of news. Chu Mo was carrying a person, and he angrily stormed into the banquet hall. When the two first heard, they reasoned a big unforeseen event must have happened. They must protect Chu Mo from any accident at the moment. Otherwise the emperor would never forgive them.

Xia Hao was waiting for the youth to turn hostile. He didn't believe the youth could endure such clear provocation.

However, he actually gave the first blow!

Chu Mo's reply was laced in satire, yet actually unassailable!

Chu Mo's age became his best weapon!

Damn it! Xia Hao cursed to himself. He snorted, flicked a sleeve, and then walked to the crowned prince.

The Yuan Closure warrior that Chu Mo was holding, he finally realized the surroundings. He was completely petrified!

He stared dumbstruck at Zhao Yi sitting on the floor, then his body violently trembled. He is a Yuan Closure cultivator, not some ordinary hit-man. He suddenly had a clear understanding.

‘At this moment.....my death is the best outcome! At least my family would be safe!’

The Yuan Closure cultivator shouted: “Chu Mo.....you used devil magic to infect my mind, trying to frame the great Zhao Yi. Your plot won’t succeed! I will die.....to prove my innocence!”

He raised a fist, then struck at himself with the dragon-like Yuan Closure power.

With a fist that can cut a mountain into gravel, smashing a human skull couldn’t be easier.

The crowned prince’s eyes immediately shined!

The second and third prince’s eyes.....also lit up!

Of course, the brightest eyes belonged to the Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi!

“Want to die?” Fang Mingtong coldly sneered all of the sudden: “Are you trying to play around in front of me?”

Smack!

An extremely crisp noise.

No one could see Fang Mingtong move!

The suicidal Yuan Closure cultivator spun around ten times, then crashed to the ground.

The smack knocked him out. But on the man's face.....there wasn't even the slightest wound.

Chu Mo shook inside: This is the power of a man who can move unhindered through the world? It is too terrifying! His power control has reached an amazing degree of precision. Chu Mo could stop the man from killing himself, but he could never do it with such precise control.

Chu Mo also reacted extremely quick. He faced the sitting Zhao Yi and snarled: "Zhao Yi! Speak! Why do you want to harm me?"

Zhao Yi subconsciously looked at the crowned prince. As a result, the crowned prince didn't even look at him this time. Xia Hao stood beside the crowned prince. He had a gloomy expression. His pupils chilling.

Zhao Yi's heart sank. He knew there is no escape today.

If that Yuan closure cultivator successfully committed suicide, then.....there was a slight chance. Even before the Grand Secretary and military Marshal, no one could convict him. The dead cannot testify.

Some things don't need proof, but some others.....must have proof!

But the problem is that man didn't die.

'He isn't dead.....I naturally shall die!' Zhao Yi immediately thought to himself.

He struggled up from the floor, showing a self-depreciating smile: "I, Zhao Yi, bitterly studied for ten years. I set my heart on standing out among my peers. I wanted to bring honor to my family.....in the end, I entered the royal court. I received the emperor's kindness and had a meteoric career. I became a fourth grade official in the end, the Ministry of Works assistant."

At this time, no one noticed a group of people appear in the royal banquet hall entrance. They originally thought to enter, but they halted there.

Everyone's eyes were on Zhao Yi. No one noticed the scene at the entrance.

"I wanted to repay the emperor's kindness. I wanted to do good and real things for the common people. I'm afraid it wasn't enough, leaving behind a tarnished name, disgracing my ancestors."

Zhao Yi stood already stood up and started moving. His originally

pale face started to fill with color.

His vision swept across Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong, emotionally saying: “The Ministry of Works is a peaceful place. The people there are the best of Da Xia. I am very happy there. I found a direction in my life. I always worked hard.....just like my countless worthy predecessors, I wanted to leave a legacy!

Chapter 91: That Brilliant Radiance (Part Five)

Zhao Yi looked to Chu Mo after a long sigh: “But I unexpectedly took a wrong step in life, entering eternal damnation. Old General Fan Wudi privately sought me in the past. He wanted a special military weapon. He found me, and at that time.....I was temporarily possessed. I actually asked the old General for a bribe of twelve thousand pieces of silver.....”

Zhao Yi face appeared extremely ashamed. His eyes turned red, nearly shedding tears: “I was confused! The old General scolded me. He said I’m insane for wanting money! I didn’t even come to my senses, but rather I harbored hatred towards the old General! But I had no opportunity to hurt him, as a result.....I had a thought. I would attack the old General’s grandson. I don’t know what I was thinking. I.....I should die!”

Zhao Yi could no longer hold the tears inside. He managed to choke out some words: “The Ministry of Works master craftsman united with a sect’s master metalworker. They added meteor metal with top grade steel to create a carriage. It was originally meant to be a new year’s gift for his majesty. However, I was blinded by selfishness, and I wanted to capture noble son Chu.....The thousands of mistakes, they were all committed me alone! I don’t dare cause bloodshed before everyone on this blessed day. I request that the great Grand Secretary and Marshal Fang let me return home. Let me commit suicide!”

Tears streamed down Zhao Yi’s face as he spoke. He sounded completely authentic. Don’t mention other people, even Chu Mo

almost believed!

Watching Zhao Yi's incomparably sincere expression, Chu Mo recalled the interactions between grandfather and Zhao Yi. Was there really this kind of resentment?

But Chu Mo immediately came back to his senses. This was fundamentally impossible! His father is a General, but above the Generals.....there is only the Marshal! And there is also the Ministry of War Chief.

The old man had more than enough support and status as a General. He could go directly to the Ministry of Works and seek a weapon.

Seeking a weapon.....a special military weapon!

Chu Mo's heart became ice-cold when he heard of this, and even more angry!

This Zhao Yi is still deceiving on the edge of death!

If this story were true, then wouldn't his grandfather be scheming something? Otherwise.....why would a General privately seek a special weapon from the Ministry of Works? If he really wanted a special weapon, then why didn't he report to the higher authorities?

Chu Mo's pupils showed a cold light. Looking at Zhao Yi, he was

unbelievably furious inside: Son of a bitch.....his acting is too good! You should join the theater! You shouldn't be in the court!

Actually several people had the same opinion as Chu Mo.

Everyone here was in the upper circles of Da Xia. They often attended the theater, but after watching so many years, the best performer.....is actually this fourth grade official.

Life is called a play, this is truly so!

Xu Fufu was hiding in the corner. His mouth twitched, and he couldn't help but whisper: "Shameless!"

An innocent looking maiden was sitting close to Xu Fufu. She also gritted her teeth and mumbled: "Absolutely no sense of shame!"

Xu Fufu didn't look at the maiden, feeling strange. If the situation wasn't awkward right now, he would certainly strike up a conversation. However, his heart was filled with rage at this moment.

Some people were furious, and others were overjoyed.

The crowned prince Xia Ying, second prince Xia Xiong, and third prince Xia Hao all looked astonished at Zhao Yi. This was the first time seeing the Ministry of Works assistant's amazing ability!

Instantaneously improvising, and actually quite appealing!

As far as the truth.....is it that important? They all know this matter will ultimately be decided by the emperor.

This most important part is Zhao Yi's biting words at Fan Wudi!

It is simply profound!

He makes Fan Wudi appear selfless and upright, raining curses at the thought of a bribe. But the essence of this matter.....is actually that the old General 'privately' sought him, and asked for a special weapon!

This is the most important part!

Because it happened in private, there is no way to counter the claim. It is really like staining the seat of your pants with mud. It looks like feces, so it might as well be feces. Given that the emperor trusts Fan Wudi, he would still feel uncomfortable upon hearing these words.

"This is a talent!" Xia Xiong's eyes lit up as he watched Zhao Yi. Xia Xiong slightly wanted him to live! As a result, he looked over to Xia Hao.

The three brothers could practically read each other's minds

since childhood.

Because of this, the third prince Xia Hao stepped forward. He seriously spoke: “These matters.....I am responsible. I never thought Zhao Yi would blunder so greatly in a moment of weakness!”

Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong’s expressions didn’t change in the slightest. They maintained a tranquil expression since the beginning.

Xia Hao stood up at this moment. Fang Mingtong burst into laughter: “Do tell, speak speak.”

Fang Mingtong’s attitude made several people unable to hold back a smile. Everyone could see the Marshal didn’t believe this nonsense. He didn’t even take the words seriously!

Xu Zhongliang stood there with downcast eyes, like he changed into a statue. But who would dare look down upon this Grand Secretary. Everyone knew, once this man opened his mouth, this matter would be settled!

Xia Hao sighed with a look a guilt: “Zhao Yi told me about his story with the old General back then. Everyone knows the old General and I.....have a little disagreement. So the great Zhao wanted to ally with me, all to make things difficult with the old General. But I am a prince! At the same time, I am also a person of Da Xia. I have a disagreement with the old General, but how could I do such a thing? In the end, I strictly refused!”

Pffft.....

Chu Mo's was extremely angry, to the point of laughter. Standing there, his young and handsome face filled with ridicule.

Xia Hao seemed to not notice at all, saying: "I must speak a moment about mister Zhao, he considers state affairs of utmost importance! As a result, mister Zhao takes things too seriously. Zhao said he must display a show of strength to the old General! He was going to kidnap the General's grandson for several days, making him worry. It was entirely in spite!"

Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong were expressionless. Several people in the banquet hall were slightly moved.

The third prince is also extremely formidable!

With these words, he took the murder case of Zhao Yi wanting to assassinate Chu Mo, and changed it into Zhao Yi wanting to scare the old General. He also added testimony to the old General privately seeking Zhao Yi for a special weapon.

Now, Zhao Yi would at most only be imprisoned a few years. The situation is merely extortion and kidnapping, not murder.....and now it won't be easy for Fan Wudi to clean the dirty water.

Apart from extremely dense people, everyone present is extremely intelligent, including the women and teenagers.

Several people looked over at Xia Hao with terror in their eyes.

He is a prince that can fight and plot.....he's really too terrifying!

Xia Hao continued acting: "I scolded mister Zhao back then, but I.....am only a military General. Sometimes I can be a little headstrong, and I didn't tell my older brothers. I also didn't report it. I believed.....mister Zhao was only bullshitting. Who would have thought, he actually acted so foolishly. I am also to blame!"

The crowned prince Xia Ying finally stood up. He showed a grieved expression, looking at Xia Hao: "You fool! Is this some small thing? Why didn't you tell me? You've made me angry to death! Return, I will go report to father, and have you severely punished!"

Xia Hao lowered his head, completely ashamed: "I am guilty....."

Xia Ying looked over to Zhao Yi. He spoke with a regretful expression: "Mister Zhao, you are a fourth grade official of the court. How could you be so short-sighted? The old General certainly requested a special weapon for the country and people! The old General has been completely loyal, and upstanding his whole life. You actually tried to bribe him? Are your brains full of lard?"

Zhao Yi collapsed to his knees, bursting into tears: "I should die. I should die ten thousand times!"

“Today is a day of celebration. It is not the day to handle this matter. I think you should go home and await punishment! I will report this to the emperor after the new year. The emperor will decide your punishment!” Xia Ying shook his head and sighed.

“I am guilty.....I will obey.....” Zhao Yi cried even more intensely, as if he suffered a heavenly wrong. He choked back tears,

The hall was brightly illuminated.

A brilliant burst of light suddenly shined within!

This brilliant radiance eclipsed everything in the hall.

Chapter 92: Chopping Your Dog Head (Part 6)

This brilliant light appeared abruptly, yet was magnificent.

Everyone in the hall subconsciously stopped breathing!

It was an astonishing light.

Just like lightning striking in the dead of night!

Pah!

Zhao Yi knelt there, but his head soared!

Hot blood sprayed out his neck, like a blood colored fountain splashing high!

“Performing for half a day, wasting so much saliva, racking your brains to come up with shit nonsense! Dirtying the water, false tales, and shamelessly spreading lies.....take the blade! I’ll cut your dog head!” Chu Mo’s voice was ice cold, like a stone shattering a mirror.

Incredibly strong!

The banquet hall’s rapt-attention atmosphere completely broke

to pieces!

What performance, what rumors, what dirty waters, they all lost to this blade!

Xu Zhongliang was constantly standing beside Chu Mo. At this moment, his eyes opened large!

He is a civilian official. He really had no time to react.

Up until seeing Zhao Yi's head fly, seeing the cool and elegant blood splatter, his mind was still in a blank state.

But Fang Mingtong on the other hand, that is a little interesting!

He is a rank six cultivator that can move unhindered through the secular world!

A person in the sixth realm.....an almighty at the Golden Stone state!

Chu Mo's blade is fast, but if Marshal Fang wants to block, he could block anything.

But he didn't block.

Not only did he let Chu Mo strike, but when seeing Zhao Yi's

head soar, the corners of his mouth spread wide, revealing an incredibly overjoyed smile!

“Way to cut that dog’s head!” Fang Mingtong spit out these words, then he took a deep breath: “I was just about to chop his dog dead myself! My status is too high, I would lose face cutting the head off that dog.”

He turned to Chu Mo and laughed: “Little guy.....I like you more and more. You’re indeed capable.....he he. Ha ha ha ha! What a good cut! Cut off his head in one slash! So happy! So Happy! I’m getting drunk tonight!”

Xu Zhongliang held his forehead, while standing from the side. He didn’t know what on earth was going on. The corners of his mouth twitched, so angry he didn’t know what to say.

He thought to himself: Fang Mingtong, you bastard. Why didn’t you stop him? How could you not know Chu Mo was attacking? This is fun and all, but now what? Do we execute without trial? Are we lawless?

Several women in the hall shrieked at this time. They were terrified.

Don’t mention the women, how many men had witnessed such a bloody scene before?

Several people were pale. They all stared at the youth, eyes filled

with terror.

He dares lift the blade and kill a man, right in the presence of the princes, all while standing next to the Marshal and the Grand Secretary.

This kind of courage and resolution is truly too intense!

Even if the emperor were standing there, this youth.....he would probably act the same!

Xu Fufu looked excited from the corner: “Ha ha ha. Little black Chu, such courage, well done! He’s direct! This type of dog official should have his dog head cut off!”

The young group sitting with Xu Fufu were all gasping for cool air. These young nobles could be overbearing tyrants, they could tell someone to kill, but few have the courage to personally kill someone.

The thing that made Xu Fufu feel strange is the innocent looking girl. Her eyes appeared disturbed, but the corners of her mouth curved up, all while softly looking at Chu Mo.

“Can’t be?” Xu Fufu was completely dumbstruck. He suspiciously looked at the girl, then looked at Chu Mo. He thought: ‘Is this right? Shouldn’t she be scared by this scene as a girl? It seems..... she’s also taken a fancy to my brother? The heaven’s have no logic!’

The crowned prince's face was pale. His two hands slightly trembled beneath their sleeves. His expression towards Chu Mo was both shocked and angry.

The second prince Xia Xiong's face sank. He looked at Chu Mo, secretly harboring murderous intent.

The third prince Xia Hao's face was unsightly. His eyes were full of disbelief. He angrily glared at Chu Mo while walking over towards him: "You.....how dare you?"

"Pah!" Chu Mo spat at Xia Hao's face.

The peak rank three cultivator, spitting at a rank four cultivator.....whether intentional or not, Xia Hao couldn't dodge!

Spit hit his face!

"Little animal! You're seeking death!" Xia Hao roared. His Iron Bone aura suddenly broke out. He pulled out the double edged sword at his waist, advanced at Chu Mo, and immediately slashed.

Fang Mingtong slightly squinted. He was just about to act, but he saw the look in Chu Mo's eyes.

It was a brave invincible confidence!

Fang Mingtong suddenly understood the youth in that moment, so he peacefully stood to the side, and didn't act.

Xu Zhongliang was yet worried: "Fang Mingtong!"

"Let them fight!" A low awe-inspiring voice sounded from behind the two.

Xu Zhongliang started to shiver. In this world, there is only one who can scare the Grand Secretary!

"Don't turn around, I want to watch! Heh, what a splendid drama. You two just sit and wait for me. Turn around and there will be problems!" The deep awe-inspiring voice continued talking.

Xu Zhongliang didn't dare turn around. Fang Mingtong also didn't dare. Their mouths twitched, and they gave each other a slanted glance, both were holding rather excited expressions.

Everyone in the banquet hall had eyes on third prince Xia Hao and young Chu Mo. No one paid attention to who was behind Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang. The person wearing a yellow robe could have come at any time.

[Qiang!](#)

[TL: Sound of weapons striking]

There was an enormous sound.

It was the sound of Xia Hao's sword breaking, then, an incredibly sharp blade rested on the prince's neck.

"You should also die!" Until the point when Chu Mo's icy voice sounded, everyone seemed to be in a dream. The entire hall was scared silent!

"Speak, why should he die?" A dull voice made the whole hall violently shiver.

Then.....the first reaction of these people was a plopping noise, like a frog jumping in a pond, the sound of falling to one's knees.

Then several people followed after.

"Long live the emperor!"

Crowned prince Xia Ying and second prince Xia Xiong both kneeled to the ground with pale complexions. Their heads lowered, yet everyone could see their expressions.

Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang helplessly looked at each other. They turned around, faced the yellow-robed man, and kneeled: "Your majesty!"

Only three people were left standing in the entire hall.

One was the yellow robed man, Da Xia's emperor!

And the other two, one was Chu Mo, and the other.....has an incredibly sharp blade on his neck.....third prince Xia Hao.

Chu Mo blinked a few times. He looked at the emperor and said: "Your majesty, you really want me to speak?"

"Little bastard, you still aren't kneeling for the emperor!" Xu Zhongliang stared daggers at Chu Mo, and spoke in a low voice.

However, a big smile grew on Fang Mingtong's face. He stuck a look at Chu Mo, and his eyes were full of praise. He thought: 'Atta boy! No matter what, I want you in the military. If you don't become a ferocious ever-victorious General, then never speak my name again!'

The emperor waved his hand: "No need to kneel, speak!"

Chapter 93: Too Splendid (Part 7)

Xia Hao understood his father too well. His two legs went soft after hearing these words, and he directly kneeled down.

Chu Mo's Murdering Heaven yet didn't leave the prince's neck.

The only two left standing in the banquet hall were Chu Mo and the emperor.

The emperor slightly wrinkled his brow: "Why all the kneeling? This is the new year's banquet. Since when are we so formal? Get up get up, everyone rise!"

Everyone started to rustle up. Everyone was standing in the banquet hall. There was only one person left kneeling.....the third prince Xia Hao!

Xia Hao lost all the color in his face at this moment. The depths of his pupils filled with dread.

Chu Mo looked to the emperor and slowly said: "Brilliant master emperor, forgive my rudeness....."

The emperor smiled, then shook his head: "I still haven't forgiven you."

Chu Mo slightly smiled: "Xia Hao, is a prince of Da Xia. He should

be an example for the government officials and the people! He should be honest, just, generous, and good hearted! But he is amoral, a liar, petty, and deceitful to the sovereign.....so to say he should die, it is no exaggeration!”

“Eh?” The emperor looked at Chu Mo with interest: “How is he amoral, a liar, petty, and deceitful to the sovereign?”

“Zhao Yi is a dog official! He was accused and trapped by me after I exposed his plot. He was afraid for his family, so he decided to lie through his teeth, concocting lies out of thin air. And he slandered one of our country’s greatest Generals. A dog official like him should have his head cut off a hundred times!” Chu Mo coldly said: “And what did the third prince do? He helped slander an upright loyal Da Xia General, and helped conceal the shameless rumor. The prince once tried to recruit my grandfather, and was scolded as a result. He hates my grandfather to the core because of this, and has been waiting for revenge. That event is irrefutable. I believe your majesty must already be aware!”

The emperor’s expression didn’t change. He looked at Chu MO and said: “Continue speaking.”

Chu Mo icily spoke: “What else is there to say? The facts are displayed! Xia Hao and Zhao Yi are colluding! They are birds of a feather! He is shameless. Don’t tell me he isn’t an amoral, petty, lying thing? Don’t tell me he doesn’t deserve death? Just because he wears the glittering gold garments of a prince, he can act outside the law as he pleases? Don’t tell me he can casually frame someone? Don’t tell me he can dirty innocent people?”

Chu Mo looked over at the expressionless face of the emperor: “If this is Da Xia, then I am not a person of Da Xia!”

The remarks put the whole banquet hall in silence. Everyone gaped at the young man.

“Finished.....”

Xu Zhongliang sighed to himself. He thought: ‘You little thing, fancy that I praised your commanding presence. Now you actually dare say these words in front of the emperor.’

‘Even if everything you said is right and backed by facts, but what about the emperor’s face? The third prince should die?.....he is a prince! He is the emperor’s flesh and blood!’

‘Forget about the Hero Medal, you might not make it out of the Royal Palace in one piece.’

‘But even if you throw caution to the wind today, you must protect your safety. As for later on.....it cannot be changed!’

Chu Mo severely berated Xia Hao, like having dogs blood poured on. Xia Hao knelt there, scolded stupid. His face turned green to white, white to red, red to purple, and purple to black.....this is the first time since birth that the supremely high status prince suffered such a serious attack.

The emperor was also somewhat stunned by Chu Mo’s

beratement. That solemn face slightly twitched. He seriously looked at Chu Mo, and Chu Mo returned the look without any hesitation.

In all of Da Xia, there is no one that dares look at him like this.

This made the emperor feel extremely fresh. He looked at Chu Mo with a playful smile: “Little guy. The one you curse.....is yet my son. The dog head official you just killed was personally appointed by myself. Heh, he is a dog official, so what does that make me? A dog emperor?”

The thousand plus people in the hall turned deathly pale. They subconsciously wanted to kneel.

The emperor waved his hand: “Is it your business? Seriously watch!”

Xu Zhongliang stared at Chu Mo with every bit of intention he could muster. He believed Chu Mo would certainly understand the meaning. He should hurriedly kneel to the ground and beg forgiveness as a child.....that is the best thing he should do!

Chu Mo only laughed: “It depends, how will your majesty handle today’s affair! What does the dog official Zhao Yi have to do with your majesty? Even the Royal Palace will have a few cockroaches and rats inside. If everything could be blamed on your majesty, then being an emperor would be too tiring.”

The emperor couldn't help but laugh: "Ha ha ha ha, stinky child. Your words.....have made me happy! It is simply too logical! Should all the feces be placed on my head?"

Chu Mo said to the emperor in a whisper: "A few dog official's aren't your majesty's fault, but your son's lack of discipline..... that is your majesty's fault."

The emperor dully looked at the kneeling Xia Hao: "Do you hear? This guy says your father is to blame for your mistakes."

Xia Hao foolishly knelt there, his face green, red, and purple, then suddenly.....he cried like a little baby.

"Father, your son should die.....son should die.....your son has made father lose face, please punish me father!"

"You should be punished, set off and journey through the night. Go to the northern border. Don't come back to Yellow Flame City for another ten years!"

These words were like thunder from a clear sky!

They made everyone in the banquet hall tremble!

The emperor.....is actually sending away the third prince!

Not a single question, not a single word between the two, just like

that.....he is sent away?

And this is new year's night, he won't spend another one in Yellow Flame City for many years. He is directly driven off!

What exactly is going on? What is the emperor favoring Chu Mo for?

And this favor isn't the size of a mountain.....but bigger than the sky!

Would the favoritism from the emperor actually be at this level?

Several people had only one question: 'Chu Mo's actions are just short of disgraceful, why hasn't he been given a word of blame?'

And at this time, the criticism came.

The emperor dully looked at the foolishly kneeling third prince Xia Hao, then swept his gaze over to the kneeling crowned prince Xia Ying and second prince Xia Xiong. Those two princes didn't dare make a sound. The emperor said to them: "What are you two kneeling for? Why haven't you left?"

He then ruthlessly looked at Chu Mo: "Your rotten weapon is still at my son's neck? Don't tell me you wish to cut his dog head?"

Chu Mo's mouth twitched. He put Murdering Heaven away and

muttered: “I wouldn’t dare.....”

“Looks like you would even dare attack me! Do you dare? Get the fuck out of here and follow me! I have some things to ask you!” The emperor ruthlessly stared at Chu Mo, then he looked over to Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong: “You two also get the hell out and follow!”

The emperor put both his hands behind his back and walked out as he spoke.

He left countless people scared out of their minds in the banquet hall.

Several people were scared stiff. They thought this was the most amazing and terrifying day in their lives.

The first and second grade officials that had been in the court for twenty years, they have never seen the emperor favor a person like this.

If they didn’t look so much different, they would suspect orphan Chu Mo was the emperor’s secret son!

At this time, the people with this thought numbered more than one or two!

Chapter 94: No Childish Game (Part 8)

The emperor led Chu Mo, Xu Zhongliang, and Fang Mingtong to a secluded place in the palace. As soon as they entered, he looked at Chu Mo and plainly asked: “Speak, what happened?”

Chu Mo said: “At evening, a royal guard wearing a talisman at the waist came to pick me up in a carriage. I believed your majesty, Marshal Fang, or Grand Secretary Xu sent him to pick me up, because of this, I entered without any hesitation.”

“We indeed sent a carriage to pick you up.” The emperor raised his brows while looking at Chu Mo: “But it must have arrived late.”

“The carriage didn’t have any windows. I wasn’t suspicious because the majority of royal carriages don’t have windows!” Chu Mo said.

Fang Mingtong said from the side: “It prevents hidden attacks.”

Chu Mo nodded: “In the end, I didn’t travel far before feeling something was wrong. The corner we turned was clearly away from the Royal Palace!”

“You could determine this?” Xu Zhongliang looked shocked.

The emperor also appeared extremely shocked.

Only Fang Mingtong, he said from the side: “What’s the big deal? If a soldier doesn’t have this ability, then that is completely unacceptable!”

“He is only a child.” Xu Zhongliang softly sighed.

“He will soon be a soldier.” Fang Mingtong said.

“You two.....don’t interrupt!” The emperor was a little mad.

Chu Mo continued speaking: “I started to suspect, and I asked the driver several questions. In the end, his answers were like a donkey’s lips on a horse’s mouth. I immediately felt something wrong. As a result, I smashed a fist into the carriage, thinking to break out.”

“Dragon-like power is extremely powerful, don’t mention a measly carriage, not even the Prince Mansion gate could withstand your kick.” Fang Mingtong chuckled to the side.

The emperor gave a quick glance to Fang Mingtong, then said: “And after?”

“My fist couldn’t break through the carriage.” Chu Mo plainly said.

“How could that be?” Xu Zhongliang completely didn’t believe. He is a government official, but he is still knowledgeable about the martial realms.

Fang Mingtong immediately said: “Don’t tell me that carriage..... was actually sturdier than the Prince Mansion gate?”

The emperor angrily said: “Can you stop mentioning the Prince Mansion affair?”

Fang Mingtong chuckled a moment, then he shut his mouth. He really wanted to give the emperor another jab. Because he always treats the emperor as a younger brother, the emperor is always in a bad mood.

Chu Mo said: “The carriage was entirely forged from top grade steel with added meteorites. The Ministry of Works and a master sect forger worked together! If this wasn’t used to grab me, I bet this would have been a new year’s gift for your majesty.”

The original facts were like this. An incredibly sturdy carriage for the emperor is no strange thing.

But the problem is, this carriage just captured Chu Mo, and he almost didn’t escape. Then Chu Mo says these words to the emperor. If the inside of the emperor’s heart was in a good place, then he would feel blamed, how could he take this news as a good thing?

Because of this, the emperor’s face darkened as soon as Chu Mo spoke these words.

Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang stealthily glanced at each other. They both secretly thought: ‘This little bastard.....he doesn’t fool around! Truly ruthless enough!’

“Then how did you get out?” The emperor asked.

Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang were both extremely interested in this question.

Chu Mo somewhat shyly smiled: “My master.....gave me a magic weapon! I used it to cut open the carriage, then I escaped.”

“Master.....magic weapon!” The emperor’s pupils, at last they focused with a serious color.

Yes, this youth was chased out of Yellow Flame City by the emperor’s younger brother only half a year ago. He had such an unbelievably magnificent change in a mere half year. If someone said there wasn’t a terrifying figure in the background, then the emperor wouldn’t believe.

“Then I questioned the driver using torture, seeking who sent him.” Chu Mo’s face exposed a trace of anger: “As a result, he coughed up the Ministry of Works assistant Zhao Yi. I still didn’t believe at that time. I don’t have any grievances with Zhao Yi. Zhao Yi is a Ministry of Works assistant, why would he seek me trouble?

The emperor jumped in with a question: “Didn’t Zhao Yi say,

there is a grudge with your grandfather?”

Chu Mo suddenly raised his head. Those distinct black and white eyes seriously looked at the emperor.

The regal emperor of Da Xia was suddenly hit by Chu Mo's vision, making him have a guilty conscious. He couldn't help but want to avoid Chu Mo's gaze.

“Emperor.....do you also believe Zhao Yi's words?” Chu Mo's voice was somewhat icy, like a gust of wind in winter.

The emperor was slightly startled, and he squinted at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo continued speaking: “The emperor believes an old General who has been ever loyal to Da Xia, and has fought his entire life for the emperor.....is someone who would do something like that?”

Xu Zhongliang looked bad from the side. He complained to himself that the emperor shouldn't have spoke those words, but he said: “Chu Mo, the emperor didn't have that meaning!”

Fang Mingtong also said: “The emperor only unintentionally spoke, just a casual remark, that's it.”

The emperor finally reacted at this time. The person the emperor is facing, he is definitely not the ordinary General grandson from half a year ago. Furthermore, there is a terrifyingly powerful

person behind the scenes, setting off an overwhelmingly unrestrained young hero!

The words the emperor just spoke, if he said them half a year ago, they wouldn't be the least bit serious. Chu Mo is just a child that's it. When the emperor speaks with him, it is a form of flattery upon him. And Chu Mo dares nitpick?

But the emperor saying these words to the current Chu Mo, it seems to be somewhat frivolous!

The dignified king of a country, to make him bow his head in mistake is highly unlikely. So the emperor somewhat awkwardly smiled, and said: "Continue speaking."

Chu Mo slightly squinted. He could feel the thoughts of Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang at this time. They must certainly be very nervous. They were both afraid Chu Mo would make a universally shocking action.

Chu Mo wasn't so foolish, but on the inside.....he was truly a little disappointed in the emperor.

Perhaps the emperor's words were careless, but careless words are precisely the most frightful!

Because careless words often signify.....what the heart is feeling!

Chu Mo suddenly smiled and slightly shook his head. He said:

“Emperor, I don’t know why Zhao Yi seeks trouble for me. You need to ask your eldest son the reason.....his royal highness the crowned prince! As far as the origin, I don’t wish to interpret. I believe you just saw everything.”

“Chu Mo you.....” Xu Zhongliang could feel the scene before him darkening. His greatest fear has finally come. This rebellious teenager has finally revealed his most bloody side, and he dares become directly hostile with the emperor.

Chu Mo waved his hand, softly saying: “I’m only a child. I cannot grasp the many big matters of the nation. Even more so, I cannot grasp the grudges in the royal court. Zhao Yi slandered my grandfather and wanted to harm me. He is a dog. That rank three Yuan Closure driver, your majesty can decide to kill, detain, question, or release him. As for my achievements on the grasslands, if you wish to award me a Hero Medal, then I am very thankful for your recognition. However, I executed a fourth grade official without instruction, which was wrong. The two cancel each other out. If there isn’t anything else, I wish to return home.”

“Just the dog official Zhao Yi? One thousand of him aren’t worth a Hero Medal!” Fang Mingtong somewhat angrily looked at Chu Mo: “Do you take the Hero Medal as childish game?”

The emperor’s facial expression also become a little unsightly. He never thought, his casual words, they unexpectedly had such a huge response from the teenager.

Chu Mo raised his head, looked at Fang Mingtong, and then looked at the emperor: “Of course the Hero Medal is no child’s toy.

It carried a heavy history for Da Xia, a medal for the countless heroes stained in blood!”

“You know and you still.....”

Chu Mo seriously spoke: “But my grandfather’s reputation, it is no childish game!”

Chapter 95: Apology (Part 9)

“He isn’t one of those who became a General right upon entering the military.” Chu Mo spoke with a gentle voice: “My Grandfather never started a family. From a small soldier, step by step, he accumulated achievements to become a General. He has given his entire life to this country. His military service is outstanding he he. He has almost never lost a battle! The Fan household had no persons of note before my grandfather. There were no government officials in the family, so my grandfather had no background. My grandfather doesn’t have a prestigious reputation among the people because few know of him.”

The emperor was silent.

Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang were also both silent, only their eyes flashed with a trace of feeling.

Especially Fang Mingtong, when this grand military Marshal joined the service, he served under Fan Wudi for a short period.

However, the Fang family is Da Xia’s heroic house. Fang Mingtong cultivated in a sect since he was a child. His tyrannical power, outstanding ability, and his family support got him promoted very fast.

It could be said, Fang Mingtong really has the ability and qualifications to be Da Xia’s military Marshal. No one would call this into question. But the problem is, if Fan Wudi had the same family history, today that tough old man would be no mere

General!

“I once asked grandfather, ‘Why don’t you pay attention to your reputation?’ Grandfather said to me, ‘What is a reputation? They are like clouds in the heaven, all just floating. They are blown away with a gust of wind.’ I asked grandfather, ‘Then what are you?’ He told me, ‘I wish to be a mountain! A mountain along the border.....one our enemies cannot cross!’”

Chu Mo’s eyes became slightly red. He continued saying: “If it wasn’t on account of me, Yellow Flame City might not even have a Fan household. But because I’m here, Yellow Flame City has another General’s household. A shabby.....General’s household! But even so, he cares about me his grandson. Do you all know? Up until yesterday, ever since my grandfather brought me back ten years ago, the Fan household hasn’t had a single maid! Yesterday I took in several maids, because I feel there are some things I cannot do as one single person. Even though it is like this, I am still worried. I wonder if my grandfather will scold me when he returns.”

Chu Mo slightly raised his head, sucked in a deep breath, and said: “The Fan household is quite rundown. There is one building inside, without many rooms. I brought back some Yuan beast materials when I came back from the grasslands. I exchanged them for money so one-armed uncle could repair the broken buildings. I gave the leftover money to the widows of veterans that gave their life in battle, who have no one else to look after them. Because over the years.....this is what my grandfather has always done! But does he have a reputation for this? No!”

Chu Mo's voice wasn't loud. It also wasn't intense. However, the three men present, they all had a feeling of great understanding.

Even the uninhibited and bold Marshal Fang Mingtong couldn't help but remain silent.

Chu Mo added: "Do you know why my grandfather does so many good things, yet he is still unknown?"

The emperor was silent, not uttering a word.

"Because, he never used his own name to do these things!" Chu Mo earnestly added: "The name grandfather uses, is Da Xia! Grandfather makes people tell the widows he aids, 'It is the country that assists you! The nation has not discarded you! The emperor hasn't discarded you!' Your majesty, if you feel my grandfather lacks the qualifications to act this way, then please personally tell him. Tell him he is wrong!"

"He.....isn't wrong!" The emperor was silent a moment. He then spoke: "He does good."

"Then, this old man that has gone through the battlefield, a soldier like him who has given his whole life to the nation, would he do the things dog official Zhao Yi slandered?" Chu Mo slowly asked.

"He couldn't." The emperor sucked in a deep breath, then softly spoke: "I.....am wrong! I give you an apology!"

“Your majesty!” Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong both had a chilling feeling, both horrified.

The nation’s ruler personally gave someone an apology. What does that mean? Regardless of what it means, in short.....nine times out of nine it is a bad thing!

The emperor yet waves his hand: “You two don’t worry about anything. Right is right, wrong is wrong. The words I spoke were wrong. Although, I originally wanted to test the temper of this little guy, but I was a little too frivolous. I have carelessly harmed old General Fan who is worthy of respect.”

Chu Mo was a little stupefied at this moment. He wondered what is going on? Test me? Why test me?

The emperor faced Chu Mo, who was misunderstanding. He laughed and said: “I wanted to see, what kind of person is the youth that rescued my daughter!”

“Ah? Chu Mo was truly a little shocked. He foolishly added: “Rescued your daughter? That rumor.....is true? This.....how is this possible?”

“You know that rumor?” The emperor seemed to smile without smiling.

Chu Mo honestly nodded: “I heard after returning, but I always

believed it false.”

“It is true.” The emperor dully spoke: “She is not from one of my concubines. Her mother is a sect disciple. I unexpectedly met her sixteen years ago, then I had her.”

Chu Mo’s heart was pumping, never expecting to know a secret of the emperor.

“Later on, her mother returned to the sect. She gave birth to my daughter there, because of this, she has always grown up in the sect. She finally brought her back to meet me this year. I hold shame in my heart, feeling that I owe this daughter much. Because of this, I have kept this matter secret. I haven’t been as strict to her like the other princesses. I never thought that event would happen later on.” The emperor’s face revealed a trace of anger: “Fortunately she didn’t suffer any harm, otherwise.....”

The emperor didn’t continue speaking, but the murderous aura in his eyes was clearly showing.

But continuing on, the emperor slightly smiled: “First you saved my daughter, then you gave enormous achievements in the grasslands. A Hero Medal.....I feel it isn’t enough. Speak for yourself, what do you want? Perhaps.....for your grandfather?”

Chu Mo shook his head, and very seriously said: “I didn’t know who she was when I rescued her. Even if I suffered retaliation for this, and was chased out of Yellow Flame City, I’ve never had any regrets, I’ve never complained, and I’ve never sought any

payment. On the grasslands, I only wanted to do good things for my country. I changed my name as a result, at the same time, I wanted to prevent any trouble for the future. I even more didn't wish for payment."

"Contributions naturally must have rewards. Do you take me for a man that doesn't reward and punish?" The emperor said: "How about I make your grandfather an official?"

"No!" Chu Mo crisply answered: "Grandfather has fought for his position today. Ever since childhood, grandfather taught me to fight for everything myself."

"Then, how about you marry my daughter?" The emperor revealed a strange smile. He spread it out for so long, finally revealing his thoughts.

A teenager like this with a good background and great achievements, if he could come to the emperor's side, then it would be a heavenly benefit!

Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong were slightly shocked, but their two faces immediately showed a wry smile. They looked at each other, both thinking: 'The emperor really likes this teenager!'

A royal princess, is that someone anyone could marry?

Chu Mo yet wrinkled his brow, saying: "I already have someone I like."

Chapter 96: Hero Medal

“En?” The emperor didn’t seem to hear clearly, somewhat uncertainly looking at Chu Mo, immediately reacting: “You.....are declining me?”

The emperor was indeed a little aggravated. In his view, Chu Mo is simply refusing.

All the things the thirteen year old brat had been through before leaving Yellow Flame City, they had already been told in his royal study. Could he have really met someone he likes in the six months away? Does he take himself for the grandson of Xu Zhongliang?

Chu Mo nodded: “The princess’s status is honorable, a boy like myself cannot climb so high. Also, I’m not deceiving you. Your majesty, I already have someone I like.”

“Ha ha, I really want to know which house she belongs to. What good fortune they have, they could move the heart of our young hero?” The emperor’s face suddenly showed a smile. He looked to Xu Zhongliang: “Is she from your house?”

Xu Zhongliang’s mouth twitched as he shook his head: “No.”

The emperor looked at Fang Mingtong: “Is it your house?”

Fang Mingtong laughed: “Your majesty, if your servant’s household had someone suitable, would they fight with his

majesty?”

“Humph!” The emperor stared at Fang Mingtong, then looked to Chu Mo: “Whose household does the girl belong to?”

“I don’t know.” Chu Mo thought of Qi Xiaoyu. The youth’s clear pupils flashed with a trace of fondness.

The emperor no longer pressed the issue. He could see that Chu Mo wasn’t lying. People can lie, but the eyes cannot tell lies! However, this made the emperor even more uncertain in his heart. He immediately thought of something. While looking at Chu Mo, an odd look appeared in the emperor’s eye: “Can’t be.....is it the princess that just rose in the grasslands? The future queen of the grasslands?”

“Cough.....” Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang both froze there.

Soon after, Fang Mingtong slapped his chest, saying: “Yes ah, it should be that princess! Chu Mo saved her life, and helped her take down the Hao Yue Clan.....that princess would certainly be moved to give herself!”

Xu Zhongliang saw Chu Mo’s facial expression. He thought this must be right nine times out of ten. The women of the grasslands are passionate and unrestrained. Upon meeting a hero like Chu Mo, and him helping with so many things, giving herself away isn’t very strange.

The emperor was already certain inside. He laughed: “So it is like this, it’s truly a good thing!”

Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong both nodded: “Not bad, it’s a good thing!”

Among the powers of Da Xi and Da Qi, the grassland Wang Court appears the weakest, seemingly not having the qualifications to be discussed with the others. However, the people of the grasslands are brave and good fighters. Their horses are known throughout the world. If Da Xia can ally with the grasslands, then they can face Da Qi one hundred percent confident!

This is a huge help, even the emperor was quite moved.

Chu Mo really wanted to explain. There is nothing between him and the grassland princess, but he also understood one thing. If he spoke the truth, then the emperor might immediately explode.

He could never tell the emperor, ‘My wife is a clone.....and already disappeared from the world.’ No one would believe if he told them.

Because of this, Chu Mo showed agreement through silence. He and Nuo Yi didn’t have that kind affection, but if he opened his mouth, he believed Nuo Yi would ally with Da Xia. Because this is Nuo Yi’s best option from a political standpoint.

“No wonder you don’t seek my princess. You already have a

future queen.” The emperor said to Chu Mo: “However, it can be said, you will always be a person of Da Xia!”

Chu Mo said: “If it really wanted to stay in the grasslands, then I wouldn’t have come back.”

“Good!” Fang Mingtong said from the side: “That’s my hero of Da Xia!”

The emperor nodded with gratification, then pulled out a dark red medal from his robes. He said: “It has already been more than two hundred years since the last Hero Medal. Chu Mo, by awarding you this medal today, it is not only your good fortune, but mine as well! Because this shows that a man of great merit has been born in the nation! You must remember, this blood-colored medal is soaked in the blood of countless Da Xia heroes! Use your life to guard it.....it represents honor!”

As he spoke, the emperor seriously handed over the medal to Chu Mo: “Do you understand?”

Chu Mo took the heavy medal, nodded, and said in a low voice: “I understand. I will use my life to protect the honor it represents! I will protect this nation, until the moment I depart!”

Chu Mo’s departure is obviously not death, but the emperor and the rest understood it as that meaning. The idea of ascending to another world is too remote for them, and too imaginary. It is basically impossible.

“One day you will be recognized for the value of this medal. When the time comes., I will give you a grand award ceremony! I will let the whole world know your contributions and sacrifice!” The emperor looking at Chu Mo, speaking somewhat sorrowfully: “You really won’t consider my daughter?”

Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang were both a little speechless. They had no idea what in the world just happened, and thought: Do you want this youngster to marry the grassland princess, or make him marry your princess? Just what are you thinking?

Actually they understood the emperor’s regret. If it was really possible, the emperor would rather Chu Mo marry the Da Xia princess!

Having the grassland Wang Court as an ally is naturally the best. Who could ignore its strength? But not having it.....really wouldn’t be a big deal.

The grassland Wang Court and Da Xia have never been allies, couldn’t Da Xia carry on as before?

Of course, this situation carries a premise. That is, the grassland Wang Court can’t ally with Da Qi. Da Xia would face an enormous threat if that happened.

Da Xia doesn’t have too many of this kind of cultivator, but certainly not few. At the very least, the emperor isn’t lacking.

But if one considers Chu Mo's age, then it is extraordinary!

A thirteen year old Yuan closure cultivator cannot be found in all of Da Xia!

The highest sects may not necessarily have any. Not to mention, this youth only spent half a year to break into the Yuan closure from the second rank. This speed.....it would be difficult for the peerless masters of large sects!

Normally they would need several years.....or even ten!

Chu Mo also has a mysterious master supporting him. The emperor viewed these resources with extreme envy.

If he could gather these resources in his palm, then.....couldn't he dominate the world without worry?

Chu Mo shook his head: "Apologies.....I....."

"Good good, you don't have to say, being rejected by a kid is shameful enough." The emperor showed a helpless expression, waved his hand, then looked to Xu Zhongliang and Fang Mingtong: "You two don't say anything!"

Xu and Fang both nodded, wryly smiling: "Your servants won't speak."

The emperor melancholily said: “Go, go join the new year’s banquet. I must speak with these two.”

Chu Mo looked at the emperor, then said: “That.....the upcoming toast?”

The emperor waved his hand: “Forget it.....once I see you, I might try and marry off the princess again!”

Chu Mo hastily retreated.

Chapter 97: Chen Xingxue

After Chu Mo left, Fang Mingtong asked the emperor: “Your majesty, do you really plan on marrying a princess to him?”

Xu Zhongliang also looked at the emperor, eyes filled with interest. Chu Mo is indeed outstanding. Anyone could tell. He has an extremely promising future. However, even though Chu Mo is outstanding, the dignified emperor of Da Xia shouldn't bother taking the initiative in marrying his daughter to Chu Mo.

Da Xia is a nation of the secular world, but there are several talented people! Moreover, from a father's perspective, finding an amazing talent may not necessarily make for an amazing marriage.

The emperor looked at the two and sighed: “I understand your meaning. I am a dignified ruler, and don't have many princesses. I wouldn't dare say they all grew up into amazing beauties, but they are at least all pretty. Do you think I fear being unable to marry them off? The real problem is that girl Xingxue.....it seems.....she rather likes the boy!”

“What? Princess Xingxue.....likes Chu Mo?” Xu Zhongliang was slightly shocked. He immediately smiled: “Actually thinking about it, this is very reasonable. Princess Xingxue spent many years in the sect, and she is quite pure. She encountered such a situation the first time she entered the world. Having feelings for Chu Mo, the person that saved her, is more than normal.”

Fang Mingtong muttered: “If it is princess Xingxue, then she

really matches the boy!”

The emperor sighed: “Forget it, these children are always emotional. I won’t pay any more attention to them, let them be. I called both of you here today for a reason. I just received a piece of news, Da Qi they.....”

A guard stepped out of the shadows as soon as Chu Mo left the room. He respectfully guided Chu Mo towards the banquet hall.

The emperor’s guard was naturally aware of all today’s events. Because of this, he didn’t dare treat Chu Mo as an ordinary teenager. He was extremely polite when it came time to bid farewell.

The atmosphere already recovered its liveliness when Chu Mo return to the banquet hall. It was like nothing had ever happened. But when Chu Mo’s figure appeared in the doorway, the whole banquet hall’s atmosphere slowed down!

[A famous person is a shady tree.](#)

[TL: This phrase signifies the problem of having influence. The traditional meaning is that people will gather under an influential person like a shady tree on a hot day. I think the author could be twisting the traditional meaning here, and saying that an influential person can change the mood.]

Chu Mo dared cut off a fourth grade official’s head in front of the whole new year’s banquet hall, the top nobles of Da Xia, the crowned prince, Grand Secretary Xu, and Marshal Fang. The nerve

is too dreadful!

The important thing is, cutting off the head like nothing!

This is too terrifying!

Chu Mo looked all around, discovering the crowned prince and the second prince already disappeared. They must not have had the face left to stay, and decided to see the third prince Xia Hao off.

Making Xia Hao go is the same as cutting off the crowned prince Xia Ying's arm.

“His majesty the crowned prince must hate me.” Chu Mo thought to himself, but he wasn't afraid at all. Because even if this didn't happen, the separation between Chu Mo and the crowned prince is too deep!

Was Zhao Yi done seeking him trouble? He fabricated those false words, fooling the gullible. Without someone behind the scenes inspiring, and borrowing a hundred nerves of steel, then Zhao Yi wouldn't dare do such a thing!

But no matter if it was the emperor, Grand Secretary Xu, or Marshal Fang.....no one would bring this matter up again, and try to handle it.

Chu Mo didn't even ask any questions.....it isn't that he is politically unaware, but rather that Chu Mo quite understood the

situation. The crowned prince was certainly involved, but the emperor ought to stop it from spreading for the time being.

According to Chu Mo, this matter certainly won't be forgotten.

So long as the crowned prince no longer seeks trouble, Chu Mo wanted to find an opportunity to clear the situation. Chu Mo doesn't have any deep grudges with the crowned prince. His grandfather declined their recruitment, but he has still benefited Da Xia. Why are they aiming at Chu Mo?

"Chu Mo.....is here!" Xu Fufu's loud voice came from the corner. Chu Mo's face immediately showed a smile. Right after, Chu Mo faced that direction and walked over.

The people in the banquet hall couldn't help but clear a path for the handsome teenager.

Chu Mo suppressed a smile. Everyone gave friendly expressions with the teenager that was about to turn fourteen.

Chu Mo could clearly feel the affectionate, fearful, or cold attitudes towards himself coming through their smiles.

He didn't care very much, and walked in a straight line towards Xu Fufu.

But when he looked back towards Xu Fufu, Chu Mo's vision hung on quiet maiden sitting in the corner, and he was slightly shocked.

He thought: ‘I never imagined.....she is actually here.’

The maiden raised her head and looked at him in this moment. A pair of innocent eyes, carrying several parts of bashful curiousness, concentrated onto him. The maiden’s face turned red when she saw Chu Mo look over, but she still gave him a shy smile.

Xu Fufu looked silly from the side, with an unimaginable face. He even began to suspect: ‘Who is the real playboy of Yellow Flame City?’

Then Xu Fufu noticed, Chu Mo slightly nodded to the delicate and pretty maiden. Xu Fufu couldn’t help but give a haughty look: “Ah.....I’ve been had!”

Chu Mo already arrived at Xu Fufu’s side by this point. He sat beside Xu Fufu, and noticed his sluggish looking smile: “What’s up with the look? Did big sister Mei dump you?”

Xu Fufu didn’t pay attention to Chu Mo’s joke, sweeping a look over to the young maiden: “Little black brother, who is that girl? Why does she always stare at you?”

Chu Mo didn’t turn his head. He seemed to smile without smiling: “What? Do you like her?”

“Is that a joke? Would I compete with my brother?” Xu Fufu had an expression of ‘don’t look down upon me’.

Chu Mo simply said: “She is a princess. If you want to be a groom, then go for it.”

Xu Fufu’s expression immediately became slack. The corners of his mouth violently twitched, and he muttered: “I know who she is.....”

The graceful maiden suddenly stood up from her seat, walked to Chu Mo, softly bent at the knee, and gave Chu Mo respects: “Last time we met in a haste. I was scared stiff, and I didn’t have the time to thank you for saving my life. At last I finally see you. My name is Chen Xingxue. Thank you for saving my life noble son Chu!”

“Chen?” Xu Fufu curiously looked at the graceful maiden: “You aren’t.....?”

The graceful maiden looked at Xu Fufu, then simply said: “I took my mother’s name.”

“Ah ah ah, understood.” Xu Fufu suddenly realized.

Chu Mo said: “I merely saw injustice on the road and helped. Who wouldn’t act? Princess is too kind.”

“Noble son Chu wasn’t the only person on the road that day, but you were the only one that helped.” Chen Xingxue looked at Chu Mo: “Can I sit here?”

Chu Mo just remembered the topic that the emperor circled around for a long time. A strange feeling suddenly rose inside. He wanted to refuse, but didn't know how to say no. He could only nod: "Of course your majesty, this is your territory."

Chen Xingxue's face turned slightly red. She softly said: "I'm also very unfamiliar with this place."

Xu Fufu couldn't help but ask from the side: "Your majesty the princess, I have one question. I really don't understand something. May I ask you?"

Chen Xingxue looked to Xu Fufu: "My father said not to talk with you....."

"....." Xu Fufu didn't know what in the world just happened.

Chu Mo couldn't resist smiling. He softly whispered: "A true father!"

Xu Fufu said without a choice: "Your majesty the princess, you are too suspicious. I am not like you think."

"Ah, I'm sorry. I don't know why father said that to me." Chen Xingxue embarrassingly looked at Xu Fufu: "You can ask anything."

Xu Fufu asked: "I heard the princess grew up in a sect?"

“Yes.” Chen Xingxue slightly nodded.

“Are the disciples from sects quite strong? On that day, why didn’t the princess.....” Xu Fufu uncertainly looked at Chen Xingxue: “I shouldn’t.....”

Chen Xingxue is innocent looking, but she is no fool. She saw what Xu Fufu was indicating, and her face became red. She softly said: “I.....can’t do martial arts.”

Chapter 98: I Can't

“Wh-.....what? You you you.....you can't do martial arts?” Xu Fufu looked at Chen Xingxue with an expression of ‘Are you kidding me?’ His eyes were full of disbelief: “You come from a sect, and you're telling me you can't do martial arts?”

“Who told you people from sects must be able to do martial arts?” Chen Xingxue's face was very tender, flashing with a trace of shyness, and a little anger. She seriously looked at Xu Fufu and said: “Must everyone from sects be able to do martial arts?”

“.....” Xu Fufu appeared speechless. He muttered: “You haven't even cultivated a little bit?”

“I have!” Chen Xingxue softly spoke: “I already broke through the Yuan closure.”

“I say.....are you messing with me?” Xu Fufu's mouth twitched. He looked at the delicate and beautiful maiden before himself: “A third rank Yuan closure realm talent, and you're telling me you can't do martial arts?”

Chu Mo was also a little speechless while looking at Chen Xingxue.

Chen Xingxue said: “A person's realm and the ability to do martial arts.....they aren't necessarily related. My realm was dependant on pills to increase, but I don't like to kill.”

She was probably a little embarrassed as she spoke, and explained: “I’m an expert at refining medicine. I don’t like studying martial arts.”

Xu Fufu’s realm isn’t high, and he had a tough time comprehending Chen Xingxue’s explanation. Chu Mo obviously understood. This is a person from the Da Xia’s royal lineage. She grew up in a sect, but she spent all her time on refining pills.

She relied on pills to increase her realm, strengthening her body, and possessing a longer life than ordinary people. She practically can’t get sick, but she has never cultivated any martial skills. Because of this, she possesses dragon-like power, but she doesn’t know how to use it.

“Princess Xingxue, that’s already in the past. You don’t need to pay attention to it. But I have a suggestion, you really should study a few basic martial skills. Even if you don’t like it, you should still study.” Chu Mo looked at Chen Xingxue: “At the very least.....you can defend yourself.”

Chen Xingxue looked at Chu Mo. She lightly nodded: “My mother said the same thing, but.....but I really don’t like it. And I’m rather slow, I could never learn.”

Chu Mo smiled: “Slowly slowly study. You certainly can do it!”

“Yes.” The maiden’s face flushed a dull red while softly responding, then her bright starry eyes gazed at Chu Mo. She

softly asked: “I heard you can refine medicine?”

Their conversation wasn't loud, but the spotlight on Chu Mo was too great tonight. Several people paid attention, even if they were hidden in the corner.

When Chen Xingxue asked Chu Mo this, several people nearby looked at Chu Mo with shining eyes.

Chu Mo didn't need to look to feel their vision, his scalp already started to tingle.

Xu Fufu swept a glance at the people pricking up their ears, and softly said: “A powerful medicine refining ability, he can even cure prince Xia Jing's illness. There will likely be several people seeking you for medical treatment later on.”

Chu Mo shook his head, and slightly smiled to Chen Xingxue: “Do you think I look like a person who can refine medicine?”

“Ah?” Chen Xingxue never thought Chu Mo would have this response. She was immediately shocked, looking completely perplexed.

The person who tried to violate her was her royal brother, but she became aware of this after the fact. Chen Xingxue is a naturally good person. After becoming a little mad, she felt Xia Jie suffered a deserved punishment, and she gradually stopped thinking about it.

Prince Xia Jing is her dear uncle after all, so she still paid attention to Xia Jing's affairs. It was no secret in Yellow Flame City that Chu Mo was helping Xia Jing cure his illness. She already knew this a long time ago. She always wanted to talk with Chu Mo about his experiences refining medicines and exchange ideas.

“Doesn't everyone say you are refining medicine for my uncle? In addition.....I heard.....” The maiden spoke to her. Her eyes showed a bashfulness, and she embarrassingly stopped talking. Because this subject was a little unspeakable for a girl like her.

“How could I have that ability?” Chu Mo shook his head, clearly denying.

The people listening all around, their faces all showed a clear expression of disbelief.

Who are you deceiving? After you caused trouble in the prince mansion, not only were you unharmed, but prince Xia Jing also treated you as a guest.

Prince Xia Jing wantonly purchased each type of medicine in Yellow Flame City. This has been known for a long time. This group of people couldn't believe Chu Mo's words.

“Oh.....” Chen Xingxue clearly believed. Her impression of Chu Mo was really too good.

After she was saved, the somewhat thin and tall figure of Chu Mo

had been deeply stamped in her heart. It had settled for such a long time, without dissipating, and actually becoming clearer.

Chen Xingxue was extremely happy after hearing Chu Mo could refine medicine. She thought they had a common interest, but she couldn't help being somewhat disappointed after hearing Chu Mo's denial.

Chu Mo smiled and said: "I really don't have that kind of ability. My master refines the medicine!"

"So it is like that!" Chen Xingxue's eyes lit back up. She adoringly said: "Your master must certainly be amazing!"

"He is very amazing....." Chu Mo muttered, and then he thought: 'The strongest cultivators on the four continents are all ants in master's eyes. Of course he is amazing.'

"Can I pay a visit to your master if there's a chance?" Chen Xingxue looked at Chu Mo with anticipation.

Xu Fufu immediately understood those eyes. He thought: 'Does this princess really want to see little black brother's master? Clearly she wants to use this opportunity, and try to come in contact with little black brother.'

Chu Mo clearly didn't understand, or perhaps.....he understood everything, but pretended not to know: "My master's whereabouts are always changing. He is elusive, even I cannot find him."

“Then.....then I, can come play with you without a reason? I, I want to study martial skills.” Chen Xingxue drummed up all her courage while looking at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo looked to the beautiful maiden. The corners of his mouth twitched as he said: “Your majesty the princess wants to study martial skills. No matter if it is inside the sect or in the royal palace, shouldn’t there be countless people who can teach you? My martial skills.....are all for killing. They are quite bloody. I’m afraid they don’t suit the princess.”

The surrounding people who were all listening couldn’t help but think: ‘Is this kid an idiot, or is he playing dumb? The princess is obviously flirting.....and he actually keeps refusing. We can all see this without trying!’

Some of the younger nobles enviously looked at Chu Mo, but they didn’t dare show this. The teenager is too terrifying, and they didn’t want to provoke him.

Chen Xingxue pitifully looked at Chu Mo. Her starry eyes were like water.

Xu Fufu couldn’t help but say from the side: “The princess can come to the Gluttonous Ogre if she is bored every day.”

Chen Xingxue immediately raised her guard at Xu Fufu: “What are you thinking of doing?”

“.....” Xu Fufu didn’t know what in the world just happened. He at last understood, the emperor or someone else, they had instructed the princess on how to act with Xu Fufu. It’s to the point where Chen Xingxue raises her guard to the highest point when she looks at Xu Fufu.

“I was only giving you a clear path.....don’t feel grateful or anything.” Xu Fufu couldn’t help but return a haughty look, not feeling like speaking.

Chen Xingxue cautiously looked at Xu Fufu, then she said to Chu Mo: “I have some business. I must go.....someday I’ll visit noble son Chu to pay my respects.”

Chen Xingxue stood up as she spoke. She faced Chu Mo and slightly bowed, then she immediately headed to the door of the banquet hall, disappearing from everyone’s line of sight.

Chapter 99: Between Brothers

Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo after Chen Xingxue left: “You hurt her heart.”

Chu Mo sighed: “That’s better than deceiving her.”

“A a a, I say, don’t direct that at me. I don’t deceive people. You’ve started a big fire tonight. Things still haven’t completely settled down after cutting off the dog official’s head. In that case.....let’s go to the Gluttonous Ogre? What’s the point in being here?” Xu Fufu looked at the fake smiles on the surrounding nobles, casting the words out of his mouth.

“Good! Let’s go.” Chu Mo experienced many things tonight, and his heart wasn’t calm. He stood up, stepped out the side door with Xu Fufu, and sped away.

Several people finally felt relaxed after Chu Mo left.

Even they didn’t know why. He is clearly only a teenager, that’s it, but the pressure he gave them was enormous.

At the same time, Chu Mo’s words circulated through the crowd.

“Didn’t I just say he is merely a thirteen or fourteen year old teenager, and that’s it? how could he have that much ability? Now we finally know, he has a powerful master supporting him!”

“Didn’t Chu Mo spend seven or eight days refining medicine in the Prince Mansion?”

“Idiot, that’s just rumors! Chu Mo is amazing, so would his master be any less? Didn’t you hear.....he comes and goes without a trace. Wouldn’t entering and exiting the Prince Mansion without a trace be nothing?”

‘The guards at the Prince Mansion.....they aren’t that weak?’

“Of course they can’t be called weak, but the problem is, would the Prince Mansion guards stop Chu Mo’s master? He is giving medicine to their master!”

“That’s right.....”

“Looks like we need to get closer to that teenager.”

“Yes, who would dare say they don’t need to use other people?”

A group of top level nobles discussed the teenager at the new year’s banquet. It was a rare occasion.

But these people could be considered having ‘opened their eyes’. They probably won’t forget today for decades. The name Chu Mo used to be somewhat unfamiliar to them, but now it has entered their eyes.

Chu Mo and Xu Fufu walked on the Royal Palace road. The guards didn't obstruct their way when they saw the two. On the contrary, they secretly sized up Chu Mo.

The news of what happened in the banquet hall already spread through the Royal City. Several people wanted to personally see the audacious teenager.

The two breathed in the fresh night air, and looked off into the distance at the gorgeous blooming fireworks, constantly rising in the night sky. Both maintained silence.

Xu Fufu finally said after a long time: "Fourteen!"

"There's still a little time." Chu Mo said.

"At fifteen you can join the military, sixteen you can take a wife.....little black brother, we will soon grow up." Xu Fufu seemed a little emotional.

Chu Mo blinked once at Xu Fufu: "So sentimental, isn't it a bit unlike you?"

"You want to leave after the new year. I just hate to part, you are my only brother. Won't I be much more lonely after you leave?" Xu Fufu said: "I know, my reputation isn't great in Yellow Flame City. You saw.....princess Chen Xingxue never even looked at me, and she even guarded against me like a thief. Although I'm not mad, but on the inside, I'm still a having a hard time."

“You deserve it.” Chu Mo said without any emotion: “Who make you spread your nickname far and wide?”

“Fine, the past several years were really a little mischievous, but haven’t I been good in the most recent two years?” Xu Fufu’s eyelids drooped, and he muttered: “But it’s still no good. It seems people need a long time to establish a reputation, and it must be obtained bit by bit. However, one incident is enough to destroy a reputation. Later on, one must work incredibly hard to recover..... I’m afraid it’s even ten times harder than before.”

“Actually.....your reputation isn’t that bad.” Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu and said: “At the very least, you still have me, big sister Niang, and big sister Mei.”

“Yes ah. And only these friends.” Xu Fufu raised his head, and looked at the twinkling stars in the night sky. He blurted out: “One day.....you won’t leave me will you?”

Chu Mo was touched. He swept a glance at Xu Fufu and smiled: “Why are you suddenly asking like this?”

“I feel you’ve changed too much over the past sixth months, it’s hard to believe. To speak the truth, if we didn’t grow up together, I would even suspect you weren’t really you? Do you understand what I’m saying?” Xu Fufu looked at Chu Mo.

Chu Mo was silent a moment, then nodded.

“I really am a little afraid so to speak. I’m afraid you will suddenly disappear from this world.” Xu Fufu said: “I’ve heard that once a person reaches a certain level in cultivating, they can break through the void, entering into another world. I think, you will one day.....”

Chu Mo was silent a moment. He then said: “If that day comes?”

Xu Fufu stopped walking, looked at Chu Mo, and seriously said: “You are my brother, my best brother! If that day truly comes, then I will certainly grieve! But I’m not the same as you. I have too many close relatives here after all. If that day truly appears, I will carefully protect our business ventures! I will certainly look after grandpa Fan. As brothers, we either break through the skies together, or, one stays behind silently guarding and blessing. In short.....I can’t slow you down, right?

Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu, then thumped two hands on his shoulders: “A guy like you.....how could you suddenly become so serious. It’s a little unusual.”

“Yes ah, we have to grow up. You have changed much more than me!” Xu Fufu revealed a trace of a smile: “But, I wish the best for my brother!”

“Actually.....you should start working hard now, not too late.” Chu Mo looked at Xu Fufu: “You don’t lack in talent, you’re just too lazy.”

“I ah.....forget it. I just want to be happy in this life. I don’t want to become immortal!” Xu Fufu chuckled: “Cultivating is too painful! Which beauty isn’t carefree when drinking fine liqueur? My greatest dream is to drunkenly lie with beauties!”

Chu Mo laughed: “You don’t wish to hold the power of the world?”

Xu Fufu showed his teeth: “This is the Royal Palace! Careful when you speak, you aren’t worried others will hear you and cause trouble?”

Chu Mo smiled: “Alright, I already have more than enough troubles.”

The humor between the two brothers was clear as day.

The two already strolled to the Royal City gates at this time, but they discovered a large group of people, and dozens of loaded wagons lined up on the street.

The two walked out of the Royal City, and someone from the group saw them. Both parties were shocked.

“Chu Mo!” A deep voice filled with hate came from one of their mouths.

Xu Fufu stared, just about to say something, but then was pulled to the side by Chu Mo. Chu Mo looked at the man: “Now his

majesty the third prince recognizes me?”

This wasn't just any group of people. The crowned prince Xia Ying, the second prince Xia Xiong, and the third prince Xia Hao had gathered here. They were seeing Xia Hao off.

Xia Hao's pupils flickered with concentrated murderous intent. He looked at Chu Mo and coldly said: “You're quite good, I remember you!”

Chu Mo smiled: “Your majesty the third prince, you must clearly understand one thing.”

Xia Hao coldly looked at Chu Mo.

The crowned prince Xia Ying and second prince Xia Xiong appeared expressionless, but their eyes seemed extremely ice-cold.

Chu Mo said without any concern: “Even if you want to let me off easy, I don't want to let you off easy!”

Chapter 100: No Fear

The look of the crowned prince suddenly became severe. He stared at Chu Mo, and although he didn't say anything, his entire royal presence already completely exploded. He was infuriated.

The dignified prince had ruled over the Eastern Palace for many years. He never held an official political office, but he had participated in the Royal Court affairs for many years. Ordinary people couldn't endure his imposing manner once it completely released.

Yet Chu Mo only smiled. This great imposing manner wasn't near the level of Elder Hao Yue, and it was one hundred and eight thousand miles away from his master the Demon Lord. To compare him to master would be an insult.

Xia Xiong's vision became incomparably icy. He slightly squinted at Chu Mo, not knowing what to think.

Xia Hao sneered: "Oh, you have courage! Chu Mo, you have skill, you always bravely withdraw! Don't believe your two old supporters have the qualifications to challenge us. You still aren't ready!"

"Ready or not, I don't know. Either way, the one being driven off isn't me." Chu Mo simply said.

"You seek death!" Xia Hao's face reddened. The veins on his forehead erupted out, but he didn't act. He already suffered a huge

loss from Chu Mo tonight. He knew that he wasn't the teenager's match. Because of this, even though he hated the teenager to the extreme, he still maintained reason.

“I have never sought death.” Chu Mo looked at the three, and softly said: “You all have never wanted to let me go. I’m beginning to suspect, what are the chances of Xia Jie encountering the princess, especially when he is strolling the street and taking liberties with women?”

The crowned prince's eyelids slightly jumped. He looked down upon Chu Mo and scoffed: “Bullshit.”

The second prince Xia Xiong sneered: “Still splashing dirty water onto other people, you best watch your words without any proof.”

“Splashing dirty water? I just learned from the three of you!” Chu Mo beamed at the crowned and second prince: “Your reactions have me a little confused. You all seem.....to rather care about this matter. Looks like you all really did it. The emperor would be very happy if he knew. His sons have so much potential, secretly plotting against their own sister and cousin. Hah.....truly amazing!”

“Chu Mo, watch your mouth.” Xia Xiong suddenly raised his head. His pupils were callous as he looked at Chu Mo: “I will tear off your face. You can't handle the consequences.”

Chu Mo waved his hand: “Come on, you already wanted to kill me. Is there a more terrifying consequence? I'm even somewhat

suspicious, how did a teenager like myself come into your line of sight? You insist on killing me but cannot. I guess it doesn't matter now. In any case, everyone bears hatred. Then give me all you got. Use any trick, I will continue on."

Chu Mo's words made the three princes appear unsightly. This teenager is really too vile and unrestrained. He doesn't play by the rules. Normally speaking, even if there is enormous hatred, it will simmer in the heart, and be acted on secretly. Chu Mo wantonly pokes at everything out in the open.

This made the princes who schemed behind the scenes feel extremely angry and helpless.

They had an off feeling when facing Chu Mo, as if they weren't facing a teenager, but rather a formidable evil greater than Fang Mingtong and Xu Zhongliang!

Chu Mo watched the three men icily staring at him, all in silence. He smiled: "But, you all are royalty. Don't bring it weak, otherwise I will look down upon you. Don't send my those stinky henchmen, you don't want to send them to their death."

He then turned to Xu Fufu and said: "Let's go."

Seeing the two teenagers turn and leave abruptly, Xia Hao ruthlessly smashed a fist into a nearby wagon.

The wagon was smashed, and the noise terrified the two horses,

making them want to flee. Xia Hao lifted a blade and slashed, dropping it onto the two horses. Blood splashed out everywhere, and he angrily said: “Chu Mo, there is not room in this world for the two of us!”

Chu Mo’s head didn’t turn. He raised an arm, extended a little finger, and lightly swayed it back and forth.

“You.....” Xia Hao’s eyes turned red. He seethed with anger.

“Third!” Xia Ying’s deep shout stopped Xia Hao, then he said: “This is the Royal City gate!”

Xia Xiong pulled Xia Hao’s arm: “The future is plenty long, sooner or later we will kill the little animal!”

Xia Hao’s eyes were red. As a royal prince growing up in the sect, had he ever suffered such humiliation? He swore an oath: “One day, I will personally cut off that little dog’s head!”

“Don’t speak, go!” Xia Ying’s eyes were also a little red. He patted the third prince’s shoulder: “Going over there is not necessarily a bad thing. Temporarily overlook this hatred, and make many contributions! The opportunity will come, and I will ask father for your return.”

Xia Xiong said: “Da Qi has been summoning troops recently. Those idiots want to act. I’m afraid the fighting isn’t far away. The time to rack up achievements is the present. Third, don’t worry,

the general trend is still in our hands. Don't fall into disarray. He is just a little bastard that's it. There will certainly be an opportunity to take care of him."

"I know, first and second brother, you must take care of yourselves in the city!" Xia Hao's eyes were still red. He casually grabbed some reins, mounted a horse, and kicked with his two legs. The war horse neighed, and galloped off.

The wagons started to follow after, heading in the direction outside the city.

Xia Ying and Xia Xiong watched the direction third brother left in. Both were silent a long time.

Until the last wagon disappeared from the street, Xia Xiong finally sighed: "New year's night!"

Xia Ying's eyes grew callous. He mumbled: "Yes ah, new year's night, really unpleasant!"

.....

The emperor calmly sat in the royal study, listening to an old palace eunuch's report. He was silent for a long time, then said: "Only this?"

The old palace eunuch nodded: "Yes, only this."

“Chu Mo.....Chu Mo.....” The emperor slightly wrinkled his brow, stood up, and then paced up and down the study. He mumbled: “Could it be.....you really want to mark my sons?”

“Your majesty.....” This old gray haired palace eunuch is the trusted subordinate of the emperor. He stood there, hesitating.

“Speak.” The emperor looked at him.

“I think, that thing, these three royal highnesses.....they did it.” The old palace eunuch spoke these words, then immediately closed his mouth, because he had no way to continue speaking.

“Yes ah, they did it. Should I send them to the north for this? I don’t want to intensify the conflict.” The emperor sighed, then muttered: “This boy Chu Mo, he appears mild and steady, yet holds a commanding presence at such a young age. But in reality, he is tough and stubborn to the core of his bones. I originally believed he was spoiled and arrogant because of his achievements on the grasslands. He didn’t place anyone in his eyes. But I’ve quickly come to realize that this is not so. This little bastard..... doesn’t care about his achievements.”

“This is exactly why your majesty likes him.” The old palace eunuch softly said.

The emperor glanced at the old palace eunuch and laughed: “How unexpected, there is someone in this world you favor?”

“Your majesty jokes, I am merely a slave at your side, I don’t dare look down upon anyone.” The old palace eunuch obediently replied.

The emperor laughed: “Good, is there anything you glossed over with me? Haven’t you been stuck at the sixth rank peak for several years now?”

The old eunuch nodded: “Yes.”

“If there’s a chance, go find that boy. Use whatever resources you need, you don’t have to report to me. Why should that expert in Xia Jing’s household gain the upper hand?”

The old eunuch immediately became appreciative. He said: “Your slave thanks his majesty.”

“This is what you deserve.” The emperor said, then continued: “Xia Ying and Xia Hao, beat them up when you find the chance. Don’t let them be too excessive! The world is still not theirs!”

“Your slave understands.” The old palace eunuch said. His figure gradually faded from the study.

The emperor massaged his temples. His face appeared extremely tired. Slightly closing his eyes, he softly said to himself: “My country, to rule the world!”

“My ambition, how can the struggle for power be the only things in your brains? Do they only shamefully think of ways for me to leave the throne quicker?”

“Talent.....must be put to good use. Not as you all imagine: It isn't my talent, so I must destroy.”

“You better shape up.....I don't want to change princes!”